



TRAVOY

A CHART for the better understanding of the Voyage to the South Sea, wherein are set down the Places mentioned in this Relation, and the Courses going and returning, supposing the first Meridian at Paris reckning thence a West Longitude: the Spherical Lines with Roman Numbers shew the Progression of the Variation from 5 to 8 Degrees towards the N.W. above the Line OO and to the N.E. under the same Line. *By Wm. Frewer Engineer in Ordinary to the King.*



Printed for JONAH BOWYER at the signe of the Rose in Ludgate Street. 1717.

A  
**VOYAGE**  
TO THE  
**SOUTH-SEA,**  
And along the  
**COASTS**  
OF  
**CHILI and PERU,**  
In the Years 1712, 1713, and 1714.

PARTICULARLY DESCRIBING  
The Genius and Constitution of the Inhabitants, as well  
Indians as Spaniards: Their Customs and Manners;  
their Natural History, Mines, Commodities, Traffick  
with EUROPE, &c.

---

By Monsieur FREZIER, Engineer in Ordinary to  
the French King.

---

Illustrated with 37 COPPER-CUTTS of the Coasts, Harbours,  
Cities, Plants, and other Curiosities: Printed from the Author's  
Original Plates inserted in the Paris EDITION.

---

With a POSTSCRIPT by Dr. Edmund Halley, Savilian Professor  
of Geometry in the University of Oxford. And an Account of  
the Settlement, Commerce, and Riches of the Jesuites in  
Paraguay.

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for JONAH BOWYER, at the Rose in Ludgate-street.

MDCCLXVII.

1223

A  
VOYAGE  
TO THE  
SOUTH SEAS  
AND  
TO THE  
SOUTH PACIFIC  
OCEAN  
BY  
V. COOK  
CHIEF AND PERU

in the Year 1769, 1770, 1771, and 1772  
By Captain James Cook, R.N.  
The Origin and Constitution of the Kingdom of  
Tahiti is described: Their Customs and Manners;  
their Natural History, Mines, Commodities, Trade  
with EUROPE, &c.

---

By Andrew Kearsley, Esq. in London  
the Third King

---

Original Plates taken in the Year 1769, 1770, 1771, and 1772  
Gilt, Plain, and other Colours: Printed in London

---

With Figures by Dr. Samuel Johnson, Esq.  
of Great Britain in the University of Oxford, and his  
the Secretary, Comptroller, and Printer of the  
London.

---

A. D. 1780  
Printed by J. B. Nichols, at the Sign of the Sun

T O  
His Royal Highness  
G E O R G E  
P R I N C E of *W A L E S*,  
G O V E R N O R  
O F T H E  
*S O U T H - S E A* Company:

T H I S  
Translation of Monsieur FREZIER'S  
*Voyage to the SOUTH-SEA*

I S  
With all Respect and Humility,  
D E D I C A T E D.


[Faded title at the top of the page]

GEORGE  
WALKER  
of the

GOSWELL  
RIVER

THE

[Several paragraphs of extremely faded text, likely bleed-through from the reverse side of the page]



THE  
P R E F A C E  
TO THE  
R E A D E R.



AS the Accounts of Voyages and Travels are universally well received and esteem'd, if drawn up with a due Regard to Truth ; it is no wonder that of Monsieur Frezier to the *South Sea*, and along the Coasts of *Chili* and *Peru*, so little known to all the *Europeans* except the *Spaniards*, should be well approved of in *France* and *Holland*, in the *French Tongue* : Especially, if it be consider'd, who the Author of it is, and what his Performance.

As for the first of these, the late *French King*, *Lewis XIV.* who owed the Brightest Part of his Glory, and his Grandeur, to his Encouragement of the Arts and Sciences, and to his singular Judgment in the Choice of fit Persons to improve them,

A having

*To the Reader.*

having been at a vast Expence to support his Grandson upon the Throne of *Spain*, thought this a proper Opportunity of getting a full Information of the least known Parts of the *Spanish West-Indies*, before the *French*, as well as all other Nations, should be excluded those Seas by a Peace. For this end, he pitch'd upon our Author, an experienced Engineer and Mathematician in his Service, whom he knew to be every way qualify'd to make Hydrographical Observations for the Use of Mariners, and for the Correction of the Charts; and also to take exact Plans of the most considerable Ports and Fortresses along the Coasts whither he was going; to direct to their best Anchorages, and to point out their respective Dangers; (things which might hereafter be of great Use to the *French*, if a War should happen to break out again between the two Nations) And this Gentleman he sent at his own Charge on board a Merchant-Ship, in the Year 1712, to pass as a Trader only, the better to insinuate himself with the *Spanish* Governors, and to have all Opportunities of learning their Strength, and whatever else he went to be inform'd of. And we find in his *Dedication* of this Work to the Regent of *France*, that he had so well executed the late King's Design, that upon his Return that Great Prince made Monsieur *Frezier* explain to him the Plans he had drawn, and signify'd his Approbation of them both by gracious Expressions, and by a generous Reward. But his



*To the Reader.*

his Most Christian Majesty dying before the Book was ready to appear in the World, the Duke of Orleans, who now governs the Kingdom, was pleas'd to permit our Author to address it to him: And the Account he gives him of it, is, that it is a Collection of the Observations which he made in Navigation, on the Errors of the Maps, and the Situation of the Harbours and Roads he had been in; together with a Description of the Animals, Plants, Fruits, Metals, and whatsoever the Earth produces of Curious, in the richest Colonies in the World; and lastly, a most exact Account of the Commerce, Forces, Government, and Manners, as well of the *Creolian Spaniards*, as of the Natives of the Country, whom he treats with all the Respect which is due to Truth.

Neither must we omit any thing that is of Use in the Author's *Preface*, where he is more particular; and especially as to the Difference between this Work and Father *Fewille's* Journal. He tells us, that that Learned Monk apply'd himself chiefly to Astronomy, Botany, and other Parts of Natural Philosophy; whereas Monsieur *Frezier's* Business hath been to take Plans, and to bring the Navigators acquainted with the Seasons, general Winds, Currents, Rocks, Shelves, Anchorages, and Landing-Places, where-ever he came. It must not therefore seem strange, that the Plans of those two

To the Reader.

Authors do no better agree: But Monsieur *Frezier* produces several Instances of the Father's Mistakes: The Mouth of the Bay of *La Conception* (says he) is made too wide in *Féuille's* Plan by almost the Half; the Streets of *Callao* are all confounded; and the Bastion of *S. Lewis* hath a defenceless Face, tho' there is a Line of Defence *schante* upon the Spot. These last Faults are not, however, to be imputed to him: The Addition of several Works, which were never inserted in any other Design than that of the late Monsieur *Rossemin*, Engineer of the Place, shews, that they are not his, but the Copyer's, from whom I had also the same Plan and the Designs. In that of the Road of *Callao*, he makes the Town, which doth not really exceed 600 Toises, as big as the Isle of *S. Laurence*, which is almost 4000 Toises. Lastly, he himself owns, that in his Plan of *Lima*, the Quarter call'd *Malambo* falls short of a sixth Part, whereas that Quarter makes at least a sixth Part of the Town; that of *Cercado* is placed without the Inclosure, tho' it is really within it; and he reckons the Bastions but 25, when there are 34. Not to mention other Plans, whose Imperfections are of less Consequence. Moreover, that Father places *Arica* and *Ylo* under the same Meridian, within eight Seconds of Time, or two Minutes of a Degree; whereas I know by my own Observation, that those Ports, which are about

*To the Reader.*

' about 28 or 30 Leagues distant one from the  
' other, lie S. E. and N. W. on the Globe, which  
' causes a Difference of at least a Degree.

For the rest, our Author acquaints us, that his  
Plans (except three, *viz.* of *Callao*, *Valparaiso*,  
and *Copiapò*) are drawn by the same Scale, that so  
their Proportion may be seen at once; and that  
he hath been more particular in his Relation of the  
Customs and Manners of the *Indians*, and of their  
Mines, and Methods of working them; so that his  
Book and Father *Feuillée's* have very little in  
common.

To speak Truth, this last-mention'd Part of  
Monsieur *Frezier's* History is so very New and Cur-  
rious, that it might alone be thought a sufficient  
Motive to the Translation, and Publishing of it  
in *English*, had it wanted the Recommendation of  
the Judicious, which it doth not: For, after the  
Privileges granted by the *Spaniards* to our *South-Sea*  
Company, of trading in those distant Countries,  
and the Settlement of *English* Factories by their Con-  
sent at *Vera Cruz*, *Cartagena*, *Panama*, *Portobelo*, and  
*Buenos Ayres*, (to bring home Gold and Silver, no  
doubt) What could be of so great Advantage to  
the *English*, as an Account of the Manner of dis-  
covering, opening, and working their Mines?

Before we entirely bid Adieu to Monsieur *Fre-*  
*zier's* own Abstract of his Work, we cannot but  
take Notice how unaccountable it seems, that a-  
mong

*To the Reader.*

mong the *Indians of Chili*, there should be no Track, or Sign, or Foot-step, either of the Worship of a Deity, or of the Cohabitation of Men, as in all other known Parts of the World; but that they should content themselves with living separately under a sort of Huts made of the Branches of Trees.

Upon the whole matter, we have taken due Care to have a just Translation of this Useful Work: And lest any Blunder might be made in copying Monsieur *Frezier's Plans, &c.* (which too commonly happens in Affairs of this nature) we have at a considerable Expence procured a Number of Cutts printed from the Original Plates at *Paris*, by that Author's Permission; the *French Explanations* whereof being render'd into *English*, and inserted at the Foot of their proper Pages, the Reader will at the same time understand them with Ease, and have the Satisfaction that the Plates are true and genuine.

One Objection doth indeed lie against Monsieur *Frezier*, arising perhaps from his Ambition to be thought to correct the General Sea-Chart of our Country-man *Dr. Halley, Savilian Professor of Geometry in the University of Oxford*; but besides that the Reputation of this Chart is establish'd by the Experience of our Navigators in most Voyages, beyond the Power of Monsieur *Frezier* to hurt it; we must remember that our Author is a *Frenchman*:

To the Reader.

man: And therefore we need give no farther Account of their Difference, than is contain'd in the Letter subjoin'd, which Dr. Halley was pleas'd on that Occasion to write to us; and in the *Postscript* at the End of M. Frezier's Book.

What follows that, being a Relation of the Jesuites Settlement and Commerce in *Paraguay*, which are sometimes mention'd in the Course of Monsieur Frezier's Voyage, we judg'd it not improper to give it a Translation from the Edition printed in *Holland*, and to annex it to ours in *English*.



Mr.

April 6. 1717.

Mr. Bowyer,

I Am glad to hear you have undertaken to print, in English, the Voyage of Mr. Frezier to and from the Coasts of Peru and Chili. Our People are very much unacquainted with those Seas; and those that are, commonly want either Will or Language to inform the World properly of what they find worth Notice, and of what may be of Use to those that shall hereafter make the like Voyages. The French have the Faculty of setting off their Relations to the best Advantage; and particularly your Author has informed us, in a very instructive manner, of several things that are not only very entertaining, but also what may be of eminent Service to us, either in case of Trade or War in the Seas he describes. On this account I cannot doubt but your Design must answer your Expectation, especially since you bestow on the Book so elegant an Edition. But however it may have pleased me in other Respects, I find myself obliged to desire of you the Liberty to subjoin a small Postscript in Defence of my Chart of the Variation of the Compass, (whereby I hoped I had done Service to the Sailors of all Nations) against the groundless Exceptions of your Author, who seems to seek all Occasions to find Fault, and is otherwise unjust to me. If you please to grant me this Favour, you will, without any Prejudice to yourself, very much oblige

Your very humble Servant,

To Mr. Jonah Bowyer  
These.

Edm. Halley.

A

## *Directions to the Binder*

### Plates.

I. Place to front the Title.			
II. mark'd Page	_____	9, place against Page	_____ 10.
III. mark'd Page	_____	17, place against Page	_____ 19.
IV. mark'd Page	_____	24, place against Page	_____ 25
V. mark'd Page	_____	29, place against Page	_____ 33
VI. mark'd Page	_____	40, place against Page	_____ 43
VII. mark'd Page	_____	46, place against Page	_____ 47
VIII. mark'd Page	_____	48, place against Page	_____ 52
IX. mark'd Page	_____	59, place against Page	_____ 62
X. mark'd Page	_____	65, place against Page	_____ 70
XI. mark'd Page	_____	70, place against Page	_____ 76
XII. mark'd Page	_____	82, place against Page	_____ 89
XIII. mark'd Page	_____	81, place against Page	_____ 92
XIV. mark'd Page	_____	89, place against Page	_____ 99
XV. mark'd Page	_____	107, place against Page	_____ 117
XVI. mark'd Page	_____	109, place against Page	_____ 120
XVII. mark'd Page	_____	110, place against Page	_____ 121
XVIII. mark'd Page	_____	117, place against Page	_____ 129
XIX. mark'd Page	_____	118, place against Page	_____ 132
XX. mark'd Page	_____	126, place against Page	_____ 139
XXI. mark'd Page	_____	134, place against Page	_____ 150
XXII. mark'd Page	_____	138, place against Page	_____ 158
XXIII. mark'd Page	_____	154, place against Page	_____ 171
XXIV. mark'd Page	_____	156, place against Page	_____ 173
XXV. mark'd Page	_____	165, place against Page	_____ 181
XXVI. mark'd Page	_____	173, place against Page	_____ 193
XXVII. mark'd Page	_____	175, place against Page	_____ 195
XXVIII. mark'd Page	_____	185, place against Page	_____ 206
XXIX. mark'd Page	_____	237, place against Page	_____ 255
XXXI. mark'd Page	_____	247, place against Page	_____ 271
XXXII. mark'd Page	_____	place against Page	_____ 286
XXXIII. mark'd Page	_____	270, place against Page	_____ 29
XXXIV. mark'd Page	_____	272, place against Page	_____ 297
XXXV. mark'd Page	_____	272, place against Page	_____ 298
XXXVI. mark'd Page	_____	236, place against Page	_____ 308
36. mark'd Page	_____	place against Page	_____ 310
XXXVII. mark'd Page	_____	283, place against Page	_____ 311

*Place this Page after the Preface.*

THE HISTORY OF THE  
ROYAL NAVY

# VOYAGE

## TO THE SOUTH SEA

BY  
ADMIRAL ROBERT BURNET  
IN TWO VOLUMES.  
LONDON,  
PRINTED BY R. CLAY AND COMPANY,  
11, BUNYARD LANE, E.C. 4.  
1911.





A  
VOYAGE  
TO THE  
SOUTH-SEA.



THE Structure of the Universe, which is naturally the Object of our Admiration, has ever also been the Subject of my Curiosity: From my very Infancy I took the greatest Pleasure in all such Things as could advance me in the Knowledge of it: Globes, Charts, and Books of Travels were my singular Delight: I was scarce capable of observing Things by myself, when I undertook a Journey into *Italy*: The Pretence of studying afterwards serv'd me to travel through some Part of *France*; but being at length fix'd, by the Employment I have had the Honour to obtain in the King's Service, I thought there was no more Expectation of indulging my Inclination to travel, when his Majesty was pleas'd to permit me to lay hold of the Opportunity that then offer'd, of seeing *Chili* and *Peru*.

I embark'd at *S. Malo*, in the Quality of an Officer, aboard a Ship of 36 Guns, 350 Tons Burden, and 135  
B Men,

## A Voyage to

Men, call'd the *S. Joseph*, commanded by the *Sieur Dieuchêne Battas*, a Man commendable for his Experience and Knowledge in Marine Affairs, and for much Understanding and Activity in Trade, which was very suitable to our Design.

On *Monday, November 23, 1711*, we set sail from the Port of *S. Malo*, in Company with the *Mary*, a small Vessel, of 120 Tons Burden, commanded by the *Sieur du Jardais Daniel*, who was to serve for our Store-ship. We went to lie for a fair Wind near *Cape Frebel*, under the Cannon of the *Castle de la Latte*, in the Bay *de la Frenaye*, where we anchor'd the same Day; but we waited in vain for near two Months.

The Tedioufness of so long a Stay, the Sharpness of the Winter, then well advanc'd, the Wind, the Cold, and the Rain, which I must be expos'd to every other four Hours, during the Watches we kept alternatively Day and Night without Interruption, according to the Custom of the Sea; and the Inconveniency of a Merchant-ship, in which a Man scarce knew where to bestow himself, began to make me sensible of the Hardships of a Sailor's Life, and how opposite it was to that Quiet and Retiredness which are requisite for Study and Meditation, my greatest Delights ashore\*. In short, I soon saw the utmost of Misfortunes in a Shipwreck which happen'd before our Eyes. Here follows an Account of it.

It is first to be observ'd, That most of the Ships that sail from the Port of *S. Malo*, come to an Anchor in the Road of *Frenaye*, which is but four Leagues from it to the Westward, either to wait for a fair Wind, or to gather their Crews, which do not go aboard till the last Minute. On the 9th of *December* there were five Ships, the *Count de Girardin*, the *Michael-Andrew*, the *Hunter*, the *Mary*, and we; when the *Chevalier de la V*—, who commanded the *Great-Britain*, a Privateer of 36 Guns, came at Six in the Evening, and dropp'd his Anchor near us; but the Buoy-rope, which thro' Neglect was

\*—jam inde  
ab adulescentia,

Ego hanc cle-  
mentem vitam  
urbanam &  
otium

Secutus sum,  
& quod fortuna-  
tatum isti pu-  
tant,  
Uixorem nun-  
quam habui.  
Ter. Adel.

1, 1.

was still fast aboard, having hinder'd it from taking hold, the Ebb carry'd the Ship near to a Shoal that is at the Foot of the Fort *de la Latte*, before they could drop another: That same held them during the Ebb, within a Pistol Shot from the Rock; but upon the Return of the Flood, the Violence of the Current soon cast them upon that Shoal. The Captain perceiving himself in that inevitable Danger, fir'd several Guns to desire Assistance of the other Ships in the Road. Every one sent Men to his Assistance with all possible Expedition, to bring him off; but it prov'd in vain, the S. E. Wind rising, and driving out so violently to Sea with the Tide, that no Boat could come up to the Ship; and the Boat belonging to the Count *de Girardin* was drove so far out of the Bay, that it could not return aboard its own Ship that Night; that of the *Hunter* was cast away, and had it not been for ours, the Men had been lost. At length, about Midnight, the Ship struck, and was stav'd in so short a time, that the Crew was sav'd with much Difficulty, at the Foot of the Castle; only three Men being drown'd, among whom was an Officer.

The next Morning we still saw the dismal Hull of the Ship lying on its Side, beaten by the Waves, which in twenty four Hours drove it all away in Shivers. It is easy to imagine, what dismal Reflexions all Men made upon that fatal Spectacle; especially myself, who was making my first Essay of Navigation in a Voyage of two Years at the least.

We had lain there twenty seven Days in almost continual foul Weather, the Wind not permitting us to put out to Sea, when Orders were brought us from our Owners \* to return to *S. Malo*, for fear of being surpriz'd by some *English* Vessels, which were to attack us there, of which they had receiv'd Advice. Accordingly we return'd thither on *Sunday* the 20th of *December*, and continu'd there till the 6th of *January* of the ensuing Year 1712.

*Return to  
S. Malo.*

\* *The Brothers  
Vincent  
and M. Du-  
hamel.*

## A Voyage, &amp;c.

That Day, the Wind coming about to the East, we sail'd the second time from the Road of *Rance*; but no sooner were we out of the Mouth of the Road, than we were oblig'd to come to an Anchor, for fear of running, during the Night, upon the Rocks, near which Ships must pass to go into the Channel. The Wind was at N. N. E. and a rolling Sea made us pitch so violently, that the Cable snap'd as soon as the Anchor had taken hold. Thus were we oblig'd to go and anchor again at the Mouth of the Bay of *la Frenaye*, where we had an ill Night.

The next Morning we sail'd, to look for our Anchor, with the *Mary*, to which the like Accident had befallen; and she found hers, but ours was lost, because the Buoy was slipp'd away. Whilst we were looking for it, a Calm came upon us, and then we anchor'd a third time, a League and half from the Castle of *la Latte*, to wait till the Wind, which shifted every Moment, would fix at some Point.

At Break of Day we would have sail'd out to Sea; but our Cable appearing to have been gnaw'd within thirty Foot of the Anchor, it was thought fit to cut it, and fetch another at the Town, and make good the Anchor we had lost; and therefore we drew near, making a Waft with our Colours. We made a Signal, by firing a Gun, that we wanted Assistance; and then return'd to anchor a fourth time since this second Coming out, under the Castle of *la Latte*. Immediately two Officers were sent away to fetch what we wanted; which they did the next Morning.

We lay there eight Days longer, waiting for an East Wind, nothing worth noting befalling us. That time we spent in stowing the Ship, which being too heavy upwards, could not carry much Sail, as we had found by Experience the Day we came out the second time.



PART I.

Containing the Passage from France  
to Chili.



T length, after having suffer'd much by the Weather, which was foul and contrary, the Wind came to E. by S. We immediately sail'd to pass thro' the great Channel between *Rochedouvre* and *Guernsey*, and by that Means to get into the Middle of the *English* Channel, to avoid the Enemy's Privateers, who us'd to infest the Coast of *Bretagne*. We pass'd thro' successfully during the Night, having, about Ten, had a Sight of *Rochedouvre* about a League to the S. W. of us.

Some Hours after, we discover'd, by the Moon Light, a Ship which observ'd us narrowly. We immediately put up our Fights, and made ready to engage, being persuaded that it was a *Fersey* Privateer; but he durst not attack us, and fell astern, so that before Day we had lost Sight of him.

The three Days following we saw several others, of whom we got clear without fighting, by our good working.

The East Wind, which blew very fresh, at length carry'd us out of the most dangerous Parts, and set us out of the Channel. In the Latitude of 40 Degrees we had a Gust of Wind astern, from the North and N. N. E. which would scarce permit us to carry our Mizzen reef'd. The *Mary* not being able to keep up with us, we were oblig'd to drive without any Sail; and in that Posture we ran near three Leagues an Hour.

During

## A Voyage to

During that Time, we discover'd a small Ship, which we judg'd to be a *Portuguese* from the Island of *Madera*; but the Sea ran too high, and we had too much Business of our own, to go about to take Prizes. However, that Wind did us no other Harm, than breaking down our Lar-board Gallery; but on the contrary, caus'd us to make much Way. No sooner were we come into the Latitude of 32 Degrees, than we found a delightful Sea, and Trade-winds from the N. and N. E. which, without disturbing the Sea, drove us along with their agreeable Freshness, and caus'd us to rid much Way with great Ease.

After a stormy dismal Season, we enjoy'd the Pleasure of a fine Climate, and of fair serene Days, when we discover'd Land, towards the Evening, bearing S. E. and by E. about 15 Leagues distant. It was a fresh Satisfaction to us, to know we were near the Island of *Palma*; and more particularly to me, who, by my Reckoning, found myself at that Distance exactly; not that I ought to ascribe that Exactness to my own Skill, it being the Effect of Chance and of the Calculation of the two first Lieutenants, who took Care to keep the Account by the Log; but because the rest, who knew I had never learnt Navigation, nor been at Sea, could not be persuaded, that, with a little Help of the Mathematicks, a Man can do the same that those of the Profession do Mechanically, without being able to give any Geometrical Reason for the meanest of their Performances.

It is true, that four or five Observations of the Sun's Meridian Altitude, set us very right; ever since our coming out, we found our selves, for the most part, less advanc'd than our Reckoning. I was of Opinion, that the said Error was occasion'd by the Division of the Log-line, to which our Navigators use to allow only 41 Foot and 8 Inches from Knot to Knot, for the third Part of a League, making the Sea League to contain

15000

15000 French Foot; wherein they are grossly mistaken, if a Degree contains 57060 Toises, or Fathoms, and the Sea League 2853 of those of the *Chatelet* at *Paris*, as the Gentlemen of the Academy measur'd it, by the King's Order, in the Year 1672; for, according to that Calculation, the League containing 17118 Foot, the Log-line ought to have, between every Knot, to answer the Half-minute Glass, 47 Foot, 6 Inches, and 7 Tenths. According to this Principle, the Knots being too short, I did not wonder that we made less Way than appear'd by our Reckoning; we could not but make one Ninth and  $\frac{2}{3}$  Parts, that is, about one Tenth less.

I was confirm'd in this Opinion on the 31st of *January*, when, having run about 100 Leagues since the last Observation, I found eight Leagues and one Third too much in the Reckoning, and others found more; but in the Process of the Voyage, I was sensible of the Uncertainty of the Log, which Experience and good Sense are to correct, according to the Manner of Casting it, and the Inequality of the Wind, which rarely continues in the same Degree of Force during the Interval of two Hours that the Log is not cast. The Setting of Currents unknown, is still another Cause of Uncertainty; so that it often happen'd, that the Log-table answer'd exactly with the Latitude observ'd; and at other times it fell out, that instead of retrenching, they were fain to add to it.

There were some also, who-relying on their Reckoning, question'd whether it was really Land that had been seen on the *Wednesday* Evening; when on *Thursday*, the 4th of *February*, we again discover'd Land at E. and by S. which was not question'd to be the Island *Hierro*, *Hierro Island*, or *Ferro*, by the Latitude observ'd, and our Run from the Island of *Palma*, which was very exact with the Distance between those two Islands.

Being sure of the Place we were in, we stood for the Islands of *Cape Verde*, with a gentle Gale at N. E. and N. N. E. which in three Days carry'd us to the Tropick, where

where the Calms began to make us sensible of extreme Heats. They lasted but three Days, being now and then mitigated by a little Freshness from the West to the South.

*Flying Fishes.* In those fine Climates we began to see Flying Fishes, which are as big as large Pilchards, or Herrings; their Wings are nothing but long Fins; they serve them to fly no longer than they are wet. We often took some of them that fell into the Ship, or on the Chains; they are delicious and well tasted.

*Dorado's.* The Enemies of these Fishes are the *Dorado's*, or Gilt-heads, who continually pursue them, and with such a Bait they are easily taken. They are so very greedy, that if a counterfeit Flying Fish be made with Linnen, or any such Thing, they suffer themselves to be deceiv'd, tho' they bite at no other Bait. By that Means we took the first I ever saw, and I could never have done admiring their Beauty. On their Scales appears the brightest Lustre of Gold intermix'd with Shadowings of Azure, Green and Purple, than which nothing more beautiful can be imagin'd. The Taste of their Flesh is not answerable to that Beauty, tho' it is good enough, but somewhat dry.

*Green Clouds.* My Inclination to Painting caus'd me to take Notice, under the Tropick, of some Clouds beautifully green at Sun-setting: I had never seen any thing like it in *Europe*, nor have I since seen any of so sprightly a delicate Colour.

In 21 Degrees, 21 Minutes Latitude, and 21 Degrees, 39 Minutes Longitude, West from the Meridian of *Paris*, we found the Sea very white, for the Space of five or six Leagues; and casting the Lead, found no Bottom at 40 Fathoms; after which, the Sea recovering its usual Colour, we suppos'd we had pass'd over some shallow Place, which is not set down in the Charts.

For some Days we had a little fresh Air at N. W. which is not usual in those Parts; after which, the North and N. N. E. Gales brought us into the Latitude of 17 Degrees,



Degrees, 40 Minutes, where we lay by a Night, knowing we were near the Islands of *Cape Verde*.

Accordingly, the next Day, being the 15th of *February*, we discover'd a very high Land cover'd with a Fog, and the next Day distinctly perceiv'd that it was the Island of *S. Nicolas*, and afterwards the Island of *S. Lucy*, which bore S. S. W. from us.

We stood about to have Sea-room at Night, and having run eight Leagues N. E. and by E. we thought we saw Rocks by the Brightness of the Sea, which in those Parts glitters very much; that is, it is, during the Night, very light and sparkling, in case the Surface be never so little agitated by Fishes, or by Ships; so that the Ship's Way looks like Fire. I could scarce have believ'd this Effect of the Motion of the Sea-water, if I had not seen it, tho' I had before read the Accounts given of it by Physicians, particularly *Robault*, who also adds Reasons why it glitters more in hot Countries than elsewhere. However that is, we stood about, if I mistake not, on account of a Shoal of Fish, and ran 14 Leagues W. and by N. and about Three in the Afternoon, we perceiv'd, thro' the Mist, the Island of *S. Lucy*, to the Southward, about a League and half distant.

An Hour after, we discover'd that of *S. Vincent*, which we only knew by Guess, as well as the other Islands before-mention'd, because none of our Men had seen them on the North-side. Then it was that I became sensible of the Usefulness of the Draughts of Lands in the Latitudes where they are generally look'd for; *Mark is* however, this may be known by a low Land stretching *from the Land* out at the Foot of the high Mountains towards the N. W. by next the Island of *S. Anthony*, and by a little Sugar-loaf Rock, which appears at the Mouth of the Bay, West of the Island, about two Cables Length from the Shore.

Anchoring at the Island of S. Vincent, one of those  
of Cape Verde.

UPON the Certainty of these Marks, we, at Six of the Clock, enter'd the Channel between the two Islands of S. Vincent and S. Anthony, with a fresh Gale at N. N. W. and N. and ran along within Musket-shot of the little Rock to gain upon the Wind; it is very clean. At that Distance we found 27 Fathom Water: They say there is a Passage next the Land, and that it has 17 or 20 Fathom Water. In turning that little Island, Ships are expos'd to great Squaws or Gusts of Wind, which come down from the Mountain at N. E. Some Ships of Monsieur du Guay's Squadron lost their Round-tops there, and among them the *Magnanimous*, which was oblig'd to put in.

See Plate I.

At length we anchor'd in the Creek, in ten Fathom Water, the Bottom a fine Sand and Gravel, S. and by E. somewhat Easterly of the little Island, and East of the Star-board Point going in. At the same time the *Mary* came

Plate II. Page 10. explain'd in English.

The Plan of the Bay of the Island of S. Vincent, near the Coast of Africa, West of Cape Verde, in 16 Degrees 50 Minutes of Northern Latitude, facing the Island of S. Anthony.

- Partie de l'Isle de S. Vincent, Part of the Island of S. Vincent.  
 Marais, A Marsh.  
 Bois, A Wood.  
 Aigade, The Watering-place.  
 Anse où l'on va seiner, A Creek for fishing.  
 Ruisseau qui tarit, A Rivulet that is sometimes dry.  
 Terre basse, Low Land.  
 Echelle d'une lieue marine, A Scale of a Sea League.  
 Partie de l'Isle de S. Antoine, Part of the Island of S. Anthony.  
 Vue de l'Isle de S. Vincent, à O. S. O. A Prospect of the Island of S. Vincent, at W. S. W.

Partie de l'Isle de

S.<sup>t</sup> Vincent

Plaque 21  
page 7



PLAN  
de la Baye de l'Isle  
de  
S.<sup>t</sup> VINCENT  
Située à la Côte d'Afrique à l'Ouest  
du Cap Verd,  
par 16.<sup>e</sup> 501. de lat.<sup>de</sup> Septentrionale  
en face de l'Isle  
de S.<sup>t</sup> Antoine.

2 lieues

Partie de l'Isle de  
S.<sup>t</sup> Antoine

Vue de l'Isle de S.<sup>t</sup> Vincent. a 010.





came to an Anchor S. E. from us, in eight Fathom Water, the Bottom an owzy Sand.

We reach'd the Island of *S. Vincent* very exactly with our Account, because in those fine Climates, where the Weather is always serene, we had an Observation almost every Day, which differ'd from our Reckoning five or six Minutes South every Day, even when there was a Calm; whence I conjectur'd, that the Currents carry'd us so far: On the contrary, from 19 Degrees Latitude, the Computation was before us. This Error might also proceed from the Log-line, as has been said before, because in a Day of 45 Leagues Run, abating four, I still found above one for the common Current, which drove us somewhat to the South.

The next Day, being the 16th of *February*, we thought to go and water in a Rivulet, which runs a great Part of the Year into a little Creek, the farthest Northward in the Bay; but we found only a dry Channel. Being surpriz'd at the Disappointment of so necessary a Recruit, a Detachment of Men and Officers was sent to seek some in the Island, and whether there was any Dwelling, whence some Cattle and Fruit might be had. They only found some salt Marshes, and no other Habitation but a few Cottages made of the Boughs of Trees, fitter for Beasts than Men, the Doors being so low, that there is no going into them but upon all four: All the Household-goods were some Leather Budgets and Tortois Shells, which serv'd for Seats, and for Vessels to hold Water. The Blacks, who are the Inhabitants, had abandon'd them, for fear of being carry'd away and sold, tho' by our Colours they should have taken us for *English*. Two or three of them were seen stark-naked, and they hid themselves in the Woods as soon as they saw our Men, who could never come near, tho' they call'd to them in a friendly manner.

At length, after long Search, at the South Point of *Watering* the Bay, they found a little Gut of Water, which ran

down from the Craggs to the Sea: They dug to make it run the better, and gather enough Water to lade it up. Thus we made our Provision in two Days, tho' with Trouble enough to get it aboard, because the Sea is very rough there. This perfectly fresh Water was none of the best; but in seven or eight Days stunk so much, that it was a great Punishment to be obliged to drink it.

Wood.

Whilst some water'd, others wooded, 200 Paces from the Watering-place. It was a fort of Tamarind, which was easy enough to fell, and near the Shore.

S. Anthony  
Island.

We had put up *English* Colours, with the Pendant at the Main-mast, and had fir'd a Gun by way of Signal of Friendship, to induce the Inhabitants of the Island of S. Anthony, which is but two Leagues from thence, to come to us; but whether they mistrusted the Contrivance, or that the Fog obstructed their perceiving of us distinctly, they came not. We only saw a Fire, which seem'd to answer that made by our Waterers, in the Night, on the Shore. However, the S. *Clement* of S. *Malo*, with its Pink, having anchor'd at the same Place, was visited by the Inhabitants of S. *Anthony*, who for their Money brought them Beeves, Goats, Figs, Bananas, Lemons, and very sweet Wine. They say there may be about 2000 Persons of both Sexes, and of all Colours and Conditions, in the Island; and that, above the Anchoring-place, there is a little Fort, with four Pieces of Cannon, in which there is a *Portuguese* Governor.

Fish.

As for us, we had no other Refreshment than what we got by Fishing; whereof there is great Plenty in the Bay of S. *Vincent*, tho' there is only one Creek lying between two little Points towards the E, S. E. where the Sean can be us'd, because in other Places the Shore is rocky; but Amends may be made with the Hook, for there is an infinite Number of Fish, as Mullers, Rock-fish, Manchorans, Pilchards, Grunters, white-tooth Long-beaks, and a sort which have a Rat's Tail and round Spots all over them. Here is the Figure of one of those

Plat XL

we

we took, which was six Foot long, and is very like the *Petimbubaba* of *Brasil*, mention'd in *Margrave*, p. 148. There are also sometimes taken Bourles, or Purles, a most beautiful sort of Fish, described in the Voyage of Monsieur de *Gennes*, by the *Sieur Froger*. In the Torrois Season, there are prodigious Numbers of them, as appears by the infinite Quantity of their Shells and Skeletons that lie along the Shore. The Inhabitants of the Island of *S. Anthony* come every Year to take and dry them, trading with, and feeding on them. In short, there are even great Numbers of Whales.

We could have wish'd to have found some Game to refresh us after our hard Fare at Sea, but there is scarce any in that Island; nor so much as a Beast, except wild Asses, and Goats on the Tops of the Mountains, hard to be come at; some few Pintados, and no other Birds.

Nor had we better Fortune as for Fruit, the Soil being so barren that it produces none; only in the Valleys there are little Tufts of Tamarind Trees, a few Cotton and Lemon Trees: However, I there saw some curious Plants, as the *Tithymalus arborescens*, or branch'd Spurge; *Plants.* the *Abrotanum mar*, or the Male Southernwood, of a most sweet Scent, and a beautiful Green; a yellow Flower, the Stem whereof has no Leaves; the *Palma Christi*, or *Ricinus Americanus*, by the Spaniards in *Peru* call'd *Pillerilla*; and they affirm, that the Leaf of it, apply'd to the Breasts of Nurfes, brings Milk into them, and, apply'd to their Loins, draws it away; the Seed of it is exactly like the *Indian Pine-apple Kernel*; in *Paraguay* they make Oil of it; abundance of Houfleck of several sorts, some of which have thick round Leaves like an Hazel-nut; *Coloquintida-apples*; *Limonium marimum*, very thick; *Lavender* without any Scent; *Dog-grafs*, &c.

Near

*Ambergrease.* Near the little Island very good Ambergrease is found, and the *Portuguese* have sold it to some *French Ships*, and among the rest to the *S. Clement*.

As no Refreshment was to be found in that Island, we set sail to get some in that of *S. Anthony*; but the Wind blew too fresh at N. E. and the Sea ran too high to send Boats; so that we set our Course to get out of the Channel that is form'd by those two Islands. In passing along, we perceiv'd the Anchoring-place towards the S. W.

Soon after we discover'd, farther on, Land at a great Distance, which we took for the Island *Fuego*, or *Pogo*; but the next Morning, after having run about 45 Leagues S. and by E. in the Night, we spy'd a Fire, and when it was full Day a very high Land, which bore from us N. E. and by E. about five Leagues distant, on the Top whereof there appear'd some Smoak.

The Situation of that Land made us take it for the Island *Brava*, but the Smoak inclin'd us to fancy it was that of *Fuego*, or *Fogo*. If so, the Islands of *Cape Verde* must be wrong laid down in *Vankeulen's Sea-Atlas*, which we follow'd.

However, we still made the Best of a good fresh Gale at N. E. which carry'd us within two Degrees of the Equinoctial, where we had two calm Days, with some little Air from W. S. W. to South; after which, a little Gale at S. S. E. having carry'd us on into 40 Minutes Latitude, and 23 Degrees 50 Minutes Longitude, from the Meridian of *Paris*, we tack'd, for fear of falling in too near the Coast of *Brazil*, where the Currents set to the N. W. We stood S. E. and by E. and the next Day, being the 5th of *March*, steering S. and by E. cut the *Line* with a small Gale at W. S. W. at 355 Degrees from *Teneriff*.

The next Day, when it was no longer doubted that we were to the Southward of the *Line*, the foolish Ceremony



mony of Ducking at the Line, practis'd by all Nations, was not omitted.

The Persons to be so serv'd, are seas'd by the Wrists *Ducklog.* to Ropes stretch'd fore and aft on the Quarter-deck for the Officers, and before the Mast for the Sailors; and after much Mummery and Monkey Tricks, they are let loose to be led one after another to the Main-mast, where they are made to swear on a Sea-chart, that they will do by others as is done by them, according to the Laws and Statutes of Navigation; then they pay to save being wetted, but always in vain, for the Captains themselves are not quite spar'd.

The dead Calm, which afforded the Men Leisure to duck one another, expos'd us for four Days successively to excessive Heats, without advancing, during that time, above 20 Leagues in our Course, by the Help of some little shifting Air; but a little Gale at S. E. and E. S. E. by Degrees carry'd us from that scorching Climate, and into 16 Degrees of South Latitude, without any Squawls or Rain, the Weather holding clear and serene. The Wind coming to N. E. and then to N. W. brought us some Showers of Rain, cloudy Weather, and some Hours Calm, for three Days, till we came into 23 Degrees and a half Latitude, and 36 of Longitude.

When we were between 21 and 22 Degrees of South Latitude, and 34 or 35 of Longitude, we saw abundance of Fowl, and believ'd we were not far from the Island of the *Ascension*. We cast the Lead without finding Ground, and had no Sight of it, nor of that of the *Trinity*, which, according to some Charts drawn by Hand, we should be near, in 25 Degrees and a half of South Latitude, where the Wind vary'd to the Southward with Intervals of Calm; but at length, being forwarded by a small Gale at S. S. E. N. E. and E. we in three Days arriv'd at the Island of *S. Katharine*, on the Coast of *Brazil*, exactly according to our Account, whereof these are the Particulars.

The

Remarks on  
the Calcula-  
tion.

The next Day after our Departure from S. Vincent, our Account was somewhat before us; the next Day, on the contrary, we outstripp'd it; but the 26th of February, after having taken an Observation in 5 Degrees 54 Minutes, we found ourselves 8 Leagues farther to the Southward than we imagin'd, tho' two Days before we had found 9 Degrees 45 Minutes by Observation. The Mistake still continu'd on the same side, with those Marks of Currents which are call'd Channels of Tides, till towards 9 Degrees South of 5 or 6 Minutes, according to the Extent of the Day's Run, without reckoning the Correction of the Log-line. From 9 to 13 Degrees there was less than from 13 to 17; and the Difference was the more considerable, because we drew near Land, so that we found one Day we had sail'd 25 Leagues, when the Computation made but 16.

Of Currents.

It is plain, that these Errors were occasion'd by the Currents which set us to the Southward: Whether it be directly to the South, to the S. E. or to the S. W. cannot be positively known; but the most reasonable Conjecture, in my Opinion, is, that they must set to the S. W. or S. S. W. because they are so determin'd by the Position of the Coast of *Brazil*. This Experience reduces to a small Extent the Remark made by *Vooge*, who in his *Waggoner*, printed in *Vankeulen*, says, The Current on the Coast of *Brazil*, from *March* till *July*, sets violently along the Shore to the Northward; and from *December* till *March*, the South-current ceases; where if it be true as to the North-part of that Coast, it is not regular for the South-part from 10 Degrees of South Latitude, a little out at Sea.

It may nevertheless be objected against my Conjecture, that if the Currents did set S. W. they would carry the Ships that come from the *South-Sea* nearer to the Coast of *Brazil*; but Experience shews, that from *Sibald's* Islands, there is found an Error of 2 or 300 Leagues contrary to the Draught to that Coast, or the Island of *Fernando*

*Fernando de Noreña*; therefore the Currents cannot set to the S. W.

To this I answer, 1. That the Currents which set along the Coast of *Brazil*, coming to meet the new Lands of *Sibald's Islands* and *Staten Land*, turn off to the Eastward, as several Ships have found by Experience; after which, they sometimes fall into another Channel of Currents, which sets to the Coast of *Guinea*. There needs no more than casting an Eye on the Charts of the Coasts of *Africa* and of *South America*, to be sensible of the Likelihood of this Conjecture.

2. These Errors proceed from the Charts, as shall be said in its Place, and particularly those of *Pieter Goos*, which our Navigators make most use of. This Error of Position is not always perceiv'd upon making the Coasts of *Brazil* coming from *Europe*, because Ships are often carry'd thither by the Currents, as I have just now observ'd; and that not knowing whether their Bent is to the East or to the West, they often do not correct the Leagues, as we almost all of us did in our Voyage, following therein the Example of most of the *Dutch*; so that it is not to be wonder'd that we found those Charts good which they have made by their Journals.

Be that as it will, it is certain, that from the Island of *S. Vincent* to that of *S. Katharine*, we ran above 60 Leagues to the Southward, beyond our Computation, tho' we had an Observation almost every Day, and took our Precautions upon our Error; and yet notwithstanding all that, we arriv'd at the Island of *S. Katharine* the 31st of *March*, exactly with our Points on *Pieter Goos's* Chart, about ten Leagues more or less, one from another: Where it may be infer'd, that if we had given way to the Westward, we had ran far in upon the Land, as has happen'd to most *French* Ships bound for the *South-Sea*.

*Tuesday, March* the 30th, believing ourselves to be near Land, we sound'd about Six in the Evening, and found 90 Fathom Water, the Bottom Sand, Owze, and Shells;

two Leagues and half more to the Westward we had ten Fathom less, and pass'd the Night, heaving the Lead every two Hours, the same Depth and Bottom.

*Island of S. Katharine.*

At Break of Day we saw Land, being six Leagues West of our second Sounding: We soon knew the Island of *Gal*, by its Shape and some little white Spots which are taken for Ships at a Distance, and by little Rocks or Islands that are near it; and it then bore W. and by S. from us, about eight or nine Leagues distant. We heav'd the Lead, and found 55 Fathom Water, the Bottom fine Sand, and owzy. At length we had an Observation, a League and half from that Island to S. and by E. and about three Leagues East from the North-point of *S. Katharine's* Island; the Latitude 27

*See Plate III.* Degrees, 22 Minutes South. Thus it appear'd to us.

A League and half farther West, we found 20 Fathom Water, the Bottom owzy Sand, more gray than before: We continu'd heaving the Lead at equal Distances, the Depth of Water decreasing regularly, to six Fathom, the Bottom gray Owze, where we came to an Anchor, between the Island of *S. Katharine* and the Continent, the Island of *Gal* bearing N. E. and by E. about three Leagues distant, in a Line with the two most Northerly Points of *S. Katharine*, and the N. and by E. Point of the Continent.

*Touching at the Island of S. Katharine, on the Coast of Brasil.*

THE next Day, being the first of *April*, the Captain sent our Boat and that of the *Mary*, with arm'd Crews, to find out a proper Place to water at, and the Dwellings of the *Portuguese*, to get some Refreshments. The *Sieur Lestobec*, second Captain, went at the same time in the *Yawl*, with three Officers, of which Number I was one, to discover whether there were no Ships of the Enemy at anchor in the Creek of *Arazatiba*, which is on the Continent, West of the South Point of the Island.

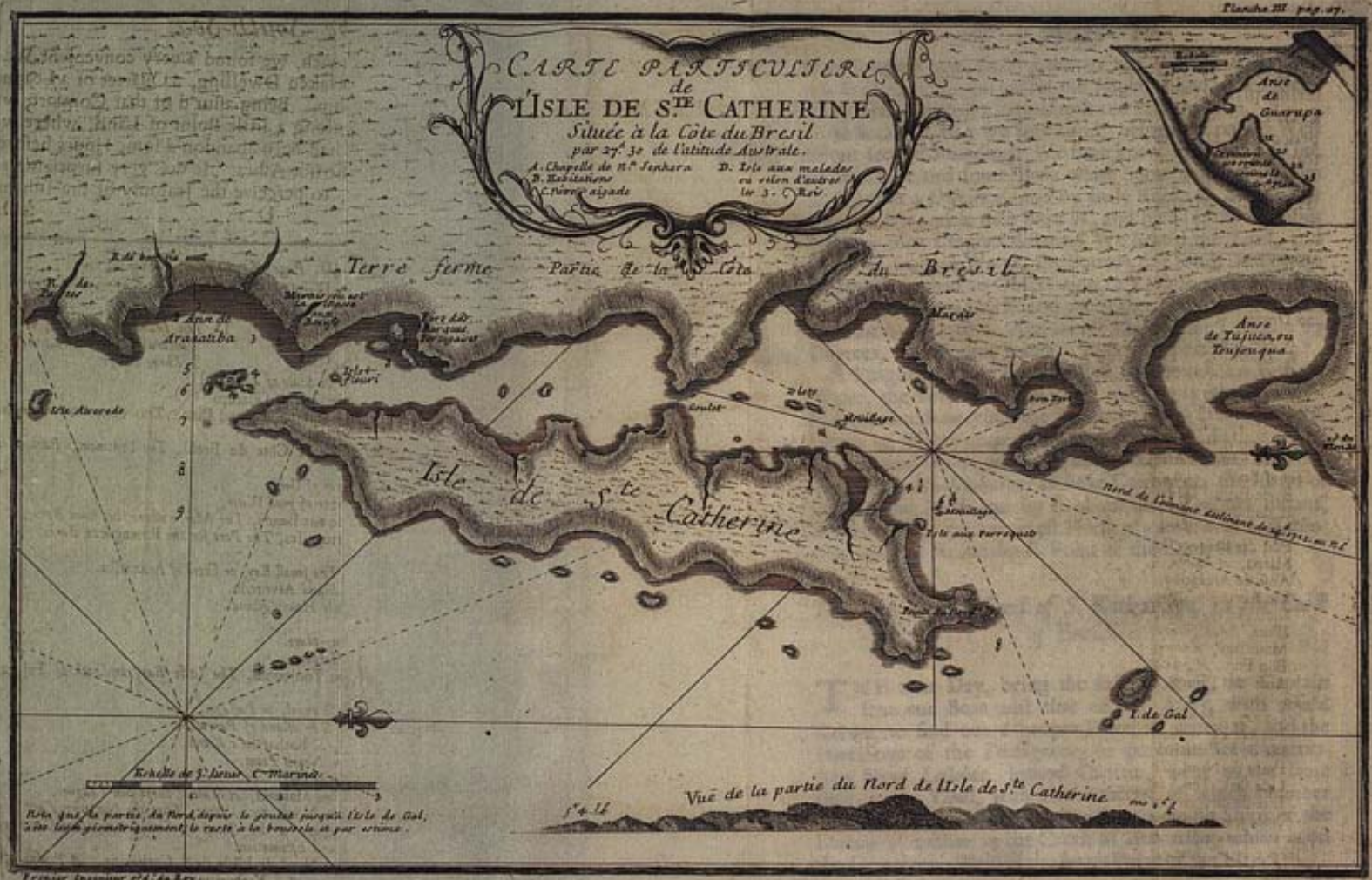
At



CARTE PARTICULIERE  
de  
L'ISLE DE S<sup>TE</sup> CATHERINE

Située à la Côte du Brésil  
par 27° 30' de l'itude Australe.

A. Chapelle de N<sup>o</sup> Senhora D. Isle aux maledes  
B. Habitations ou selon d'autres le 3. Ombre  
C. Riviere ayade



Nota que la partie du Nord depuis le point jusqu'à l'Isle de Gal, a été levée géométriquement, le reste à la boussole et par estime.

Levesque Ingenieur ord. du Roy

At our first Approach, we found a very convenient Watering-place at a forsaken Dwelling, a Quarter of a League E. S. E. from the Ship. Being assur'd of that Comfort, we proceeded farther along a little Point of Land, where we found a House that had been abandon'd some Hours before, as we guess'd by the hot Ashes. It was very surprizing to us, by that Means, to perceive the Jealousy of the Inhabitants,

D 2

tants,

Plate III. Page 18. described in English.

An exact Chart of the Island of S. Katharine, on the Coast of Brazil, in 27 Degrees, 30 Minutes, South Latitude.

A. Our Lady's Chappel.

D. The Island of the Six, or,

B. Dwelling.

according to others, the

C. Our watering Place.

Three Kings.

Echelle d'une Lieue, A Scale of a League.

Anse de Guarupa, The Creek of Guarupa.

Ce renvoi est orienté comme le grand Plan, This Compartment answers the Position of the great Plan.

Terre ferme, Partie de la Côte du Brésil, The Continent, Part of the Coast of Brazil.

R. de Patos, The River of Geese.

R. de bonne Eau, River of good Water.

Marais où est la chasse aux Bœufs, The Marsh where they hunt Beves.

Port des Barques Portugaises, The Port for the Portuguese Barks.

Marais, A Marsh.

Anse de Aratziba, The small Bay, or Creek of Aratziba.

Isle Alvaredo, The Island Alvaredo.

Illot Fleury, The little Fleury Island.

Illots, Small Islands.

Mouillage, Anchoring-place.

Bon Port, A good Harbour.

Anse de Tujaca, ou Toujouqua, The little Bay, or Creek of Tujaca, or Toujouqua.

Goulet, The narrow Channel, or Passage.

Isle aux Perroquets, The Island of Parrots.

Isle de S. Catherine, S. Katharine's Island.

Point du Nord, The North Point.

I. de Gal, The Island of Gal.

Echelle de trois Lieues Marines, A Scale of three Sea-Leagues.

Nota que le partie du Nord, &c. Note, That the Northern Part from the narrow Channel, or Passage to the Island of Gal, was taken Geometrically, the rest by the Compass and Estimation.

Vue de la Partie du Nord de L'Isle de S. Catherine, A Prospect of the Northern Part of the Island of S. Katharine.

tants, because we had made a Signal as Friends, which Captain *Salvador* had agreed on a Year before, with the *Sieurs Roche* and *Befard*, Captains of the *Joyeux* and the *Lysidore*, who had anchor'd at *Arazatiba*, being a white Pendant under an *English* one, at the Main-mast; but we had err'd in firing but one Gun instead of two. Besides, they were otherwise frighted by the News of the Taking of *Rio de Janeiro*, which *Monsieur du Guay Trouin* had lately possess'd himself of, and ransom'd, to revenge the Insolence of the *Portuguese* towards the *French* Prisoners of War, and their Commander *Monsieur le Clerc*. In short, as we were going to seek other Dwellings that had People in them, we saw three Men coming towards us in a *Piragua*, being sent by the Governor or Captain of the Island, to desire us not to land at the Dwellings; that, having been discover'd to be *French*, the Women, in a Fright, were already fled to the Mountains; that, if we would do them no Harm, they would let us partake of the Provisions and Refreshments they had, as they had done to other *French* Ships which put in there before. We receiv'd those Messengers kindly, and sent them aboard our Ship in the Boat belonging to the *Mary*, attended by ours, which we quitted to go and view the Anchoring at *Arazatiba*, as has been said.

See the Chart  
of the Island,  
Plate III.

We first pass'd thro' a little Streight, about 200 Fathom wide, form'd by the Island and the Continent, where there is but two Fathom and a half Water. Then we began to discover fine Dwellings on both Sides, to which we went not, because we had promis'd the Messengers not to go. We sound'd all the Way we went, but never found Water enough for a Vessel of six Guns. We coasted along several fine Creeks of the Island, till Night coming upon us, we were oblig'd to put in to Land. Chance led us into a little Creek, where we had the good Fortune to find Water, and a little Fish we took very seasonably, to which a sharp Appetite was the best Sawee in the World. There we spent the Night upon our Guard against the Tigers, with



with which all those Woods swarm, and whose fresh Track we had newly seen on the Sand. At Break of Day, we still advanc'd half a League farther, to discover whether any Ship was at Anchor at *Arazatiba*, and saw none. One of our Officers, who had put in there two Years before, with Monsieur *de Chabert*, shew'd us a Point of low Land, where there are Herds of wild Bullocks; but we were not well provided to attempt that Sport, and yet we stood much in need of it, for there are none on the North-part of the Island; so that it would be much more advantageous to put into the South-part, if Ships were safe there; but when it blows hard at East, E. S. E. and S. E. there is Danger of being cast away, as happen'd to the *S. Clement* and his Pink, in 1712: They there lost their Boat, with 14 Men, and were themselves at the very Point of perishing, tho' there was no Wind, being only beaten by the dreadful Surge of the Sea. This Road is in about 27 Degrees 50 Minutes Latitude, West of the South-point of the Island of *S. Katharine*. To the Eastward of the little Flowry Island, is a Creek, in which there is very good Water, and little green Oysters, of a delicious Taste. At our Return, we fell into that little Creek, and two others more Northward, and went into an abandon'd Dwelling, where we loaded our Yawl with sweet Oranges, Lemons, and large Limes. Opposite to this, near the Continent, is a little Island, behind which is a small Port, where the Governor of the Island generally keeps a Bark for the Use of the Inhabitants; but for the most part it only serves to carry on the Trade of Dry'd Fish, which they send to *Lagoa* and *Rio de Janeiro*.

The *Portuguese*, who had seen us pass by with *English* Colours at our Yawl, without landing at their Dwellings, at our Return came to meet us in their *Piragua's*, to offer us Refreshments. We accepted of their Offers, and to oblige them, gave them Brandy, a Liquor they are very fond of, tho' they generally drink nothing but Water. At length, we got to our Ship about Midnight, where we found

## A Voyage to

found the Governor *Emanuel Mansa*, with some *Portugueze*, who had brought Refreshments. After having treated him handsomly aboard, he was saluted by way of *Huzza*.

His kind Reception so far reconcil'd the Inhabitants, that every Day they brought us *Piragua's* full of Fowl, Tobacco and Fruit. Whilst we were making that little Excursion in our Yawl, the Ship was wash'd and tallow'd; 18 Pieces of Cannon were put into the Hold to make it lie more snug in the Water, considering the rough Parts we were to pass beyond the Southern Lands. We also brought it nearer to the Island of *S. Katharine*, for the more easy watering; and because the Tides are very sensible, tho' not very regular, or little known, and the Sea does not rise or fall above five or six Foot, we moor'd E. N. E. and W. S. W. 200 Fathom from a little Island, which bore from us S. S. E. the Island of *Gal* bearing from us N. E. and by N. about four Leagues distant, half cover'd by the second Point of the Island of *S. Katharine*, which is the most Northerly. After we had very commodiously made good Wood and excellent Water, we waited some Days for the Beeves, which the *Portugueze* had sent for to *Lagoa*, 12 Leagues from the Island: But on the 9th of *April*, perceiving they still demanded more Time to bring them, we thought it not convenient to lose more Time, because the Season was already somewhat advanc'd, to turn *Cape Horn*, a Place to be dreaded, for the contrary Winds and foul Weather there met with in Winter; therefore, the next Day, being *Sunday*, we put out to Sea. Before we proceed on our Voyage, it will be proper, in this Place, to say something of the Island of *S. Katharine*.

The Description of the Island of *S. Katharine*.

THE Island of *S. Katharine* stretches North and South, from 27 Degrees, 22 Minutes, to 27 Degrees, 50 Minutes. It is a continu'd Grove of Trees, which are all the Year green: There are no Places in it passable, besides what

what have been clear'd about the Dwellings; that is, 12 or 15 Spots scatter'd about here and there along the Shore, in the little Creeks facing the Continent. The Inhabitants settled on them are *Portuguese*, some *European* Fugitives, and a few Blacks: There are also some *Indians*, who come voluntarily to serve them, or taken in War.

Tho' they pay no Tribute to the King of *Portugal*, they are his Subjects, and obey the Governor or Captain he appoints to command them, if there be Occasion, against *European* Enemies, and the *Indians* of *Brazil*; with which last they are almost continually at War, so that they dare not go under 30 or 40 Men together, well arm'd, when they penetrate up the Continent, which is no less embarras'd with Forests than the Island. That Captain commonly commands but three Years, and is subordinate to the Governor of *Lagoa*, a small Town 12 Leagues distant from the Island to the S. S. W. He had at that Time 147 Whites within his District, some *Indians* and Free Blacks, Part whereof are dispers'd along the Shore of the Continent. Their usual Weapons are Hunting-hangers, Bows and Arrows, and Axes: They have but few Firelocks, and seldom any Powder; but they are sufficiently fortify'd by the Woods, which an infinite Quantity of Brambles of several Sorts render almost impenetrable; so that having always a sure Retreat, and but little Household-stuff to remove, they live easy, without any Fear of being robb'd of their Wealth.

In short, they are in such Want of all Conveniencies for Life, that none of those who brought us Provisions would be paid in Money, putting more Value upon a Bit of Linnen or Woollen-stuff to cover them, than on a Piece of Metal, which can neither maintain nor defend them against the Weather, being satisfy'd with a Shirt and Breeches for all Cloathing, the greatest Beaux adding a colour'd Vest and a Hat. Scarce any Man has Shoes or Stockings, yet they must cover their Legs when they go into the Woods; then the Skin of a Tiger's Leg is a Stocking ready made.

Neither

Neither are they more dainty in their Food, than in their Apparel; a little *Maize*, or *Indian Corn*, some Potatoes, Fruit, Fish, and Game, being mostly Monkeys, satisfies them. Those People, at first Sight, appear wretched; but they are, in Reality, happier than the *Europeans*; being unacquainted with the Curiosities and superfluous Conveniencies so much sought after in *Europe*, they are satisfy'd without thinking of them. They live in a Tranquillity which is not disturb'd by Taxes, or the Inequality of Conditions: The Earth, of its own Accord, furnishes them with all Things necessary for Life; Wood and Leaves, Cotton and the Skins of Beasts, to cover themselves and lie on: They covet not that Magnificence of Lodgings, Household-stuff, and Equipage, which only stir up Ambition, and for some Time cherish Vanity, without making a Man ever the more happy. What is still more remarkable, is, that they are sensible of their Happiness, when they see us seek for Plate with so much Fatigue. The only Thing they are to be pity'd for, is, their living in Ignorance: They are Christians it is true, but how are they instructed in their Religion, having only a Chaplain of *Lagoa*, who comes to say Mass to them on the principal Festivals of the Year? However, they pay Tythe to the Church, which is the only Thing exacted from them.

In other respects, they enjoy a good Climate, and a very wholesome Air: They seldom have any other Distemper besides that they call *Mal de Biche*, which is a Pain in the Head, attended with a *Tenesmus*, or continual Desire of going to Stool without doing any thing; and they have a very simple Medicine for it, which they look upon as a Specifick, which is, to apply to the Fundament a little Lemon, or else a Plaster of Gun-powder dissolv'd in Water.

They have also many Medicines of the Simples of the Country, to cure other Distempers that may seize them: *Sassafras*, the Wood so well known for its good Secar, and for its Vertue against Venereal Distempers, is so common

The first thing I observed when I  
 stepped out of the boat was the  
 smell of the sea, a salty, briny  
 scent that filled my nostrils and  
 made me feel like I had been  
 reborn. The sun was high in the  
 sky, and the water around me  
 shimmered with a thousand  
 colors. I had never seen anything  
 like this before. The air was  
 warm and humid, and I could  
 feel the sand beneath my feet.  
 It was a strange, wonderful  
 feeling, like I had discovered  
 a new world. I had heard so  
 much about the sea, but now  
 I was here, and it was all so  
 real. I had come to this place  
 for a reason, and now I knew  
 why. The sea was not just a  
 body of water, it was a living  
 creature, a world of its own.  
 I had found it, and I was  
 never going to leave.

Planche IV. pag. 22.

*Xilon arboreum* L. B.  
*Gossypium arboreum*  
Caule lani. C. B. Pin.



N. Gravéed by the artist.

mon there, that we us'd to cut it to burn. The *Guayacum*, which is also us'd for the same Purposes, is not any Scarcer. There is very fine Maiden-hair, and many Aromatick Plants, known by the Inhabitants for their Uses. The Fruit-trees there are excellent in their several Kinds: The Orange-trees are at least as good as in *China*: There are abundance of Lemon, Citron, *Guayava*, Cabbage, and *Banana* Trees; Sugar-canes, Melons, Water-melons, Turnsoils, and the best Potatoes in the World.

There I first saw the Shrub that bears the Cotton; and, having been long desirous to see it, I drew one Branch, to preserve the Idea of it.

Of the Cotton.

THE Cotton-tree, or Shrub, which *Botanists* call *Gossypium*, or *Xilon arboreum*, is a Shrub which seldom rises above ten or twelve Foot: Its large Leaves have five Points, and are pretty like those of the great Maple, or the Sycomore; but the little ones, that is, those which are nearest the Fruit, have only three Points. Both of them are somewhat thick, and of a deep Green.

The Flowers would be like those of the Mallow call'd *Paste-rose*, if they were somewhat more open, and of the same Colour. They are supported by a green Cup, compos'd of three triangular jagg'd Leaves, which enclose them

E

but

Plate IV. Pag. 25. explain'd in English.

- A. The great Leaf with five Points.
- B. The little Leaf with three Points.
- C. Flowers or Blossoms differently shewn.
- D. The Cup of triangular Leaves.
- E. The Bud parting into four Cells.
- F. Ripe Cotton.
- G. A Seed cover'd with Cotton.
- H. A Seed stripp'd of the Cotton.
- I. The Cell of one of the Testes before it is ripe.

Note, That this Draught represents half the Bigness of the natural Size.

but very imperfectly: They are yellow at the top, and streak'd with red below.

The Flower or Blossom is succeeded by a green Fruit like a Rose-bud, which, when full ripe, grows as big as a little Egg, and divides into three or four Cells, each of them fill'd up with between eight and twelve Seeds, almost as big as Pease, which are wrapp'd up in a filaminous or thready Substance, known by the Name of Cotton, which proceeds from all their Surface, grows white, and causes those Cells to open as it ripens, so that at last the Tufts of it break loose, and drop of themselves. The Seeds are then quite black, and full of an oily Substance of an indifferent good Taste, said to be very good against the Bloody-flux.

This Cotton-tree differs very much from that which they cultivate at *Malta*, and throughout the *Levant*, and which is only a little annual Plant; that is, it must be sown and renew'd every Year, for which Reason it is call'd *Xilon herbaceum*: Besides, its Leaves are roundish, and notch'd, and much about the Bigness of those of Mallows.

To part the Seeds from the Cotton, they have a little Instrument consisting of two Rowlers, as thick as a Finger, which turning contrary Ways, pinch the Cotton and draw it away by Degrees. The Seed, which is round and thick, cannot pass between the Rowlers, so that it is stripp'd, and drops down as soon as the Cotton is pass'd thro'.

They say, those Cotton-trees are of the lesser Sort, because on the Continent there are some taller and thicker than our Oaks, which bear a Leaf like the former. They bear the Silk Cotton, which is very short; but it is a Sort they call *Houatte*.

*Dampier* has drawn another Sort there is in *Brasil*, call'd *Momou*. This is what he says of it: "The Flower or Blossom is compos'd of little Filaments, almost as fine as Hairs, three or four Inches long, and of a dark Red; but the Tops of them are of an Ash Colour: At the Bottom



Bottom of the Stem there are five Leaves narrow and stiff, six Inches long.

In the Woods there are also *Mabant*, or Mangrove-trees, the Bark whereof consisting of very long Fibres, serves to make Ropes of. There is a Tree very singular for its Figure, which has given it the Name of the *Flam-beau*, or *Prickly-candle*; Its Leaves are actually made like a Branch of four Candles; that is, the Bottom of it is a Cross rounded at the Angles: They grow like those of the *Raquette*, one out of another: They are from eight to fifteen Foot long, and produce a Fruit which much resembles a Fig, or green Walnut. There are abundance of them in *Peru*, being six-sided, as *Father du Tertre* has represented them in his History of the *Caribbee* Islands. The *Manzanilla* Tree is somewhat more rare there: It is one of the most venomous Trees that are known, producing an Apple beautiful to the Eye, which is Poison. From its Bark proceeds a sort of Milk, whose Venom Seamen have often Experience of: It in cutting of Wood to burn, they happen to light upon this, and that the said Milk flies on their Faces, or that they handle the Wood, immediately the Part swells, and pains them for several Days. When the *Manzanilla's* drop into the Sea, and the Fishes eat them, their Teeth turn yellow and they become poisonous.

The Fishery is plentiful in many little Creeks of the Island, and of the Continent, where there is Conveniency for casting a Net. We there took Fishes from four to five Foot long, very delicious, somewhat shaped like Carps, whose Scales were larger than a Crown Piece. Some have them round, and they are call'd *Mero's*; others have them square, and are call'd *Salemera's* in Portuguese, and *Piraguera's* by the *Indians*. There is a smaller Sort call'd *Quares*, which have a Bone in the Head exactly like a great Bean; not to mention an infinite Number of Mulletts, *Carangus's*, *Macborans*, *Roek-fish*, *Grunters*, *Gurnets*, *Pilchards*, &c.

E. 2 We

Sword-fish,  
Plate XVII.

We one Day took there a Sword-fish, which is a very singular Sort, having on its Head a flat Bone full of Points on both Sides, which serves to defend it against the Whales, as we once saw on the Coast of *Chili*; and it has another thing peculiar, which is, a Humane Mouth and another Humane Opening.

Sea-horse,  
Plate XVII.

Tho' the Sea-horse be sufficiently known in *Europe*, I here insert the Figure of one I took with a Hook, drawn from its natural Bulk.

Game.

Game is no less plentiful than the Fishery; but the Woods are of such difficult Access, that it is almost impossible to pursue it into them, and to find it when kill'd. The most common Birds are the Parrots, very good to eat: They always fly by two and two, very near one another. A Sort of Pheasants, call'd *Giacotins*, but not so delicious to the Taste. *Ouava's*, a Sort of Fishers, all red, of a beautiful Colour: Others smaller, of a most agreeable Mixture of the liveliest Colours, call'd *Ssiquida's*. There is also a very peculiar Bird, that has a large Beak, more beautiful than Tortois-shell, and a Feather instead of a Tongue: It is the *Toucan*, describ'd by *Froger*, and by *Father Feuillée*, p. 428. The common Game of the Inhabitants, is the Monkey, on which they feed for the most part: But the best of all for Ships that put in, is the Hunting of Beeves, whereof there are great Numbers on the Continent, near *Arazatiba*, as has been said before.

Seven Leagues to the Northward of the Island of *S. Katharine*, there is a Creek, where the *Portuguese* generally keep them, and whither the Boat of the *S. Clement* went for them. Near to it, is the Port of *Guarupa*, which the same Boat discover'd, shelter'd from all Winds, as may be seen by the Plan which was given me. It is hard to be known, because without, it only looks like a great Creek, at the End whereof, is the little Mouth of the Harbour. We not knowing where to find Beeves, and the *Portuguese*, who, as they said, had sent for them to *Lagoa*, staying too long, we sail'd, as has been said, on Sunday the

See Plate III.  
at the little  
Reference.

the 10th of April; but the Wind would not permit us to get out, so that we were oblig'd to come to an Anchor again, almost in the same Place where we were at first.

We succeeded no better the next Day, making several Trips between the Island and the Continent, still sounding, and found much the same Water. We view'd very near a little Creek on the Starboard-side coming in, where there is good Anchorage in five or six Fathom Water, under Shelter from all Winds, and a little River of good Water, commodious for Ships that anchor near the first little Island, which is on the Larboard coming in, in a sandy Creek of the Island of *S. Katharine*, call'd, on the Plan, *Islet aux Perroquets*, or, *The little Island of Parrots*. In tacking, we discover'd the great Creek of *Toujouqua*, into which a great River falls: The Mouth of the Creek seems narrow, and, on the South-side of it, there are flat Rocks. Not being able to get out of the Channel, we were oblig'd to come to an Anchor S. W. and by S. of the Island of *Gal*, about a League and half distant, and W. N. W. of the first Point of the Island of *S. Katharine*, at half a League Distance.

At length, on *Tuesday* the 12th, we got out, with a fresh Gale at North, and N. N. E. which came about to S. W. and grew calm. The Winds vary'd almost continually, till the Latitude of 40 Degrees, where the fresh North and N. E. brought on such a thick Fog, that we were oblig'd, even in the Day-time, to fire Guns every now and then, to keep the *Mary* near us. A Calm, interrupted by a small Gale at N. N. E. and S. E. succeeded; and the Fog fell again in 43 Degrees and a half.

In this Latitude, and that of *Cape Blanc*, being 46 Degrees, we saw abundance of Whales, and of new Birds like Pigeons, their Plumage mix'd white and black, very regularly; for which Reason our Sailors call them *Damiers*, that is, Chequers, or Draught-boards; and the *Spaniards*, *Pardela's*. They have long Beaks somewhat hook'd, and in the Middle of them two Holes for Nostrils; their Tails spread, look like Furbelo-Scarves of Second-mourning.  
Being

Departure  
from the  
Island of  
S. Katharine.

Departure  
from the  
Island of  
S. Katharine.

Departure  
from the  
Island of  
S. Katharine.

Departure  
from the  
Island of  
S. Katharine.

Damiers.

Error in the  
Chart.

Being always upon our Guard against the Currents; and the Errors in the Dutch Charts, which place Cape Blanc four Degrees more to the Westward than it really is, as has been observ'd by all the Ships that have put into *S. Katharine*; whence they have taken their Point, we began to sound at 43 Degrees, 30 Minutes Latitude, and according to my Computation, 32 Degrees, 33 Minutes Longitude, finding no Bottom; but in 46 Degrees, 50 Minutes Latitude, and 58 Degrees, 58 Minutes Longitude, we found 85 Fathom Water, the Bottom gray Sand mix'd with reddish Iron-ston'd we were then 50 Leagues from Cape Blanc, by a Manuscript Chart of *Grifon*, Master of Navigation of *S. Milo*; that is, 52 Degrees, 52 Minutes Longitude, from the Meridian of the Island *Fero* or *Hioro*; or 52 Degrees, 32 Minutes, from that of *Teneriff*; which agreed well enough with the Soundings of some Ships which had seen that Cape. Whence it may be concluded, that, without regard to its exact Longitude, it is wrong laid down with respect to that of *S. Katharine*. It has been effectually observ'd, that the Desert Coast, or of the *Putagon*, does not lie S. W. and S. W. and by W. as we see it in the Charts, but S. W. and by S. and S. S. W. which has brought many Ships into Danger. About 13 Leagues to the S. W. beyond our first Sounding, we found 75 Fathom Water; four Leagues farther on, still holding the same Course, we had 70, then 66, the Bottom still the same, as far as 49 Degrees and a half Latitude, where, in 75 Fathom, it was mix'd with Gravel, Owze, broken Shells, and little black and yellow Stones. In 50 Degrees, 20 Minutes, the Sand grows a little blackish, 60 and 65 Fathom Water, Still standing S. W. within some small Difference to the South, or West, in order insensibly to draw near the Coast at 52 Degrees, 30 Minutes Latitude, and 65 Degrees, 45 Minutes Longitude, the Sand was gray, mix'd with little black and reddish Stones, in 55 Fathom Water. The Night between the 5th and 6th of May, we lay by, for Fear of ranging too near the Land, and

and with good Reason; for the next Morning we found the Sea much chang'd, and about the Evening we discover'd a Low-land very plain, and five or six Hills like Islands, which bore W. S. W. nine or ten Leagues distant. Some took it for Cape *Virgins*, on the Credit of Journals, which place is in 52 Degrees, 30 Minutes; tho' it be more to the Northward in the Charts; but that Opinion did not answer our last Observation of Latitude. It is much more likely that it was the Cape of the *Holy Ghost* in *Tierra del Fuego*. We heav'd the Lead, and found 36 Fathom Water, the Bottom a black Sand, mix'd with little Stones of the same Colour. The next Day, being the 7th, we distinctly saw *Tierra del Fuego*, which we coasted along, at four or five Leagues Distance. It is indifferent high, craggy in Precipices along the Shore, and appears wooded in Tufts: Over that first Coast appear high Mountains, almost ever cover'd with Snow. The Bearing of that Coast of the Island *Fuego*, may be ascertain'd to N. W. and by N. and S. E. and by S. in respect of the World, from the Streight of *Magellan* to that of *le Maire*, correcting a Half Rumb, or 23 Degrees of Variation N. E.

Having traced *Tierra del Fuego* till within five or six Leagues of Streight *le Maire*, we lay by, about four Leagues out at Sea, during the Night, in order to pass it the next Day. We had there 40 Fathom Water, the Bottom large clean Sand, as in Roads. That Night we felt heavy Blasts at S. W. by Squalls, or Gusts, which brought us Snow and Sleet from the Mountains up the Country: However, we fell off but little, a certain Sign that the Current was not violent, or that it set towards the Wind, which is not very likely, by Reason of the opposite Bearing of the Coast.

Sunday the 8th of May, we sail'd for the Streight of *le Maire*, and easily knew it by three uniform Hills, call'd the *Three Brothers*, contiguous to one another, in *Tierra del Fuego*, over which, there appears an high Sugar-loaf Mountain

Arrival at  
the Head of  
*Tierra del  
Fuego.*

1747

Streight  
*le Maire*  
discover'd.

Mountain cover'd with Snow, lying farther up the Country.

Plate V.

About a League to the East of those Hills appears Cape S. Vincent, being a very low Land; then a second little Cape call'd Cape S. James; tho' I have Reason to believe, that Cape S. Vincent is much more to the North; and that the Cape to which they have given that Name, is Cape S. James, grounding this my Opinion on very ancient Spanish Manuscript Charts, perhaps taken from the Discovery of the *Nodales*.

When bearing N. N. W. and North from those little low Capes, as we drew near, we discover'd Streight le Maire (which they cover'd with *Staten-land*) opening by little and little, till at length, being three Quarters of a League East from the first of them, all the Opening appears. This Remark is necessary, to make sure of the Streight; because many Ships, and lastly, the *Incarnation* and the *Concord*, thought to have gone thro' there, tho' they were to the Eastward of *Staten-land*, and they only saw it on the West-side, being deceiv'd by the three Hills like the *Three Brothers*, and some Creeks like those of *Tierra del Fuego*.

The Tide of the Streight.

No sooner were we got to the Eastward of Cape S. Vincent, than we found a strong and rapid Tide, as it were in a Torrent, which made us pitch so violently, that the Bolt-sprit-Top-sail dipp'd in the Water; but having been inform'd of the Courie of the Tide, which is six Hours, or six and a half, we had taken the Time that it might favour us, and ranged along the Coast of *Tierra del Fuego*, within a League and a Quarter of it at farthest. We enter'd successfully with the Flood, which runs rapidly to the Southward, and divides itself into two Currents; one of which takes along the Streight, which is but six or seven Leagues wide; and the other sets along *Staten-land* to the Eastward.

About the Middle of the Streight is Port Maurice, a little Creek, about half a League wide, at the Bottom whereof,

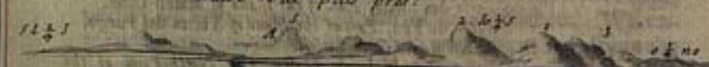
on





**PLAN**  
du  
**DETROIT DE MAIRE,**  
Situé à l'extrémité de l'Amérique mérid.  
entre les Terres de Feu et des Etats,  
par 55° 45' de lat. Australe.

Autre vue plus près



A. Montagnes en pain de sucre  
couvertes de neige avant dans  
la terre.

B. Trois Montagnes applan. les  
trois forces.

112 x lieues

Vue de reconnaissance du détroit de Maire.



Levé à la Boussole et par chemin le May 1772. Bouchard.



on the North-side, is a little River, wheré very good Water may be had, and easy Wooding.

Next to this, a Quarter of a League more to the Southward, is a Bay about a Quarter of a League wide, and much deeper, which some take for Port *Good-Success*, and others for *Valentine's Bay*; where there is Conveniency of Wood and Water, and even of a white and light Wood, whereof Top-masts might be made.

It is likely, that the Port of *Good-Success* ought to be the first Creek going out, after having turn'd Cape *Gonzales*, or of *Good-Success*. The Name itself seems to decide the Question that might be made, about the Situation of *Valentine's Bay* and this; because it was really good Success for the *Nodales*, who made the Discovery, that they had pass'd *Streight le Maire*, and found beyond it a good Bay, where they might anchor in Safety. Be it as it will with the Name, several Ships, and lastly, the *Queen of Spain*, commanded by *Brunet*, put in there on the 6th of *November*, 1712, and anchor'd at the Mouth, in ten Fathom Water, an éwzy Bottom: He water'd there in a little River

F on

Plate V. p. 33. explain'd in English.

*Streight le Maire*, At the Extremity of South America, between *Tierra del Fuego* and *Staten-Land*, in 55 Degrees, 45 Minutes of South-Latitude.

Echelle de cinque Lieues Marines, A Scale of five Sea-Leagues.

Route, The Ship's Way.

Cap *Gonzales*, ou de *Bon Succés*, Cape *Gonzales*, or of *Good-Success*.

Baye *Valentin*, *Valentine's Bay*.

Partie de l'Isle ou Terre des *Estats*, Part of the Island of *Staten-Land*.

Partie de l'Isle ou Terre du *Feu*, Part of the Island of *Tierra del Fuego*.

Baye de *Bon Succés*, The Bay of *Good Success*.

Nord de l'aimant declinant au N. E. de 24 deg. The North-Point of the

Compass inclining 24 Degrees Eastward.

Autre vue plus près, Another nearer View.

A, A Sugar-Loaf Hill up the Country.

1, 2, 3, Three Hills call'd the Three Brothers.

Vue de reconnaissance du detroit de *Maire*, The View or Prospect by which

is known *Streight le Maire*.

Levé à la Buffole & par estimation, 8 May, 1712, *Frezier*; Taken by the

Compass and by Estimation, May the 8th, 1712, *Frezier*.

on the Starboard-side within; it look'd a little reddish, but became clear and good. They also wooded there, and saw some Trees fit to make Top-masts. The Savages who came to see, did them no Harm: They are quite naked, tho' in a very cold Country. Some of them cover their Privities with the Skin of a Bird, and others their Backs with that of some Beast, as *Froger* represents those of *Magellan's* Streights: They are almost as white as the *Europeans*. The *S. John Baptist*, commanded by the *Sieur de Villemarin*, of *S. Malo*, reports the same of those they saw in Streight *le Maive*, in *May*, 1713. Being becalm'd in the Middle of the Streight, and the Tide having drove him very near the Land, two *Piragua's* of Savages from *Tierra del Fuego*, came aboard: They shew'd a strange Affection for any red Thing, and at the same Time an extraordinary Boldness; for the first of them that came up, spying a red Cap on the Head of an Officer, who came to receive him, snatch'd it off daringly, and put it on his Arm; another seeing the red Comb of the Fowl, tore it off to carry away; they would have taken away an Officer's red Breeches in the Boar: In short, they appear'd robust, better shaped than the *Indians* of *Chili*: The Women they had with them, handsomer, and all of them great Thieves. Their *Piragua's* were made of the Barks of Trees, sew'd together very artificially. They despis'd all that was offer'd them to eat, and shew'd great Dread of the Cannon, near which they made Grimaces like Men in a Fright; it is likely, because they had seen some Ships fire, that put in. In short, one of *Brunet's* Officers told me, that he having shot a Sea-Gull with his Picce, the Savages all fell down in a Fright.

About Noon, being to the Eastward of *Valentine's* Bay, the Tide turn'd against us, and we could not stem it with a good Gale at S. W. which afterwards grew boisterous, with such dreadful Squaws and Gusts, that they brought the Gunwale to, under two Courses reef'd; yet it was requisite to carry more Sail to turn *Cape S. Bartholomew*, which

which is the Southernmost of *Staten-Land*. We stood S. S. E. by the Compass, and yet our Course was scarce E. and by S. the violent Stream of Ebb carrying us away, as it sets along the South-Side of *Staten-Land*, and returns that Way into *Streight le Maire*. At length we turn'd that Cape, and at the Close of the Night it bore N. W. from us, about two Leagues distant; but the Weather growing tempestuous, we were oblig'd to lie by, under a Main-sail back'd and reef'd, in great Fear for our Lives, knowing we were so near Land, and to the Windward of it. Then the most Undaunted took up serious Thoughts; for it may be said, we only expected the Moment we should be drove on the Coast, in a dark Night, and dreadful Weather, without any Hope of being able to help ourselves. The Charts threatned inevitable Shipwreck; but, to our Happiness, *Staten-Land* on the South-Side, does not bear E. S. E. and W. N. W. as laid down in the Charts, but lies E. and W. in respect to the Globe, and inclines a little to the North, near *Cape S. Bartholomew*, as we had observ'd before Night. In short, lying by, we must have fallen off E. and by S. in respect of the Globe, and accordingly should have inevitably perish'd.

To this might be answer'd, that the same Current which carry'd us along the Coast of *Staten-Land*, might hinder our driving so much to N. E. as we should otherwise have done, because it must run as the Coast does, near the Land, and keep us at the same Distance. This Opinion would be probable, if other Ships had not better than we, observ'd the Position we speak of. Besides, it is evident that we drove very much to the East; for about Nine in the Morning, the Weather clearing up a little, we saw no more Land, tho' we could not be above two Leagues South, or S. E. from it at most, if it extends 13 or 14 Leagues from the *Streight*, as those who have coasted it, assure us.

Whilst we were beginning to cheer up and rejoyce for having escap'd being wreck'd, we were under much Uneasiness

Accident be-  
fallen the  
Mary.

casiness for the *Mary*, which we had left, at the Close of the Night, to the Leeward of us; and fallen off within about a League of the Coast; but our Joy was complete, when we spy'd her again the next Morning. She had suffer'd by the foul Weather; her Whipstaff had been broke, and her Beak-head shatter'd. A Calm succeeding, after that horrid Tempest, we had the Opportunity of sending Carpenters aboard her, to put her into a Condition to endure the Beating of the Sea, of which she had, till then, felt but a small Trial.

The Wind afterwards coming from N. N. W. to N. N. E. North about, a fresh Gale, we, in 24 Hours, recover'd Part of the Way we had lost lying by. From 43 Degrees and a half, to 57, we had had no Easterly Winds, and scarce any fair Days, but changeable and foggy Days, the Winds still ranging from North to South, West about, blowing fresh, excepting from 46 Degrees to 50, where we had two Days of gentle Wind. This Blast at N. N. E. was the more agreeable to us, because we did not expect any from thence; and it carry'd us from a Place where we had been in great Danger.

That good Wind started to S. E. in a violent manner, and oblig'd us to lie by some Hours; but it fell a little, and we took the Advantage of it for 24 Hours, well enough satisfy'd to endure the vehement Cold it brought, and the Tossing of a dreadful Sea, which still carry'd us on in our Course. It soon came back to South, and S. S. W. so violent, that we could scarce carry our two Courses reef'd.

May the 14th, being in 58 Degrees, 5 Minutes Latitude, and 64, or 61 of Longitude, we lost Sight of the *Mary*. We fancy'd she had tack'd to stand Westward; we tack'd an Hour after, in Quest of her, but in vain: We saw her no more till we came to *La Conception*.

The 17th, the Wind being at S. W. we stood, during the Night, S. E. and by S. for fear of falling in upon *Barnevelt's* Islands, which some Manuscript Charts place

in 57 Degrees Latitude, because the Fog, the high Wind, and the rolling Sea, would not have permitted us to recover it, if we had fallen to the Leeward: 24 Hours after, the Wind came more to the Southward, and we bore away N. W.

We reckon'd ourselves in 57 Degrees and a half Latitude, and 69, or 66 of Longitude, when the Wind blowing hard, and the Weather being foggy, about half an Hour after One in the Morning, the Starboard Watch saw a Meteor unknown to the oldest Sailors aboard; being a Light differing from that of the Ancients, call'd *Castor* and *Pollux*, and from Lightning; which lasted about half a Minute, and gave some little Heat. That unusual Appearance in the cold Weather, and a high Wind, scared most of the Men, who shut their Eyes; and they speak of it only as a Flash of Lightning, the Brightness whereof appear'd even thro' the Eye-lids; the others, who were more bold, affirm'd they had seen a Ball or Globe of a bluish Light, and very bright, about three Foot Diameter, which vanish'd among the Main-Top-Mast Stays.

All the Men look'd upon it to presage a Storm: I did not like that Prophecy, the Weather was bad enough to fear worse; for, besides that, it was cold, and the Sea ran Mountain-high: We had Wind a-head, which oblig'd us to tack every Moment, without gaining any thing in Longitude. However, the three next Days did not prove worse: The 4th, we lay by some Hours reef'd; but the Wind, which had vary'd from West to S. S. W. being come about to N. W. the Weather grew mild and clear'd up a little. The 23d and 24th, we got out of 59 Degrees, 58 Minutes Latitude, where we had stuck a long Time. The 25th, we were oblig'd to lie by some Hours, and the 26th were becalm'd.

I began then to flatter myself with the Hopes, that we should soon be out of those dreadful Parts, because we reckon'd we were pass'd the Longitude of Cape Horn nine or ten Degrees, that is, near 200 Leagues, when there

there came up such a violent Wind at N. W. and W. N. W. and such a dreadful Sea, that we were obliged to strike our Mizzen-Yard and Top-Mast to the very utmost. Being disgusted and tired with such a long Voyage, it griev'd me to the Heart that I had expos'd myself to such Hardships, being not only sensible of the present Evils, but in Fear for what was to come; if, as had hapned to several other Ships, we should be obliged to return and winter in the River of Plate, dreadful for its bad Anchorage, the Gusts of Wind, the Sand-Banks, and the Shipwrecks some of our Officers had been in. I compared the easy Life of the most wretched Persons ashore, with that of a Man of some Consideration aboard a Ship in a Storm; the fine Weather we had in Europe about the 27th of May, with those dark Days, which were not above six Hours long, and afforded us no more Light than a fine Moonshine-Night; the Beauty of the Fields adorn'd with Flowers, with the Horror of the Waves that swell'd up like Mountains; the sweet Repose a Man enjoys on a green Turf, with the Agitation and perpetual Shocks of so violent a Rolling, that unless a Man grasped something that was well made fast, there was no standing, sitting or lying; which had held us for near a Month, without Intermision: All this, added to the Remembrance of the terrible Night at Streight *le Maire*, did so dispirit me, that I was overcome with Grief, and then bethought myself of the Complaints of *Europa*, *Horace*, L. 3. Ode 27. & Sat. 6. L. 2.

— *Melinusne fluctus*

*Ire per longos fuit, an recentes*

*Carpere flores?*

O *Rus!* quando ego te aspiciam? quandoque licebit  
Nunc veterum libris, nunc somno, & inertibus horis  
Ducere sollicita jucunda oblecta vita?

It was our good Fortune that the Storm lasted but 24 Hours; after which, a N. W. Wind coming up by the West,

West, and then a South to E. S. E. a fresh Gale, which is rare in those Parts, we got into 51 Degrees Latitude, and 84, or 82 of Longitude, according to our Computation; so that we could make Use of the S. W. and S. S. W. Winds, which are there most frequent. Three fair Days gave us Leisure to breathe after so much Trouble. The last of them, being the 2d of *June*, we saw, at our Larboard Watch, at Two of the Clock in the Morning, a Light run from our Mizzen-Pendant to the Main-Stay, where it vanish'd in a Moment.

The next Day, the Wind, which had shifted about from S. E. to N. E. by the South and West, after having blown violently at E. N. E. quite statted there to a Calm, the Sea running very high, and then for three Days more took a different Turn, from North to South by the East, sometimes a fresh Gale, and sometimes a gentle Blast, and ceas'd at S. and by W. in about 45 Degrees Latitude, in a Calm, the Sea very rough. In fine, after having for two Days bore up against a strong Surge of the Sea coming from the North, by the Help of the East and South Winds, we came into 40 Degrees, 40 Minutes Latitude, where we were much surpriz'd to see Land 50 Leagues sooner than we expected, according to the Manuscript Chart of S. *Malo*, which we had found better than the *Dutch*, as far as *Streight le Maire*. In short, having found that *Pieter Goo* thrust back the Coast of the *Patagons* 60 Leagues too far Westward, in respect to *Brazil*, we had laid it aside; yet, according to his Longitude, we here came upon the Land very exactly with our Ship.

The Manuscript Charts I have here spoken of, have been corrected on the Side of Cape *Blanc*, and of *Streight le Maire*, by the Journals of the S. *Malo* Ships, that have sail'd into the *South-Sea*; all which agree well enough about the Longitude of them both. I know not whether this general Agreement may form a certain Opinion, for there are visible Currents all along the Coast. From 32 to 35 Degrees Latitude, we advanc'd a little less than our

Com-

Computation: That might be occasion'd by an Error in the Log; but, on the other hand, from 37 to 41, we advanced more to the Southward by six or seven Leagues in 50; and three Days after, 16 Leagues and a half in a Computation of 70, that is, about a Quarter, afterwards diminishing; so that in about 49 Degrees, 50 Minutes, the Observations agreed very well with the Computation to Streight *le Maire*, which I found in the Longitude of 61 Degrees, 35 Minutes, answering to the 318 Degrees, 25 Minutes from the Island of *Hierro*, or *Ferro*, or 316 Degrees, 40 Minutes from the Meridian of *Teneriff*. From thence, I question whether the Charts could be corrected with good Reason, as to the Longitude of Cape *Horn* and the Coast of *Chili*; for the Ships that have ranged the same, assure us, they found Currents that drove them to the Eastward, at the same Time that they reckoned they had gain'd Ground to the Westward. Hence proceeds that Difference among the Sea-Charts, which allow 100 Leagues from the Streight to Cape *Horn*; whereas those that are Manuscript, allow only 40 or 50. This is very certain, that it is but in 55 Degrees, 50 Minutes Latitude, or 56 Degrees at the utmost; tho' in all the printed Sea-Charts it is laid down in 57 and a half, or 58 Degrees. As to the Distance between that Cape and the Coast of *Chili*, it is still less known, because few Ships have ranged the Coast of *Tierra del Fuego* on that Side. Prudence will not permit any to expose themselves to it, because the Winds generally come up from S. S. W. to West, so strong, that they might force them on the Coast. However, there is a Channel by which they might escape into the Streight of *Magellan*. That Channel was accidentally discover'd on the 25th of May, 1713, by the Tartane *S. Barbe*, as shall be said in another Place.

According to the Astronomical Observation of Father *Feuillee*, who places *La Conception* in 75 Degrees, 32 Minutes, 30 Seconds Longitude, that is, 25 Leagues more Westerly than the Manuscript corrected Charts, supposing that of Streight



Streight le Maire, as I have mention'd it before, and 35 Leagues farther East than those of *Pieter Goos*, our Error was but of about 30 Leagues. It is certain, as has been said, that the Night we came out of that Streight, we fell off considerably to the Eastward, not only because the next Day we had no Sight of Land, but also because we found ourselves eight Minutes more to the North, upon a Computation of ten or twelve Leagues. Two Days after, in about 57 Degrees, 26 Minutes Latitude, we, on the other hand, found ourselves 22 Minutes more South, upon a Run of 70 Leagues. Afterwards, we were not sensible of the Currents for a long Time; for, after having been seven Days without an Observation, almost continually in foul Weather, tacking, lying-by, and running 80 greater Leagues in Longitude, we in 59 Degrees, 20 Minutes, found no Difference; and scarce any, three Days after, in 55 Degrees, 40 Minutes: But not having seen the Sun in eight Days, we found ourselves 27 Minutes more to the Southward than our Computation. This was in 53 Degrees, 6 Minutes Latitude, and perhaps 84, or 82 of Longitude.

According to this Error and the former, there seems to be Reason to conjecture, that there are two formal Currents, the one along the South-Sea, and the other along the North-Sea. This last must set from S. *Katharine* to *Tierra del Fuego*, S. S. W. and from the Streight S. E. and E. S. E. being determin'd to that Coast by the Coast of the *Patagoni*, afterwards by the new Land of *Sibald's* Islands, and that of *Tierra del Fuego* and *Staten-Land*. That in the South-Sea must pretty near follow the Bearing of the Land, from *Cape Pillars* to *Cape Horn*, and from thence turn off East and E. N. E. along *Barnevelt's* Islands and *Staten-Land*, as Experience has shew'd us. It also follows, that there must be some little Current drawn by that of the Land's End, in the South Part of *Chili*, which likewise is agreeable to Experience; for when we made Land, we were still 20 Minutes South of our Computation.

In fine, I do not pretend to determine the particular Setting of the Currents: They are not always of an equal Force, and near Land; some particular Cause may alter them, as is easy to comprehend. What I can affirm, is, that near *Cape Horn* they must set towards the N. E. for our *Mary* found herself upon the Island of *Diego Ramirez*, not only when she reckoned herself 40 Leagues from it, according to *Pieter Goos*, where it is thrust back 30 Leagues to the Westward farther than where the Manuscript Charts place it; but even when she reckoned herself two Degrees more to the South, tho' perhaps she was mistaken, and took the *Barnevelt's* for *Diego Ramirez*.

Advice for  
turning of  
Cape Horn.

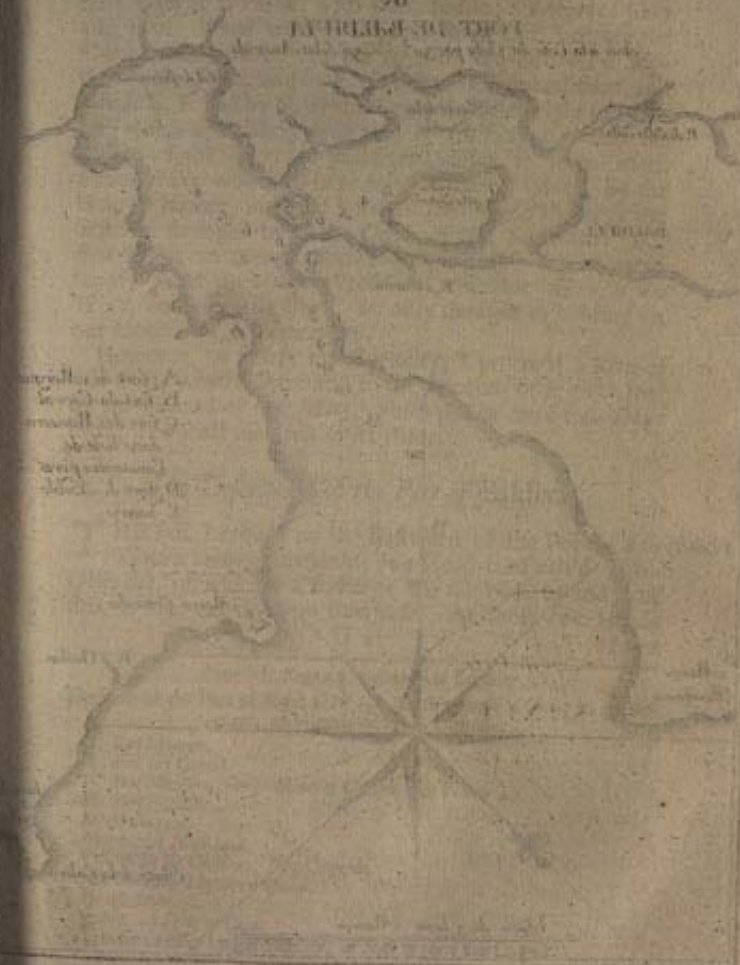
Thus every Ship, which, coming from the East, designs to turn *Cape Horn*, is always to take one Half more than he thinks he has occasion for, of the South and West, either in regard that the Winds are always Westerly, or to be provided against the Currents that may set it back, as has actually happen'd to several Ships, which have found themselves upon the Land, when they thought they had weather'd the Cape, and were 40 or 50 Leagues out at Sea; whence, doubtless, has proceeded the Error in the *Dutch* Charts, which lay down too much Distance by the one Half between *Streight le Maire* and *Cape Horn*.

Be that as it will, we were very fortunate in that the Land was not cover'd with a Fog, and the West Wind strong; for at Break of Day, as we were standing North by the Compass, that is, N. and by E. according to the Globe, we were going to run upon a Point, which bore from us N. and by E. three or four Leagues distant, which we took for that of *Vallena*, because we had another to the East, which might be that of *S. Marcellus*. At length, we observ'd three or four little Islands a-stern of us, bearing S. S. E. which in all Probability were those of the Entrance of *Chili*, which the *Spaniards* call *Farellones de Carelmapo*, by which we had pass'd within half Cannon-Shot in the Night, and it was very dark. Being surprized to find ourselves so near Land, we immediately stood about with a  
fresh

1750

1750

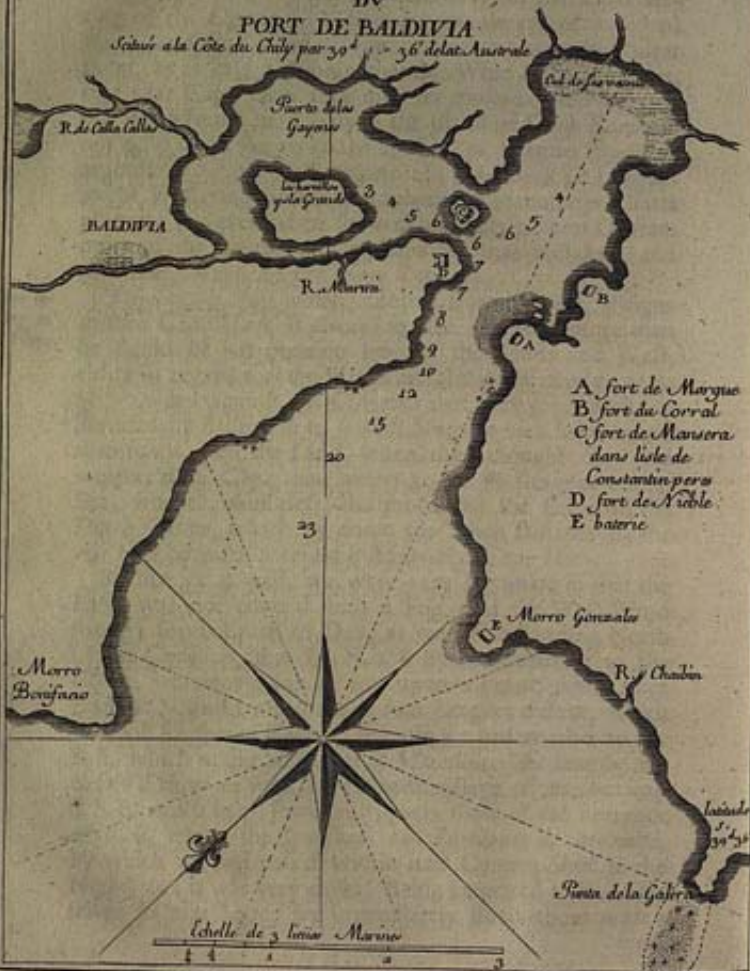
# PORT DE BARRIAT



Carte de  
la Baie de  
Barriat  
par  
M. de la Roche  
1750

PORT DE BALDIVIA

Situé a la Côte du Chili par  $30^{\circ}$  -  $36^{\circ}$  de lat. Australe



fresh Gale at W. S. W. with some sudden Showers of Rain and Hail: Thus we by Degrees stood out, because the Coast runs N. N. E. In the Evening we discover'd another Point at S. E. and by E. nine or ten Leagues distant, and one at N. E. and by N. by the Compass, about eight Leagues off, which it is likely was that of *La Galera*, where the Mouth of the River of *Baldivia* begins to form itself. I could have wish'd to have seen that Port, which, by the Help of Nature, and the Fortifications made there, is the best and strongest in all the Coast of the *South-Sea*: But that being no commodious Place for Ships that want to supply themselves with Provisions, because there is no Wine, and but little Corn, we only thought of holding on our Course for *La Concepcion*.

However, to satisfy my Curiosity, I procur'd a Plan of that Port, which I here add to the Account of it given me, by the Officers of our *Mary*, which put in there two Days after, as I shall mention in its Place.

*The Description of the Port of Baldivia.*

THREE Leagues to the Eastward of the Point *de la Plate VI*  
*Galera* above-mention'd, is a Head-land call'd *Morro*  
*Gonzales*, on which is a Battery: To the N. E. by and E. of  
this, is that call'd *Morro Bonifacio*. At those two Heads  
G 2 begins

*Plate VI. Page 43. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the Port of *BALDIVIA*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 39 Degrees, 36 Minutes of South Latitude.

- A. *Feri Margue.*
- B. *Feri del Corral.*
- C. *Feri Mansera, in the Island of Constantine Perez.*
- D. *Feri Niebla.*
- E. *A Battery.*
- Morro, *A Head-land.*
- Puerto de las Gayenes, *Port Gayenes.*
- Isla Grande, *The Great Island.*
- R. *A River.*
- Punta, *A Point or Cape.*
- Echelle de trois Lieues Marines, *A Scale of three Sea-Leagues.*

begins the Mouth of the River of *Baldriva*, which may be about four Leagues wide in that Place; but the two Coasts drawing together towards the S. S. E. form only a Gullet about half a League wide, the Entrance whereof is defended by four Forts, two on each Side; and more particularly by the first on the Larboard-Side, call'd *Fuerte de Niebla*, close under which, Ships must pass, to avoid the Sand-Banks, which reach out to the third Part of the Channel from the Foot of Fort *Marga*, being that on the Starboard-Side. If it be design'd then to come to an Anchor in the Port of *Corral*, they must come rounding towards the Starboard up to the Fort of the same Name, to anchor in four Fathom Water. If they will go up to the Town, that is, to the nearest Part of it, they must also pass by Fort *Niebla*, and that of *Mansera*, which is on the Island of *Constantine Perez*, ranging along the South-Side of a great Island, behind which, within the Continent, is a Port so commodious, that they there land Goods on a Bridge, or Key, without the Help of Boats.

From the Port of *Corral*, Boats have a shorter Way by half, along the Channel form'd by that great Island and the Land on the Starboard-Side. Ships do not pass that Way, for Fear of the Sands there in the Middle of it. Wheresoever a Ship anchors, it is safe against all Winds, because the Anchorage is good, the Bottom being a hard Owze, and there is no Sea, unless near the Port of *Corral* when the North-Wind blows. There is commodious Watering every where, and abundance of Wood, not only for Fuel, but also Timber to build Ships. The Soil there, when till'd, is extraordinary fertile for Grain and Pulse: Grapes indeed do not ripen, but the Want of Wine may be supply'd with Cyder, as in some Provinces of *France*; for there is such a Multitude of Apple-Trees, that there are little Woods of them.

The Advantageousness of that Port, has prevail'd with the *Spaniards* to erect several Forts to defend the Entrance against Strangers, because they look upon it as the Key of the

the *South-Sea*. In short, the *Dutch* would have settled there, to secure a Resting-Place, in order to facilitate their entering the *South-Sea*. In 1643, they made themselves Masters of it; but Want, Diseases, and more particularly the Death of their General, having weaken'd them, they were oblig'd to withdraw themselves, and abandon their Baggage and 30 Pieces of Cannon, upon Advice of the Succours sent against them by the Marquis de *Mansera*, Viceroy of *Peru*.

At this Time there are above 100 Pieces of Cannon, *Artillery*, crossing one another, at the Entrance: Fort *Mansera* has 40, that of *Niebla* 30, that of *Marga* 20, and that of *Corral* 18, most of them Bras.

That this Port may not want Men, the Whites of *Peru* *Garrison* and *Chili*, condemn'd to Banishment for any Crime, are sent thither; so that it is in the Nature of a Galley. There they are employ'd about the Fortifications, and other Uses of the Garrison, which is composed of none but such People, who are made Soldiers and Officers even during the Time of their Punishment. The Viceroy is to send 300000 Crowns a Year, to keep up the Fortifications and maintain the Garrison. That Supply is call'd *Real Situado*, in which are included the Provisions, and Stuffs to cloathe them. Tho' that Sum be not exactly furnish'd, the President of *Chili* never fails to send a good Supply every Year; of which the Governors make so considerable an Advantage, that this Post is the most sought after of any, on Account of the Revenue; tho' it ought to be disagreeable, by reason of the ill Company there is in it, and very tiresome during six Months of continual Rain every Winter.

The Town has also been re-peopled by banish'd Persons, and bears the Name of its Founder *Peter Baldivia*, after the *Indians* had ruin'd the first, built there. It is at present reckoned to contain 2000 Souls; is enclos'd with Walls to the Land, and defended by 12 Pieces of Cannon, which are 16 Pounders. It has one Parish-Church, and a House  
of

of the *Jesuites*. The first Foundation was in the Year 1552, in a Plain, about four or five Fathom above the Surface of the Sea. Hard by, was a Fort to keep the *Indians* in Awe; but those People, tired with the tyrannical Government of the *Spaniards*, who made them work in the Gold Mines, which are there very plentiful, exacting of them the Value of 25 or 30 Crowns a Day for every Man, at length shook off that heavy Yoke, kill'd *Baldivia*, according to *Ovalle*, with a Club; and, according to the Tradition of the Country, cast melted Gold into his Mouth, saying, *Gorge yourself with that GOLD you so much thirsted after*. After which, they razed the Fort, and plunder'd the Town.

It is now rebuilt a little higher up the Land, on the Bank of the River.

Seven Leagues from thence, to the N. N. E. a Fort has been erected on an Eminence, call'd *las Cruces*, or, *The Croffer*, in which there are two Pieces of Cannon, carrying Six-Pound Ball, and a Garrison of 20 Men, to prevent Excursions from the remoter *Indians*, who are not subdued. But enough has been said of a Place which I know only by Information from others: Let us return to our Voyage.

Lest the Winds should drive us down upon the Coast of *Baldivia*, we always endeavour'd to stand out, and with good Reason; for the Wind did come to W. S. W. and N. N. W. blowing so hard, that we could carry none but Main-Sail and Fore-Sail. A calm Interval brought it on again with more Violence at N. W. so that we were oblig'd to lie by: Then it came about to W. N. W. a fresh Gale, with some Squawls, and Flashes of Lightning.

The 15th of *June*, the Wind vary'd from W. S. W. to South, a small Gale, and calm.

The 16th, we discover'd Land at East, about 12 Leagues distant. Some Hours after, we knew the Island of *S. Mary*, which is low, and almost plain. It is about three Quarters of a League in Length, from North to South.

*S. Mary  
Island.*



DE LA CONCEPTION

du Fort de la Conception  
de la Ville de la Conception

Carte de la Ville de la Conception





PLAN  
DE LA BAYE  
DE LA CONCEPTION

Située à la Côte du Chili par 36.° 43' de lat.° Australe.

Echelle d'une lieue Marine 2853 toises.

To the S. W. of it, is a little Island, and at W. N. W. a Rock, which is seen at a Distance. On the N. E. Side of it is said to be a dangerous Bank, and another to the N. W. which stretches out near half a League; therefore few think fit to make use of the Anchoring-Places which are to the North and South of a Point it has next the Land, as also because there is but little Water.

When we had pass'd by *S. Mary*, it was not long before we descri'd those the Spaniards call *Tetas de Biobio*, that is, *The Dugs of Biobio*, which are ten Leagues distant to the N. E. They are two contiguous Mountains, almost uniformly high and round like Dugs; so discernible, that it is impossible to be mistaken in them. Night coming upon us, we lay by at about four Leagues Distance W. S. W. from thence, and the next Morning found ourselves exactly in the same Place; by which we perceiv'd that there was neither Current nor Tide.

At Noon we had an Observation W. by S. from the *Dugs*, and found 36 Degrees, 45 Minutes Latitude, which is the exact Position, with respect to 11 Degrees Variation N. E. Thus they appear at East; these are of that Sort of Sights of Land as vary little, tho' seen from several Points of the Compass.

Being

*Plate VII. Page 47. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the Bay of *La CONCEPTION*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 36 Degrees, 43 Minutes of South Latitude.

Echelle d'une Lieue Marine, 2853 Toises, *A Scale of a Sea-League, being 2853 Fathoms.*

Ruisseau qui traverse la Ville, *A Rivolet that runs thro' the Town.*

Nord de l'aimant declinant de 10 D. au N.E. *The North Point of the Compass, inclining 10 Degrees to the N. E.*

Nord du monde, *The due North.*

Mamelles de Biobio, *Two Mountains call'd the Dugs of Biobio.*

Vue de reconnoissance de la Conception, *How the Land appears upon making La Conception.*

Alto de Talcahuana, *The High Land of Talcahuana.*

Puerto de S. Vicente, *Port S. Vincent.*

Tetas de Biobio, *The Dugs of Biobio, as above.*

*A Voyage, &c.*

Being assured of the Place where we were, by such certain Tokens, we made for the Port of *La Concepcion*, distinguishable by the Island of *Quiriquina*, two Leagues North of the *Dugs*. That Island is somewhat lower than the Continent, with which it forms two Passages: That to the W. S. W. is not very good for large Ships, tho' passable in Case of Necessity; but unless well known, it is dangerous venturing along a Ridge of Rocks, which advances far towards the Middle of it.

The N. E. Passage, being half a League wide, and clear of any Danger, we enter'd the Bay at Night, and very opportunely; for the N. W. Wind shifting to E. N. E. would have hinder'd us turning the Island half an Hour later. We anchor'd in 15 Fathom Water, the Bottom soft black Owze, South of the Point call'd *Herradura*, on the Continent, and S. E. and by S. of that of *Quiriquina*, which, with that above-named, forms the Entrance.



PART

PART II.

Containing the Voyage along the Coasts  
of Chili and Peru.



THE next Morning, being the 18th of June, after having sent the Yawl to see whether any Ships were at Anchor at *Talcaguana*, a thick Fog obstructing our Sight, we weigh'd, to go up thither; saluted the Town with seven Guns, and, according to Custom, it return'd us none.

However, we proceeded, carrying little Sail, and sounding all the Way, towards our Yawl; which, after having view'd the Ships at Anchor, had posted herself with a Signal to shew she was a Friend, and brought us into bad Anchorage. It surpriz'd us very much to find only three Fathom Water, and then somewhat less; but at length, the Water deepening, we moor'd North and South, in four Fathom and a half Water; the Bottom owzy as before, two little Points of the Peninsula of *Talcaguana* bearing N. and by W. from us, upon a Line from each other, and the Creek of the *Three Maids* N. W.

To the Southward of us lay two French Ships, which had put in, in order to go and trade along the Coast: One of them was of *Marseilles*, call'd the *Mary-Anne*, commanded by the *Sieur Pisson*, of *Villafranca*, in the County of *Nice*; and the other call'd the *Concord*, commanded by the *Sieur Pradet Daniel*, of *S. Malo*, detach'd from *Mon-sieur du Guay's* Squadron, who had sent him laden with Booty from *Rio de Janeiro*.

H

Whilst

*A Shoal in  
the Bay of La  
Conception.*

Whilst we were taken up enquiring for News, and all rejoicing to be in a Port, after so long a Voyage, the Sea, which the North Wind had swollen very high, fell off to such a Degree, that our Keel touch'd a-sterne: Then we perceiv'd that we were upon the Tail of a Shoal which appear'd to the N. N. E. about a Cable's Length distant. We immediately fell to tow off to the Southward: The common Concern made all Men work with Vigour; and having at length found five Fathom Water under the Ship, we moor'd N. N. E. and S. S. W. with much Trouble; for, besides the holding of the Anchors sunk in the Owze, which could not be weigh'd without much Labour, we had the Inconveniency of a vast heavy Rain.

*The Description of the Bay of La Conception.*

BY the Relation of this Accident it appears, that there are Marks to be observ'd for coming to an Anchor in the Bay of *La Conception*, tho' it be beautiful, and two Leagues wide from East to West, by three from North to South. There are but two good Anchoring-Places in Winter, to be under Shelter from the North Winds, which are violent, and much to be apprehended during five Months in the Year. The one of them is at the South Point of *Quitiquina*, in ten or twelve Fathom Water, a Cable's Length from the Shore: This, tho' very good, and shelter'd from those Winds, is not much frequented, because too remote from the Town and from the Continent.

The other is at the Bottom of the Bay, near the Village of *Tuloaguana*, in five or six Fathom Water, the Bottom soft black Owze. To come to this, Care must be taken to avoid the Tail of the Shoal I have just spoken of, which stretches out a Quarter of a League E. S. E. from what appears at Low-Water, where there are but three Fathom. To shun it, a Ship drawing near the Land on the Starboard-Side, is to keep a little low uneven Cape at the End of the

Bay,

*Marks to a-  
void the  
Shoal.*

Bay, open with a little Hill of the same Height, lying somewhat higher up the Land, that is, the Cape of *Espino de Talcaguana*, with the Western Part of the little Hill of *Espinoza*: And if, at the same Time, the South Point of *Quiriquina* be kept in a Line with the West Part of the Island, you are exactly at the End of the Tails; then you draw near to the Houses of *Talcaguana*, till having closed *Quiriquina* by the Point *de la Herradura*, you may then come to an Anchor under Shelter from the North Wind. Care is also to be taken not to come too near *Talcaguana*, for Fear of a Shoal which is within a Cable's Length of the Shore. This is the only Place of Safety whilst the North Winds prevail; but in Summer you may anchor before the Town, N. W. from the Castle; or, which is the same Thing, S. E. from the South Point of *Quiriquina*, closing it with the outward Cape of *Talcaguana*; or before *Inquin*, a good Quarter of a League from the Shore, for Fear of the Rocks. There is every where Conveniency for Wooding and Watering, and even for Building of Ships. In Summer Boats go easily a-shore; in Winter the Case is quite alter'd.

The next Day after our Arrival, the second Captain was sent to compliment the *Oidor*, or Judge, and ask Leave to buy such Provisions as we had Occasion for, which was immediately granted; so that two Days after we fix'd a Store-House in the Town, and put a-shore at *Talcaguana* five or six Sailors sick of the Scurvy, who recover'd in a few Days. Thus, in our Passage, which lasted five Months to a Day, we lost not one Man, and had but few sick. It is true, it was time to put in, for several Men declin'd, and we wanted Fewel; but we soon found where-with to supply all our Wants. *La Concepcion* is most certainly the best Place of all the Coast to put in, for all that a Ship can want, and for the Quality of the Provisions we had there: And tho' the Town be in Reality no other than a good Village, there is agreeable Company enough to di-

H  
 The next day after our arrival, the second captain was sent to compliment the oidor, or judge, and ask leave to buy such provisions as we had occasion for, which was immediately granted; so that two days after we fixed a store-house in the town, and put ashore at talcaguana five or six sailors sick of the scurvy, who recovered in a few days. Thus, in our passage, which lasted five months to a day, we lost not one man, and had but few sick. It is true, it was time to put in, for several men declined, and we wanted fuel; but we soon found wherewith to supply all our wants. La concepcion is most certainly the best place of all the coast to put in, for all that a ship can want, and for the quality of the provisions we had there: and tho' the town be in reality no other than a good village, there is agreeable company enough to di-

vert the Irksomness of a Ship, in being continually with the same Persons.)

*The Description of the Town of Penco, or La Conception.*

*Its Situation.* **T**HE City of *La Conception*, otherwise call'd *Penco*, from the *Indian* Name of the Place, (*Pen* signifying to find, and *co* Water) is seated on the Coast of *Chili*, on the Edge of the Sea, at the Bottom of a Road of the same Name. On the East Side of it, in 36 Degrees, 42 Minutes, 53 Seconds of South Latitude, and perhaps in 75 Degrees, 32 Minutes, 30 Seconds of Longitude West, or distant from the Meridian of *Paris*, according to *Father Feuillée's* Observation.

It

*Plate VIII. Pag. 52. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the Town of *La CONCEPTION*, or *PENCO*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 36 Deg. 45 Min. of South Latitude. *Frezier, 1712.*

*Vue de Penco, a Prospect of the Town of Penco.*

*Churches.*

1. *The Cathedral.*
2. *The Jesuits.*
3. *San Juan de Dios, Or, S. John of God.*
4. *S. Dominick.*
5. *S. Francis.*
6. *S. Augustin.*
7. *The Mercenariants.*
8. *The Hermitage.*

*Places of Note.*

- A. *The Square, or Market-Place.*
  - B. *The Council-House.*
  - C. *The Palace.*
  - D. *The Corps du Garde.*
  - E. *The Fort and Battery.*
- Basse de Chaloupes, The Shoal of Boats.*  
*Echelle de 500 Toises, A Scale of 500 Fathoms.*





Renvoy

Eglise

- 1 La Cathedrale
  - 2 Les jésuites
  - 3 Jean de Dieu
  - 4 St. Dominique
  - 5 St. François
  - 6 St. Augustin
  - 7 La Mercy
  - 8 Hermitage
  - 9 Casa Real
- A La place  
B Le Cavallo  
C Palais  
D Corps de garde  
E Le fort, batterie

PENCO  
DE LA VILLE  
DE  
LAGONCEPTION  
OU  
PENCO

Située à la Côte du Chili par  
36.45' de latitude Australe  
Janvier 1772



The History of the

War of the

Seven Years

in North America

From 1754 to 1763

By

John

Barrow

Esq.

London

Printed and Sold by

W. Bland

in the Strand

1764

It was founded in the Year 1550, by Peter *Baldévia*, Founder. the Conqueror of *Chili*, after he had subdued the neighbouring *Indians*. He there erected a Fort, to secure a Retreat against them; but that General being kill'd, as has been said above, *Lautaro*, Chief of the *Indians*, made himself Master of it, and afterwards *Caupolican* utterly destroy'd it. A Supply sent from *Santiago*, scutled the *Spaniards* there again; but *Lautaro* expell'd them a second Time: At last, the Viceroy of *Peru* having appointed his Son *Don Garcia Hurtado de Mendoza*, Governor of *Chili*, in the room of *Baldévia*, sent him by Sea with Recruits of Men. He, under Colour of coming to conclude a Peace, possess'd himself, without any Trouble, of the Island of *Quiriquina*, whence he sent Men to build a Fort, on the Top of the Hills of *La Conception*, into which he put eight Pieces of Cannon.

At this Time there are no Remains of any Fort: The Town is open on all Sides, and commanded by five Eminences, among which, that of the Hermitage advances almost to the Middle, and overlooks it all. There is no other Defence but one low Battery, on the Edge of the Sea, which only commands the Anchoring Place before the Town, which is a good Quarter of a League from it, to the N. W. But besides that, it is not large, being only 35 Fathom in Length, and five in Breadth. It is in a bad Condition, one Half of it without any Platform, and but indifferently built with Rubbish. *Fortifications.*

The Cannon are in no better Condition: There are nine of Brals, of irregular Bore, from 17 to 23 Pound Ball, that is, from 18 to 24 *Spanish*, whereof there are four mounted on scurvy Carriages. The greatest Pieces are 13 Foot and a Half long, 7 Foot and a Half from the Muzzle to the Trunnions, and 5 Foot 9 Inches from the Trunnions to the Ball: All the Touch-holes of these Guns are so wide, that they have been fain to fill them up with Iron. They were cast at *Lima*, in the Years 1618 and 1621. *Artillery.*

At the Entrance into the Court of the House or Palace of the *Oidor*, or Judge, who commonly supplies the Place of a Governor, they have mounted two Four-Pounders near the *Corps de Garde*, which makes the Left-Wing of the Court. This Want of Fortifications is not made good by Men and able Officers.

*Military Governm.* The *Maestre de Campo*, or Colonel, is a general Officer for all Martial Affairs without the Town. He is commonly one of the Inhabitants, who has no Experience, whom the President of *Chili* appoints for three Years: Under him is a Lieutenant-General to the President, a Major, and Captains. The Troops he commands are not numerous; reckoning only the Whites, they cannot make a Body of above 2000 Men, ill arm'd, both of the Town and Country about it; whereof there are two Companies of Foot, the rest being all Horse. They were all in the King's Pay, who allow'd for maintaining of 3500 Men, as well for the Defence of the Town, as of the advanc'd Posts and Garrisons, which the *Spaniards* call *Presidios*: But that Pay has fall'd for 14 Years past, and all Things are there in Disorder, the Soldiers having been obliged to disperse themselves up and down to get their Living; so that if the *Indians* should have a Mind to revolt, they would find the *Spaniards* defenceless, and, as it were, a-sleep, because they are at Peace. However, they have several little Forts, or little Intrenchments, in which they have some Pieces of Cannon, and some of the Militia and *Indian* Friends, when they think fit.

*Advanced Posts.*

The farthest advanced of all those Posts, is that of *Puren*, 15 Leagues beyond the River of *Biobio*. A little more inward is that of *Nascimento*, or the *Nativity*, and towards the Coast of *Arauco*, the Walls whereof are almost quite fallen. In this there are six Pieces of Cannon, twelve Pounders, and four Four-Pounders, all without Carriages. Then along the River, is that of *S. Peter*, on this Side the *Biobio*, three Leagues from *La Concepcion*. Higher up, are *Talquemabuida*, *S. Christopher*, *S. Joanna*, and *Ambel*. Those

Those of *Boroa*, *Coloe*, *Repocura*, *Imperial*, and *Tucapel*, are destroy'd and abandon'd, and have had no Being but in our Maps, for 100 Years past.

The *Spaniards* indifferently neglect the Defences they might have against the Revolts of the *Indians*, whose Power they have been sensible of, and who only want an Opportunity to destroy them, whatsoever Appearance of Peace there be among them.

The Incurſions of thoſe People have occaſion'd the removing of the Royal Court of Chancery, which had been eſtabliſh'd at *La Conception* in the Year 1567, to the City of *Santiago*. At preſent, ſince the Reign of King *Phillip V.* there is only one *Oidor*, that is, a Judge of the Court, who performs the Functions of Governor, or *Corregidor*, and Chief in the Administration of Juſtice; the Court, that is, the Civil Government of the City by the *Spaniards*, call'd *Cabildo*, being compoſed of ſix *Regidores*, or Aldermen, two *Alcaldes*, in the Nature of Bailiffs, one Royal Enſign, an *Alguazil Mayor*, or Head Sergeant, and one Depositary-General: All theſe Places are elective, and laſt but a Year. Their Dreſs is black, with a *Golilla*, or little Band ſtanding out-right forwards, a Cloak and a Sword, after the *Spaniſh* Faſhion.

The ſame Inſurrections of the *Indians*, which remov'd from *La Conception* the Court of Royal Chancery, brought thither the Episcopop Sec, which is there at preſent; ſince the *Indians* poſſeſs'd themſelves of the City call'd *La Imperial*, where it was eſtabliſh'd, the Biſhop withdrew himſelf to *La Conception*. His Dioceſe extends from the River of *Maule*, being the Boundary of that of *Santiago*, to *Chiloe*, which is the moſt Southern Province inhabited by the *Spaniards* and *Chriſtian Indians*. He is Suſſragan to the Archbiſhop of *Lima*, and his Chapter conſiſts but of two Canons and ſome Priests.

Few Perſons well qualify'd, preſenting themſelves to be made Priests, he is oblig'd to conſerr Orders on ſuch as have but a ſmall Knowledge in Grammar, and ſo little, that  
ſome

some can scarce read the Mass. It is easy to judge whether such ignorant Shepherds are capable of instructing their Flocks, and consequently how the *Indians* are instructed, whom the *Spaniards* are obliged to teach their Religion, when they are in their Service.

The Religious Men, excepting the *Jesuites*, are still more unlearned than the Clergy, and much addicted to Libertinism, which the too great Veneration the People have for their Habit, very much facilitates. I can here insert a Fragment of the Sermon which was made at the *Dominican* Monastery, on the Festival of their Patriarch, whilst we lay at *Taleaguana*. The Fryar, who made the Panegyrick, enlarged very much upon the Friendship there was between *S. Dominick* and *S. Francis*, whom he compared to *Anteros* and *Cupid*. Then, contrary to his own Interest, he affirm'd, That *S. Francis* was the greatest Saint in Heaven: That when he came into that Heavenly Abode, the Blessed Virgin finding no Place worthy of him, withdrew a little from her own, to make room for him between herself and the Eternal Father; That *S. Dominick* coming to Heaven, *S. Francis*, his Friend and faithful Witness of his Sanctity upon Earth, would, out of Humility, have given him the one Half of his Place; but that the Blessed Virgin, by those Offers, guess'd he was a great Saint, and would not have him share in his Friend's Place; therefore she withdrew a little farther, to allow an entire Place for him; so that those two Saints now sit between her and the Eternal Father. Let no Man believe I have invented this Story for my Pastime; there are Witnesses of three Ships who can testify the Truth of it. What Impression must such a Discourse make on the Minds of the People, and more particularly of the *Indians*? No doubt but that they will look upon the Apostles as inconsiderable Persons in the Sight of God, when compared with those two Founders of Orders; for those People are of a dull Comprehension in Matters of Religion.

## Of the Indians of Chili.

ABOUT *La Concepcion* there are few *Indians* true Christians, besides those who are subject to, and in the Service of the *Spaniards*: And it is to be doubted whether they are so, any farther than being baptized, and that they are instructed in the essential Points of Religion. This is true, that they carry the Worship of Images almost to Idolatry: They take so great an Affection to them, as often to carry them Meat and Drink, judging no otherwise of Things than by what affects the Senses; so hard is it for them to conceive that there is a Soul in Man, which can be separated from the Body. If Care is not taken to make them comprehend, that by enjoying the heavenly Bliss, the Saints behold in God what is doing here below, that by that Means hearing our Prayers they intercede for us, and that their Images are no other than Signs made use of to represent to us their Actions; It is not to be thought strange that they should carry them Meat and Drink, since, seeing them magnificently clad and incens'd by the *Spaniards*, they imagine they must also have Food to nourish them, and that the Smoak of the Frankincense is not sufficient to support them.

The *Indians* on the Frontiers, especially along the Coast, seem well enough inclined to embrace our Religion, if it did not prohibit Polygamy and Drunkenness; nay, some of them will be baptized, but they cannot overcome themselves as to those two Points. The Bishop of *La Concepcion*, *Don Juan Gonzales Montero*, going a Visitation in his Diocese, in 1712, was expected beyond the River *Bio-bio*, by above 400 *Indians*, who, fancying that he came to take away their Wives, were positively for murdering of him. It was absolutely necessary, in order to save himself, to undeceive and assure them that he would not offer any Violence to them. I enquired carefully after their Religion, and was inform'd that they have none. A *Je-*  
I
suite

suite of Sincerity, Procurator of the Missions the King of Spain maintains in *Obili*, assured me, That they were perfect Atheists: That they worship'd no sort of Thing, and made a Jest of all that could be said to them as to that Point: That in Reality their Fathers made no Progress therein, which does not agree with the *Lettres Edifiantes*, written by the Missioners, Vol. 8. where it is said, That they converted many at *Nabuelbuapi*, in 42 Degrees Latitude, and 50 Leagues from the Sea, among the *Puelcher* and the *Poyas*, in the Year 1704. Nevertheless, they penetrate very near to the Streights of *Magellan*, and live among those People without receiving any Harm from them: On the contrary, those *Indians* have a sort of Veneration for the Missioners; but they may, in Process of Time, make some Advance, because they desire the prime Caciques to give them their eldest Sons to be instructed. They breed up a certain Number of them in their College of *Obillan*, whose Pensions the King is to pay; and when grown up, they send them back to their Parents, instructed in the Christian Religion, and bred up to *Spanish* Literature; so that there are at present some Christians among them, and who are satisfy'd with one Wife.

One Sign that the *Indians* of *Obili* have no Religion, is, That never any sort of Temples nor Idols have been found among them for their Worship, as is still to be seen in several Parts of *Peru*, especially at *Cusco*, where the Temple of the Sun is still to be seen; and if there be some Appearance of Divination among them, it is no other than the Use of the Fish, that frequently serves them. There are some who believe there is another Life, for which they put into the Monuments of the Dead, Meat, Drink, and Cloathing. The *Spanish* Curates have not abolish'd that Custom among those who are Christians: As it turns to their Account, they supply the Place of the Dead Person, as has been seen at *Talcaguana*.

The Wives of those who are not Christians, stay several Days by their Husbands Graves to cook for them, to  
pour



pour *Chieba* on their Bodies, that is, their Liqueur, and to fit their Equipage as for undertaking a very long Journey. It is not hence to be concluded, that they have any Notion of the Spirituality of the Soul, or of its Immortality: They look upon it as something corporeal, which is, to go beyond the Sea to Places of Pleasure, where they shall abound in Meat and Drink: That they shall there have several Wives, who will bear no Children, but will be employ'd in making them good *Chieba*, in serving them, &c.

However, this they believe very confusedly, and many of them look upon it as a Conceit of their own framing. Some of the *Spaniards* imagine, that this Notion has been instill'd into them by a Corruption of the Doctrine which *S. Thomas* the Apostle taught, on the other Side of the *Cordillera*, or Ridge of Mountains which separates *Chili* from the Inland of *South America*; but the Reasons on which they ground their Belief, that the said Apostle and *S. Bartolomew* came into that Province, are so wretched, as not to deserve being mention'd.

The *Indians* of *Chili* have no Kings or Sovereigns among them to prescribe Laws to them: Every Head of a Family was Master in his own House; but those Families increasing, those Chiefs are become Lords of many Vassals, who obey, without paying them any Tribute: The *Spaniards* call them *Caciques*. All their Prerogative consists in commanding in Time of War, and in exercising Justice. They succeed in that Dignity by the Right of Eldership, and every one of them is independent of any other, and absolute Master in his own Dominions. I do not only speak of those who are Savage, or Unconquer'd, but even of those who are reckon'd Subdued; for tho', by a Treaty of Peace, they have consented to own the King of *Spain* for their Prince, they are not oblig'd to pay him any other Acknowledgment, but a Supply of Men to repair the Fortifications, and defend themselves against the other *Indians*. The Number of these is reckon'd to be 14 or 1500.

Their Government.

*Servitude of  
those who are  
subdu'd.*

It is not so with those who are subdu'd, and call'd *Tanacotac*; these being Tributaries to the King of Spain, to whom they pay the Value of ten Pieces of Eight yearly, either in Silver or Commodities: And they are also employ'd in the Service of the *Spanish* Families, to whom his Catholick Majesty, either as a Reward for their brave Actions, or Service, or for Money, grants a Number of *Indians*, who are obliged to attend them as Servants, and not as Slaves; for, besides their Diet, they are to pay them 30 Crowns a Year; and if they will not serve, they are free from it upon paying their Master ten Crowns, which is call'd *Encomienda*. Their Age to serve is from 16 to 50; above and under they are exempt from it: Besides, the *Indians* thus given in *commendam*, the *Spaniards* in *Chili* only have some in their Service who are Slaves; bought of the free *Indians*, who freely sell them their Children for Wine, Arms, Utensils, &c. This being an Abuse contrived at, contrary to the King's Ordinances, they are not Slaves like the Blacks; those who buy, cannot sell them again, unless it be privately, and with the Slave's Consent, who, by means of a Letter, call'd *De Amparo*, that is, of Protection, may demand his Liberty. To this end, there is in every Town, and in the Court at *Santiago*, a Protector of the *Indians*, to whom they make Application.

By reason also of the Toleration or Connivance, the Sons of Slaves do not follow the Fate of the Mother, as is ordain'd in *Justinian's* Institutes, when the Father is a Servant in *Commendam*; because the latter being permitted, the Advantage is to accrue to him preferable to the other. The Mixture of *Spanish* Blood makes those free whom the Father will own; and entitles the *Mestices*, that is, the Sons of a *Spaniard* and an *Indian* Woman, to wear Linnen.

To know the Original of this sort of Slavery, we must look back to the Conquest of *Peru*. The private Persons who are the first Authors, ought, by their Contract with the King of *Spain*, to have the *Indians* as Slaves during their

their whole Life; after which, they were to fall to the eldest of the Family, or to their Wives, in case they died without Issue. There was some Shew of Justice in that, not only to reward them for their Sufferings and Bravery, but also because they had undertaken and carry'd on that War at their own Charge. However, because they treated their Slaves inhumanly, some good People taking Compassion on those Wretches, earnestly represented to the Court of *Spain*, that they abused them, not only by excessive Exactions, but also that they exercised the utmost Cruelties on their Persons, even to the killing of them.

This Excess was taken into Consideration; and, to redress it, the Emperor *Charles V.* King of *Spain*, in the Year 1542, sent *Blasco Nunez Vela* unto *Peru*, as Viceroy, with Orders to cause the *Indians* to be discharged of the Impositions laid on them, and restored to their Liberty. But the principal Wealth of the Colonies consisting in the great Number of Slaves, especially among the *Spaniards*, who scorn to labour, most of them refused to obey those Orders, which they thought too severe; and the Execution whereof would, in some Measure, have reduced them to Beggary: They would not, therefore, acknowledge the new Viceroy, which occasion'd those bloody Civil Wars, which we have at Length in *Zarate*.

At last, to make the Servitude of the *Indians* the more easy, and not ruin the *Spaniards*, the King seiz'd on those whose Masters died, and afterwards gave them to his Officers, and to several others, upon the Conditions above-mention'd.

That Servitude of *Encomienda* has been the Occasion of the bloody Wars the *Spaniards* have had with the *Indians*: They were willing to acknowledge the King of *Spain* for their Sovereign; but, as Men of Sense, they would preserve their Liberty. And upon these Conditions the last Peace was concluded, about 25 or 30 Years ago; for tho' those People seem Savages to us, they know very well how to agree about their common Interest: They assemble with  
the

the Elders, and those who have most Experience; and if they consult about any Martial Affair, they, without Partiality, make choice of a General of known Merit and Valour, and punctually obey him: By their Conduct and Bravery, they formerly hinder'd the *Ingas* of *Peru* from coming among them, and put a Stop to the Conquest of the *Spaniards*, whom they have confined to the River *Biobio*, and to the Ridge of Mountains, call'd *La Cordillera*.

*Assemblies of Indians.*

The Manner of their Assemblies consists in carrying into a good Plain, chosen for that Purpose, a great Quantity of Liquor; and when they have begun to drink, the Eldest, or he who on some other Account is to make a Speech to the rest, undertakes to lay before them the Matter in hand, and delivers his Opinion with much Solidity; for they are said to be naturally eloquent: After which, the Resolution is taken by the Plurality of Votes, and published by Beat of Drum; three Days are allow'd to consider on it, and if in that Time no Inconveniency be found, the Project is infallibly put in Execution, after confirming the Resolution, and settling the Means to bring it to Effect.

Those Means are within a very small Compass; for the *Caciques* furnish their Subjects with nothing to make War: They only give them Notice, and every Man brings with him a Bag of Meal, either of Barley or *Indian Corn*, which they put into Water, and live upon it many Days. Each of them has also his Horse and Arms always in a Readiness;

Plate IX. p. 62. explain'd in English.

- A. An Indian of *Chilli*, in the Posture of Playing at *La Sueca*, a Sort of *Bandy*.  
 B. An Indian Woman holding the Liquor for her Husband.  
 C. *Cahouin tonhan*, or an Indian Festival or Rejoicing.  
 D. Spanish Guards appointed to prevent Disorders.  
 E. *Pivelles*, A Whistle, or Pipe.  
 F. *Paquecha*, A Drinking-Dish with a long Beak.  
 G. *Coulthun*, A Dram.  
 H. *Thouthoaca*, A Trumpet.



A. indien du Chili en Macuñ jouant a la Suca, jeu de croce  
 B. indienne en Choñi. C. Cathouin touhan ou fête des indiens  
 D. Gardas Espagnoles pour empêcher le desordre. E. Fivdlea ou sifflet  
 F. Paquecha ou tasse a bec. G. Coullthun ou tambour. H. Thouthouca ou trompette

Handwritten text at the top left corner, possibly a title or reference number.



Handwritten text at the bottom of the page, likely a caption or description of the illustration above.

ness; so that they form an Army in a Moment, without any Expence; and, to prevent any Surprise, there is always, in every *Cacique*ship, on the highest Eminence, a Trump, or Instrument made of a Bull's Horn, which can be heard two Leagues about. As soon as any Accident happens, the *Cacique* sends to sound that Horn, and every Man knows what is in Agitation, to repair to his Post.

“ Our Poverty, said the *Scythians* to *Alexander* the Great, will always be more active than your Army laden with the Spoils of so many Nations; and when you will think us very remote, you will find us at your Heels; for with the same Celerity we pursue and fly from our Enemies.

Their usual Weapons are Pikes and Lances, which they dart with extraordinary Dexterity. Many of them have Halberds, which they have taken from the *Spaniards*; they have also Axes and Broad-Swords, which they buy of them, wherein the latter fail in Point of Policy; for it is to be fear'd lest they be some day scourged with their own Rods: They also, but seldom, make use of Darts, Arrows, Clubs, Slings, and Leather Nooses, which they manage so dextrously, that they take hold of a Horse, where-ever they please, in his Career. Those who want Iron for their Arrows, make use of a Sort of Wood, which being harden'd at the Fire, is not much inferior to Steel. By long waging War with the *Spaniards*, they have got Coats of Mail, and all Sorts of Armour; and those who have none, make it of raw Hides, which is Proof against a Sword, and has this Advantage over the other, that it is light, and less cumbersome in Fight; in short, they have no Uniformity in their Weapons, but every Man makes use of those he is most expert at.

Their Manner of Fighting is, to form Squadrons in Files of 80, or 100 Men, some arm'd with Pikes, and others with Arrows intermix'd; when the foremost are broken, they succeed one another so quick, that it does not appear that ever they gave Way. They always take

care

care to secure a Retreat into the Bogs, or Morasses, where they are safer than in the best Fortress. They march to Battle in a very fierce Manner, by Beat of Drum, with their Weapons painted, their Heads adorn'd with Plumes of Feathers; and before they engage, the General commonly makes a Speech; after which they all beat with their feet, and give hideous Shouts, to encourage one another to fight.

When they are obliged to fortify themselves, they make Palisadoes, or else only entrench themselves behind great Trees: Before them, at certain Distances, they dig Pits, the Bottoms whereof they set full of Stakes upright, with Briars, and cover them with Turf, to impose upon their Enemies. Unhappy those who fall into their Power! for they tear them, draw out their Hearts, which they cut in Pieces, and wallow in their Blood like wild Beasts. If it happens to be a Man of any Note, they put his Head upon the Point of a Pike, afterwards drink out of the Skull, and at last make a Dish of it, which they keep as a Trophy; and of the Leg Bones they make Flutes for their Rejoycings, which are only dismal Drunken Houts, and last as long as the Drink they have brought. This Debauch is so pleasing to them, that those who are Christians, celebrate, or rather prophane, the Festivals of their Religion in that Manner.

*Festivals.*

I was Witness of a Festival the Slaves of an *Encomienda*, belonging to two Spaniards of the Name of *Peter*, kept on the Day of the Name of their Masters, in the Village of *Talcaguana*, near which we lay at Anchor. After hearing Mass, they mounted on Horseback to ride at a Fowl, as they ride at a Goose in *France*, with this Difference, that they all fall upon him who bears away the Head, to take it from him, and carry it to him in Honour of whom the Festival is kept. Running at full Speed, they jostled to get it from him, and gather'd up, as they ran, all that they threw down. After that Course, they alighted to dine; the Entertainment consisting of a great Number

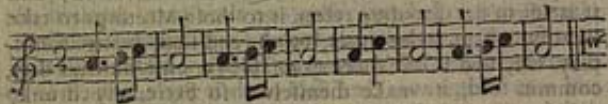


of Dishes, made of Calabashes, or Gourds, which they call *Mate*, plac'd in a Ring on the Grass, full of Bread steep'd in a Liquor made of Wine, and *Maiz*, or *Indian Wheat*. Then the *Indians*, who treated, brought each of the Guests a Bomboo Cane, about 18 or 20 Foot long, garnish'd with Bread, Flesh and Apples, made fast about it: Then having mov'd with a Cadency about the Meat, a little red Standard, with a white Cross in the Middle, was given to him that was appointed to make the Compliment to the *Indians*; they, on their part, deputed one to answer him, who made such a long Discourse of Compliments, that it lasted above an Hour: I ask'd the Reason, and was told, it was the Effect of their Style, which is so diffuse, that to talk of the most inconsiderable Thing, they go back to its very Original, and make a thousand needless Digressions.

When they had eaten, they mounted on a Sort of Scaffold made like an Amphitheatre, the Standard being in the Middle, and the others with their long Canes by it. There, being adorn'd with Feathers of Ostriches, Flamenco's, and other Birds of sprightly Colours, stuck round their Caps, they fell to singing to the Sound of two Instruments, made of a Piece of Wood, with only one Hole bored through it; blowing in which, either stronger or more gently, they form'd a Sound more or less sharp, or flat. They kept Measure alternatively with a Trumpet made of a Bull's Horn, fastned to the End of a long Cane, the Mouth of which had a Pipe, that sounds like a Trumpet. They fill'd up this Symphony with some Strokes of a Drum, whose heavy and doleful Sound was answerable enough to their Mien; which, in the Height of their Exclamations, had nothing in it that was gay. I observ'd them attentively on the Stage, and did not, during the whole Festival, see one smiling Countenance among them.

The Women gave them *Chicha* to drink, being a Sort of Beer, of which more hereafter, with a Wooden Instrument about two Foot and a half long, consisting of a Handle-  
K Cup

Cup at one End, and a long Beak at the other, with a winding Channel cut along it, to the end the Liquor may run out gently into the Mouth through a little Hole bored in the Bottom of the Cup or Dish at the Head of the Channel. With this Instrument they make themselves as drunk as Beasts, singing without Intermission, and all of them together; but in so unartificial a Tone, that three Notes would suffice to express the Whole.



The Words they sing have also neither Rhyme nor Cadency, nor any other Subject than whatsoever occurs to their Fancy: Sometimes they recount the History of their Ancestors; sometimes they speak of their Family, and sometimes say what they think fit of the Festival, and of the Occasion of celebrating it, &c.

This same Track holds on Day and Night, as long as they have any thing to drink, which does not fail till after some Days; for besides that he, in Honour of whom the Festival is kept, is obliged to provide much Liquor; every one of those who celebrate it, whether invited or not invited, brings some. They sometimes drink and sing ten or fifteen Days successively, without ceasing: Those who are overcome with Drunkenness, do not therefore give out; when they have slept in the Dirt, and even in Ordure, they remount their Theatre to fill up the vacant Places, and begin a-fresh. We saw them relieve one another after this Manner Day and Night, a heavy Rain and stormy Wind no way making them desist, for the Space of thrice 24 Hours; those who have not Room on the Theatre, sing below, and dance about it with the Women, if it may be call'd Dancing, to walk two and two, bowing and standing upright again somewhat hastily, as it were to leap, without ever taking their Feet off the Ground; they  
also

also dance in a Ring almost like us. This Sort of Diversion, which they call *Cabouin Touban*, and the *Spaniards Borrachera*, that is, Drunkennels, is so pleasing to them, that they do nothing of Moment without it; but they take care to appoint Part of their Men to guard them, whilst the rest get drunk and divert themselves. Those who are Christians cannot prevail upon themselves to quit that Sport, tho' the Sins it occasions are represented to them daily: In short, then it is that Quarrels are revived; and it is affirm'd, that they refer it to those Meetings to take Revenge of their Enemies, to the end that, being drunk, they may appear the more excusable for the Murders they commit. Others make themselves so extremely drunk, and for so many Days successively, that they burst, as happened at the Festival I speak of; because, besides the *Chicha*, they had much Wine.

Notwithstanding these frequent Debauches, they live whole Ages without any Distempers; so strong are they, and used to the Inclemencies of the Air: They endure Hunger and Thirst a long Time in War and Traveling.

*Their Constitution and Food.*

Their common Food at their own Homes is a Sort of Earth-Nuts, or Roots, or *Taupinambours*, which they call *Papas*, of a very insipid Taste, *Maiz*, or Indian Corn in the Ear, only boil'd or roasted, Horses and Mules Flesh, and scarce ever Beef, which they say gives them the Gripes. They eat the *Maiz* several Ways, or only boil'd in Water, or parch'd among Sand in an Earthen-Pot, and afterwards ground into Meal mix'd with Water. This they call *Oullpo*, when it is potable; and *Rubull*, when made into thick Hasty-pudding with Pepper and Salt. For grinding of the *Maiz*, after it is parch'd, instead of a Mill, they have oval Stones about two Foot long, on which, with another Stone eight or ten Inches long, they crush it on their Knees by Strength of Arm: This is the common Employment of the Women. Of this Meal they make Provision to go to the Wars, as has been said; and this is all their Provision. When they come to a Place where

there is Water, they mix it in a Horn call'd *Guampo*, which always hangs at the Pommel of their Saddles, and thus eat and drink without stopping.

*Their Drink.* Their common Drink is the *Chicba* we have spoken of; they make several Sorts of it: The most common is that of *Maiz*, or *Indian Corn*, which they steep till the Grain bursts, as if it were to make Beer; the Best is made with *Maiz* chew'd by old Women, whose Spitte causes a Fermentation like that of Leaven in Dough. In *Chili*, much is made of Apples, like Cyder: The strongest, and most valued, is that which is made of the Berries, or Seeds of a Tree call'd *Ovinian*; it is much like that of the Juniper in Bigness and Taste; it gives the Water a Tincture like *Burgundy Wine*, and a strong Taste, which makes them drunk for a long Time. Their Manner of Eating among themselves, is to lie along on their Bellies, supporting themselves with their Elbows in a Ring, and to make their Wives serve them. The *Caciques* begin to make use of Tables and Benches, in Imitation of the *Spaniards*.

*Their Colour.* Their natural Colour is dark, inclining to Copper-Colour, wherein they differ from the *Mulatto's*, which proceeds from a Mixture of Whiteness and Blackness: This Colour is general throughout all *America*, as well North as South; whence it is to be observ'd, that it is not the Nature of the Air they breathe there, or of the Food the Inhabitants use, but a particular Affection of the Blood; for the Descendents of the *Spaniards*, who are settled there, and marry'd to *Europeans*, and have continued unmix'd with the *Chilinians*, are of a finer and fresher White and Red, than those in *Europe*, tho' born in *Chili*, fed almost after the same Manner, and commonly suckled by the Natives of the Country.

The Blacks they carry thither from *Guinea*, or *Angola*, do also retain their natural Colour from Father to Son, when they keep to their own Kind.

It is not so with the Air of *Brasil* and the *French Islands*: The *Creolians*, tho' born without any Mixture of Blood, lose there that ruddy Whiteness of the *Europeans*, and take a Sort of Lead-Colour. Here no other Alteration is perceiv'd, but that which is occasion'd by the Mixture of the several Kinds, very common in the *Spanish Colonies*, much in *Chili*, but more particularly in *Peru*; where, among 30 Faces, scarce two can be found of the same Colour; some come from Black to White, as the *Mulatto's*; others fall from White to Black, as the *Zambo's*, Sons of *Mulatto's*, and Blacks: Some come from the *Indian Colour* to White, as the *Mestizo's*; and others fall from the *Mestizo* to the *Indian*; and then each of these Mixtures causes others *ad infinitum*.

From what has been said, it seems lawful to believe, that, among the Children of our common Parent, God has formed three Sorts of Colours in the Fleth of Men; the one white, another black, and a third of a reddish Colour, which has something of the one and of the other.

The Scripture does not perhaps mention this last Kind; but there is no Doubt but that it speaks of the Second, in the Person of *Chus*, *Noah's Grandson*, signifying Black, whence the *Abyssins* and the Inhabitants of *Chusistan*, or *Churistan*, are derived, because of the Resemblance of the Name. This Opinion appears to me more probable, than to ascribe the Colour of the *Indians* to some peculiar Disease, as some Physicians have fancy'd.

Be that as it will, the *Indians* of *Chili* are well shaped: *Slope and* They have large Limbs; their Stomach and Face broad, *Hair.* without any Beard, not agreeable; their Hair as coarse as a Horse's, smooth or lank, wherein they also differ from the Blacks and from the *Mulatto's*; for the Blacks have no Beard or Hair, but a very short soft Wool, and the *Mulatto's* have always short Hair, and much curl'd. As for the Colour of the Hair, that of the *Indians* is generally black,

black, and it is rare to find any inclining to fair, perhaps because they often wash their Heads with *Quillay*, of which I shall speak hereafter.

*Puelchet.*

The *Puelchet* cut their Hair to their Ears, and have extraordinary small Eyes, which makes the Women hideous. All of them naturally have none or very little other Beard besides Whiskers, which they pull up with Pincers made of Shells.

There are some among those of the Plain, who have a white Complexion, with a little Red in the Face: These are descended from the Women taken in the Spanish Towns they destroy'd, as *Angol*, *Villarica*, *Imperial*, *Tucapel*, *Baldivia*, and *Osorno*, where they carry'd all away, Laity and Religious, by whom they had Children, who still retain some Affection for the Nation of their Mothers, which is the Reason that they are almost always at Peace; such as those toward *Arauco*, tho' their Country is the Theatre of War made by their Neighbours. Since that time, no Monasteries of Nuns have been permitted, except at *Santiago*. However, the Bishop of *La Concepcion* will build one there, without apprehending the like Prophanation.

*Their Habits.*

The Habit of the *Indians* is so plain, that they are scarce cover'd: They wear a Wastecoat or Jerkin, which reaches to the Waste, so closed, that there is only the Hole for the Head, and one Arm to put it on, which they call *Macun*; a Pair of Breeches open down the Thighs, scarce cover their Nakedness. Over all, in rainy Weather, or for a more decent Garb, they have a sort of square long Cloak like a Carpet, without any Shaping, in the Midst of which is a Slit to put their Heads through: On the Body it looks almost

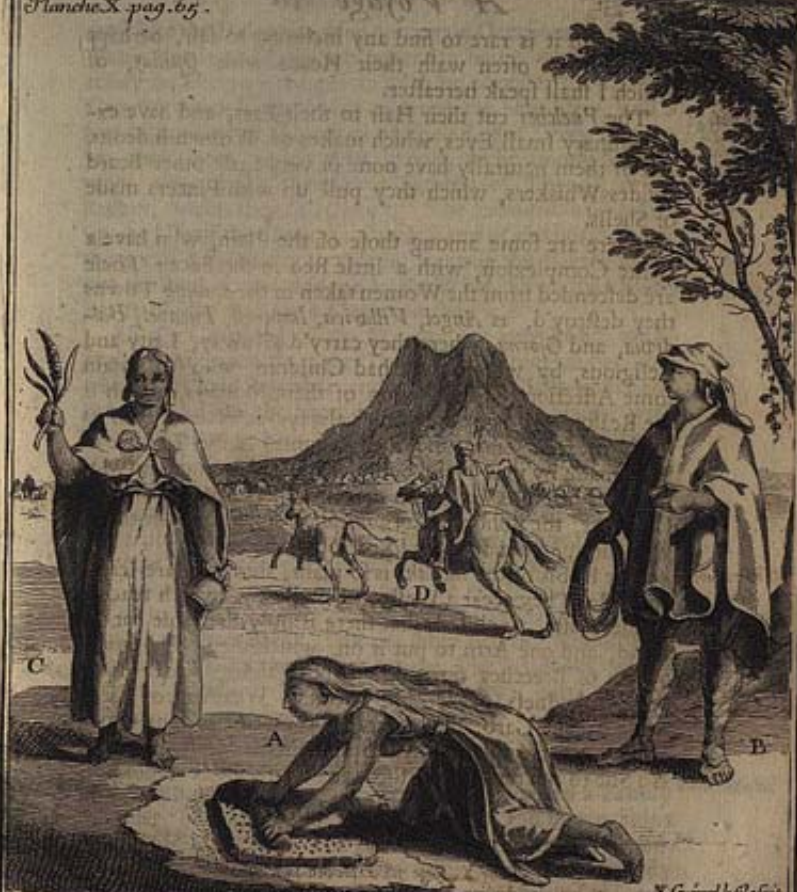
Plate X. Page 70. explain'd in English.

A. A Chilianian Indian Woman grinding *Maiz*, or Indian Corn, to make Meal.

B. An Indian in his loose Garment, call'd *Poncho* and *Buskina*.

C. An Indian Woman in her *Chouni* and *Iquella*, the Names of her Cloak and Coat.

D. An Indian casting a Noose at a Bull, to stop him.



N. Guérard le fils fecit

- A Indienne du Chili broyant du mays pour en faire de la farine
- B Indien en Poncho et Polainas
- C Indienne en Choñi et ypuella
- D Indien portant le lazo au taureau pour l'arrêter





most like the *Dalmatica*, used on certain Occasions by Priests. Their Heads and Legs are generally bare; but when Necessity or Decency obliges them to be cover'd, they have a Cap, to which hangs a Flap to cover the Shoulders, and a sort of Buskins or Gamashes on their Legs. Very few cover their Feet, unless they happen to be among Stones, when they make themselves Sandals of Thongs, or of Rushes, which they call *Ojota's*. The *Spaniards* have taken up the Use of the *Chony*, or *Poncho*, and of the Buskins, by them call'd *Polaina's*, to ride in, because the *Poncho* keeps out the Rain, is not undone by the Wind, serves for a Blanket at Night, and for a Carpet in the Field.

All the Cloathing of the Women is a long Robe, without Sleeves, open from the Top to the Bottom on one side, where it is held together and girt with a Sash under the Breasts, and on the Shoulders by two Silver Hasps, with Plates of three or four Inches Diameter. This Garment is also call'd *Chony*, and is always blue, or else of a dark gray, inclining to black. In the Towns, they wear over it a Petticoat, and a Veil on their Heads; and in the Country, a little square Piece of Stuff call'd *Iquella*, the two Sides whereof are made fast on the Breast with a great Silver Pin, which has a flat Head four or five Inches diameter, by them call'd *Toupo*. They have long Hair, often in Tresses on their Backs, and cut short before; and at their Ears Silver Plates two Inches square, like Pendants, which they call *Oupeller*. The *Romans* wore such, hanging with a Hasp. See *Gaspar Bartolini Thom. de inauribus veterum syntagma*. Amstel.

Their Dwelling is never any other than a Cottage made of the Boughs of Trees, large enough to shelter a Family together, having nothing but a little Chest and Sheep-Skins to lie on: They do not stand in need of much Room. They do not use Keys to secure what they have, Honesty is religiously observ'd among them; but among the *Spaniards* they are not so nice, especially the *Puelcher*, who are expert Thieves. All their Houses are scatter'd up and  
down:

## A Voyage to

down: They never draw together to live sociably, wherein they differ from the *Peruvians*; so that, throughout all *Chili*, there is not a Town or Village of the Natives of the Country to be seen. Nay, they are so little fix'd to the Place they take up for their Habitation, that, whensoever they take a Fancy to remove, they either abandon, or carry their Houses elsewhere: Whence it is, that the Art of making War on them, does not consist in going out to find them, but in taking Post in the Midst of their Country, with a small Number of Troops, obstructing their Sowing, destroying their Corn, and driving away their Cattle. This way of living dispers'd up and down, makes the Country look like a Desert; but, in reality, it is very populous, and their Families are very numerous. As they have many Wives, so they have also many Children, wherein their Wealth consists, because they sell them, especially the Daughters, who are bought for Wives: Thus they become perfect Slaves, whom they sell again, when they do not like them, and put them to the hardest Labour. The Men only hough the Land once a Year to sow their *Indian* Corn, *French* Beans, Lentils, and other Grain they feed on; and when they have done, they meet their Friends, drink, get drunk, and rest. Then the Women sow, water, and gather in the Harvest. She who lies with the Master, dresses his Meat that Day, takes care to treat him well, and to saddle and bridle his Horse; for they are so little used to walk a-foot, that tho' they are to go but 200 Paces they will ride; and they are excellent Horsemen: They go up and down such steep Places, that our *European* Horses would not be able to stand on them without any Burden. When obliged, upon a Rout, to fly into the Woods, they place themselves under the Bellies of the Horses, to prevent being torne by the Boughs of the Trees. In short, they perform on Horseback, all that we are told extraordinary of the *Arabs*, and perhaps they out-do them. Their Saddle is a double Sheep's Skin, which serves them to lie on in the Field. Their Stirrups are square wooden Boxes or  
Cafes

Cases for the Feet, such as the *Spaniards* use of Silver upon Solemnities, which are worth 4 or 500 Crowns.

It is true, that their Horses being come from *Europe*, they have imitated their Furniture, making that of Wood or Horn, which they saw made of Iron or Silver. Considering the prodigious Number there is at present throughout all that Continent, it is amazing that they should have multiply'd so much in less than 200 Years, that those which are not extraordinary beautiful, are not worth above two or three Crowns at *La Conception*; and yet, as has been said before, the *Indians* eat many; and when they ride, they take so little Care of them, that many of them burst.

The *Indians*, to keep the Account of their Flocks, and Knots instead of Writing. preserve the Memory of particular Affairs, make use of Knots in Wool, which by the Variety of Colours and Knitting, serve instead of Characters and Writing. The Knowledge of those Knots, which they call *Quipos*, is a Science and a Secret which Parents do not reveal to their Sons, till they think themselves near their End; and as it often happens, that for want of a ready Wit, they do not comprehend the Mystery, those Knots occasion them to mistake, and so become of no Use. To supply the Want of Writing, they employ those who have good Memories, to learn the History of their Country, and to recite it to others. Thus they preserve the Memory of the ill Usage of the *Spaniards* towards their Ancestors, when they subdued them, which perpetuates their Aversion for them: But when they are put in Mind of the Advantages they afterwards gain'd over those Strangers, whom they drove from five Towns they had built in their Country, their natural Fierceness revives, and they only wish for an Opportunity to drive them again from *La Conception*: But as long as they see *French* Ships coming and going, they dare not take off the Mask, being persuaded that they would afford the *Spaniards* considerable Assistance. Being themselves haughty, they unwillingly bear with the Vanity of those who would command them;

L

yet

yet they know how to dissemble, and trade with them for Beeves, Goats and Mules; receive them in their Houses, and entertain them as Friends.

*Their Trade.* A French Man, who had gone with a Spaniard to trade among the *Puelches*, an Indian Nation hitherto not subdued, and inhabiting the Ridge of Mountains, call'd *La Cordillera*, told me how they managed it. They go directly to the *Cacique*, or Lord of the Place, and appear before him without speaking a Word; then he breaking Silence, says to the Merchant, *Are you come?* Then he answering, *I am come.* *What have you brought me?* replies the *Cacique*. *I bring you,* rejoins the Spaniard, *some Wine,* (a necessary Article) *and such a Thing;* whereupon the *Cacique* fails not to say, *You are welcome.* He appoints him a Lodging near his own Cottage, where his Wives and Children bidding him welcome, each of them also demand a Present, which he gives, tho' never so small. At the same time the *Cacique*, with the Horn-Trumpet, before spoken of, gives Notice to his scatter'd Subjects of the Arrival of a Merchant, with whom they may trade: They come and see the Commodities, which are Knives, Axes, Combs, Needles, Thread, Looking-glasses, Ribbons, &c. The best of all would be Wine, were it not dangerous to supply them wherewith to make themselves drunk; for then they are not safe among them, because they are apt to kill one another. When they have agreed upon the Barter, they carry the Things home without paying; so that the Merchant delivers all without knowing to whom, or seeing any of his Debtors. In short, when he designs to go away, the *Cacique* orders Payment, by sounding the Horn again: Then every Man honestly brings the Cattle he owes; and because those are all wild Beasts, as Mules, Goats, and especially Oxen and Cows, he commands a sufficient Number of Men to conduct them to the Spanish Frontiers. By what has been said, may be observ'd, that as much Civility and Honesty is to be found among those

People, whom we call Savages, as among the most polite and well-govern'd Nations.

That great Number of Bullocks and Cows, which is consumed in *Chili*, where abundance are slaughter'd every Year, comes from the Plains of *Paraguay*, which are cover'd with them. The *Pueblo*s bring them through the Plain of *Tupatapa*, inhabited by the *Pebringues*, or unconquer'd *Indians*, being the best Pass to cross the Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*, because divided into two Hills, of less difficult Access than the others, which are almost impassable for Mules. There is another 80 Leagues from *La Concepcion*, at the Burning-Mountain call'd *La Silla Velluda*, which now and then casts out Fire, and sometimes with so great a Noise, that it is heard in the City. That Way the Journey is very much shortned, and they go in six Weeks to *Buenos-Ayres*.

By these Communications, they yearly make good all the Herds of Beeves and Goats, which they slaughter in *Chili* by thousands, for Tallow and Lard, made by trying up the Fat and the Marrow of the Bones; which, throughout all *South-America*, serves instead of Butter or Oil, not used by them in their Sauces.

The Flesh they either dry in the Sun, or in the Smoak, to preserve it, instead of salting, as is used in *France*. These Slaughters also afford the Hides; and especially the Goats-Skins, which they dress like *Morocco* Leather, by them call'd *Cordovans*, and sent to *Peru* to make Shoes, or for other Uses.

Besides the Trade of Hides, Tallow, and Salt-Meat, the Inhabitants of *La Concepcion* deal in Corn, with which they every Year lade eight or ten Ships, of 4 or 500 Tuns Burden, for the Port of *Callao*, besides the Meal and Bisket they supply the *French* Ships with, which take in Provisions there, to proceed to *Peru*, and to return to *France*. All this would be inconsiderable for so fine a Country, if the Land were well improved: It is extraordinary fertile, and so easy to till, that they only scratch it with a Plough,

for the most part made of one single crooked Branch of a Tree, drawn by two Oxen; and tho' the Grain is scarce cover'd, it seldom produces less than a hundred fold. Nor do they take any more Pains in Pruning their Vines to have good Wine; but, as they know not how to glaze the Jars they put it into, they are fain to pitch them, which, together with the Taste of the Goat Skins in which they carry it about, gives it a Bitterness like Treacle, and a Scent to which it is hard for Strangers to accustom themselves.

*Fruit.*

Their Fruit grows after the same Manner, without any Industry on their part in Grafting. Apples and Pears grow naturally in the Woods; and, considering the Quantity there is of them, it is hard to comprehend how those Trees, since the Conquest, could multiply, and be diffused into so many Parts, if it is true that there were none before, as they affirm.

*See Plate XI.  
Chili Strawberry.*

They there plant whole Fields with a Sort of Strawberry Rulhes, differing from ours, in that the Leaves are rounder, thicker, and more downy. The Fruit is generally as big as a Walnut, and sometimes as a Hen's Egg, of a whitish Red, and somewhat less delicious of Taste than our Wood Strawberries. I have given some Plants of them to *Monsieur de Jussieu*, for the King's Garden, where Care will be taken to bring them to bear.

Besides these, there is Plenty in the Woods of our European Kind. And in short, all manner of Garden-Product among us, grow there plentifully, and almost without any Trouble; and some are also to be found in the Fields, without cultivating, as Turneps, *Taupinambours* Endive of two Sorts, &c.

Aromatick

Plate XI. Page 76. explain'd in English.

*Frutilla, Being the large Strawberry of Chili, drawn after its natural Bigness.*

*Nancolahu, Or the Mountain-Flax.*



*Linum*  
vulgo

montanum *Linum*  
Nancolatui.

*Fragaria Chilensis*  
fructu maximo, foliis  
carnosis, hirsutis  
vulgo *frutilla*.

*H. Courcier de la plate fruit*

*Fraise du Chili de saince de grandeur naturelle.*



PL. MAR. 17  
1750  
L. 1750  
L. 1750  
L. 1750

PL. MAR. 17  
L. 1750

PL. MAR. 17  
L. 1750



Aromatick Herbs are there no less common; small and large Balm, Tansey, Camomile, Mint, and a Sort of *Pilosella*, or Mouse-Ear, which has a Scent something like that of Wormwood, cover the Fields. The *Alkaken-gi*, the Fruit whereof is more odoriferous than in France; a Sort of small Sage, which grows up to a Bush, the Leaf whereof, in Shape, somewhat resembles Rosemary; and having a Scent like the Queen of Hungary's Water, the *Indians* call it *Palghi*: It is, perhaps, a Sort of *Coniza Africana Salvia Odore*, and must contain many volatile Principles, if we may judge by the Scent and Taste. Roses grow naturally on the Hills, without having been planted; and the most common Sort that grows there, is either less prickly than in France, or has no Prickles at all. There is also in the Fields, a Flower like that Flower de *Ly*, which in *Bretagne* they call *Guernoziaiser*, and Father *Feuillee*, *Hemorocalis floribus purpurascensibus striatis*; the *Indian* Name of it is *Liuto*, and not *Littu*, as he says. There are of them of several Colours; and, of the six Leaves which compose it; there are always two Copple-crown'd. Of the Root of this Flower dried in an Oven, they make a very white Meal, and Paste for Confectionary.

In the Gardens, they cultivate a Tree bearing a white Flower, shaped like a little Bell, call'd *Floripondio*. Father *Feuillee* calls it, *Stramonoides arboreum oblongo & integro folio fructu levi*; the Scent of it is extraordinary sweet, especially in the Night: It is eight or ten Inches long, and four Diameter at the Bottom; the Leaf is downy, and a little more pointed than that of the Walnut-tree: It is an admirable Dispeller of certain Tumors, or Swellings; for which Use they have also a Sort of *Hedera Terrestis*, or Ground-Ivy, call'd by the *Spaniards*, *Yerba de los companones*.

When any Man happens to have a violent Fall, which occasions him to bleed at the Nose, they have an infallible Remedy for it; which is, to drink the Decoction of a Herb call'd *Quinchamali*, being a Sort of *Santolina*, or Dwarf

Aromatick  
Plants.Floripondio  
Flower.Quinchama-  
li Herb.  
Plate XVII.

Dwarf Cypress, bearing a yellow and red Flower, as here represented. The other small Medicinal Herbs, which we have in France, are also very common there, as Maiden-Hair; and especially some like that of Canada; Mallows, Marshmallows, Mercury, Foxglove, Polypody, Mullen, Milfoil, Crane's-Bill, both ordinary and scented, Silver-weed, and many more unknown to me, and peculiar to the Country.

Herbs for  
Dying.

Besides the Medicinal Herbs, they have others for Dying, in such Manner that the Colour will not come out with often washing in Soap. Such is the Root of the *Reilban*, a Sort of Madder, the Leaf whereof is smaller than ours; they, like us, boil the Root in Water to dye Red. The *Poquell* is a Sort of Gold Button, or *Abrotanum saxina folio vivente vermiculato*, Female Southernwood with green checquer'd Leaves, which dyes Yellow, and holds as well; the Stem of it dyes Green. The *Annil* is a Sort of Indigo, which dyes blue: Black is dy'd with the Stem and the Root of the *Pangue*, the Leaf whereof is round and plaited, like that of the Thorn-tree; it is two or three Foot Diameter, tho' Father *Féuillee*, who calls it *Panke Anapodophili folio*, confines it to ten Inches. When the Stem is Reddish, it is eaten raw, to cool the Body, and it is very astringent; they boil it with the *Maki* and the *Gouthiou*, Shrubs of that Country, to use it for dying Black, which is beautiful, and does not rot Stuffs, as the European Black does. This Plant is only found in Marshy Places.

Aromatick  
Trees.

The Woods are full of Aromatick Trees, as several Sorts of Myrtle; a Sort of Laurel-tree, the Bark whereof smells like Saffaphras, and sweeter; *Boldu*, the Leaf whereof smells like Frankincense, and the Bark has a biting Taste, with somewhat of the Flavour of Cinnamon: But there is another Tree which bears that very Name, tho' differing from the *East-India* Cinnamon, and has the same Quality; the Leaf of it is like that of the great Laurel-tree, only a little longer. *Virgil* seems to have described it in his *Georgicks*, Lib. 2.

Ipfa

*Ipsa ingens arbor, faciemque simillima lauro,  
 Et, si non aliam late jaclares odorem,  
 Laurus evas: folia baud ullis labentia ventis;  
 Plor apprima tenax; animas, & olentia Medi  
 Ora fovent illo, & sensibus medicantur anhelis.*

Thus English'd by Mr. Dryden.

Large is the Plant, and like a Laurel grows,  
 And did it not a different Scent disclose,  
 A Laurel were; the fragrant Flowers contemn  
 The stormy Winds, tenacious of their Stem.  
 With this the Medes to lab'ring Age bequeath  
 New Lungs, and cure the Sownrels of the Breath.

This Tree among the *Indians* is dedicated to the Ceremonies of Peace. When they concluded the Peace with the *Spaniards*, in the Year 1643, they kill'd many of the Country Sheep, of which we shall speak hereafter; they dipp'd into their Blood a Branch of this Cinnamon, which the Deputy of the *Caciques* deliver'd into the Spanish General the Marquis de Baydes's Hand, in Token of Peace. This Ceremony, tho' practis'd by Savages, is not without an Example in Holy Writ, *Exod.* Chap. xii. and *S. Paul* to the *Hebrews*, Chap. ix. says, *When Moses had spoken every Precept to all the People according to the Law, he took the Blood of Calves and of Goats, with Water, and Scarlet Wool, and Hyssop, and sprinkled both the Book and all the People, saying; This is the Blood of the Testament which God hath enjoined unto you.*

There is a very common Tree, called *Litti*, the Shade *Litti veno-* whereof causes the Bodies of those who sleep under it to *meus Tree.* swell, as happen'd to a Sea Officer, who had slept some Hours in the Shade of the said Tree; his Face swell'd so high, that he could not see. To cure this Distemper, they take an Herb call'd *Pellboqui*, being a Sort of Rindweed, or Ground-Ivy, or Winter-Cherry, which they pound with

*Peumo Tree,*  
good for the  
*Dropsy.*

with Salt, rub the Person with it, and the Swelling goes off in two or three Days, so that nothing of it remains. There is also a Tree call'd *Peumo*, a Decoction of whose Bark is very good against the Dropsy; it bears a Fruit of a red Colour, and like an Olive; the Timber of it may be used for building of Ships; but the best for that Use is the *Roble*, being a Sort of Oak, the Bark whereof is like Cork; the Wood is hard, and lasts long in the Water. Along the River *Biobio* there are abundance of Cedars, not only fit for Building, but to make excellent Masts. The Difficulty of conveying them along the River, which has not Water enough for a Ship at the Mouth, is the Reason why no Use can be made of them. Bamboo Canes are very common every where.

*Wild Fowl,*

The Plains swarm with an infinite Number of Birds, especially Ring-doves, abundance of Turtles, Partridges, but not so good as in *France*; Snipes, Ducks of all Sorts; one of which they call *Patos reales*, which have a Comb on the Beak, Curlews, Teals, *Pipeliener*, somewhat resembling those Water-Fowls we call Sea-Gulls, having a red, strait, long Bill, narrow as to Breadth, and flat as to Thickness, with a Streak of the same Colour over the Eyes, and their Feet like the Ostriches, they are well tasted; Parrots, *Pechicolorado's*, or Robin-Red-Breasts, which sing finely; some Swans, and those they call *Flamenco's*, whose Feathers the *Indians* value very much, to adorn their Caps on Festivals, because they are a beautiful white and red, a Colour they are very fond of. The Diversion of Shooting is there interrupted by certain Birds, which our People call *Criards*, that is, Shrickers, because, when they see a Man, they set up a Cry, and flutter about him, making a Noise, as it were to give Notice to the other Birds, who fly away as soon as they hear it: They have above the Joint of each Wing, a red Point standing up an Inch long, which is hard, and as sharp as a Cock's-Spur, which serves them to fight with other Birds.

We

We one Day, in a Marsh, took one of that Sort of Amphibious Creatures call'd *Penguins*, larger than a Goose; instead of Feathers, it was cover'd with a Sort of gray Hair, like that of the Seals, or Sea-Wolves; their Wings are also very like the Fins of those Creatures. Several Travelers have spoken of them, because they are very common about the Streights of *Magellan*. See it drawn from the Life, Plate XVI.

There are such Multitudes of Seals, or Sea-Wolves, *Seals* above-mention'd, that all the Rocks about the Island of *Quiriquina* are often cover'd with them. They differ from the Northern Sea-Wolves, in that the others have Paws, whereas these have two Fins, stretching out almost like Wings towards their Shoulders, and two other little ones which close up the Tail. Nature has, however, at the Ends of the two great Fins, preserv'd something like Paws; for there are four Talons that terminate the Extremities; perhaps they use them to go ashore, where they are much delighted, and whither they carry their Young, whom they feed with Fish, and cherish very tenderly, as is reported. There they make a Noise like Calves, for which Reason, in several Relations of Voyages, they are call'd Sea-Calves; but their Head is more like a Dog's than any other Beast's, and therefore with good Reason the *Dutch* call them Sea-Dogs. Their Skin is cover'd with very smooth thick Hair, and their Flesh is very oily, and ill-tasted, so that none but the *Livors* is usually eaten: However, the *Indians* of *Chiloe* dry, and lay up Provision of it for their Sustenance: The *French* Ships draw the Oil from it for their Use. They are very easily taken, there being no Difficulty in coming near to them both on the Land and in the Water; and they are kill'd with one Blow on the Nose. There are several Sizes of them: In the South they are as big as large Mastive Dogs; but in *Peru* there are some 12 Foot long. Their Skins serve to make Floats, being blown full of Air, instead of Boats; but at *La Conception*, the Fisher-Men only bind together three Faggots of light Wood, with Leather

M

Thongs,

Thongs, in such manner that the Middlemost may be a little lower than the other two, and go out to Sea on them. The properest Wood for that Purpose, is the Stem of a sort of Aloes, six or seven Foot long.

*Eg.* When Ships put in at *Talcaguana*, they go a fishing in the *Estero*, which is a little River at the Bottom of the Bay on the same Side. There they take abundance of Mullets, large Soles, *Rovalo's*, a delicate Sort of Fish like a Pike, having a black Streak on the Back; a Sort of Gurnards, call'd all along that Coast *Peze Rey*, that is, King Fish, because of its Delicacy.

*Gold Mines.* *La Concepcion* is seated in a Country abounding in all Things, not only to supply the Necessities of Life, but also containing infinite Wealth: All about the City there is Gold found, especially 12 Leagues to the Eastward, at a Place call'd *Estancia del Rey*, the King's Station; where, by washing, they get those Bits of Gold, which the *Spaniards* call *Pepitas*; that is, Grains; there have been some found weighing eight or ten Marks, (note a Mark is eight Ounces) and extraordinary fine. Formerly much was got about *Angol*, which is 24 Leagues off; and if the Country were inhabited by laborious People, it might be had in a thousand Parts, where they are satisfy'd there are good Washing Places; that is, Lands, whence it is taken by only washing, as shall be observ'd hereafter.

If they penetrate as far as the long Ridge of Mountains, call'd *La Cordillera*, there is an infinite Number of Mines of all Sorts of Metals and Minerals; and, among the rest, on two Mountains, which are only 12 Leagues from the *Pampar de Paraguay*, and 100 Leagues from *La Concepcion*.  
*Copper Mines.* In one of them they have discover'd Mines of pure Copper, so singular, that there have been found in them Grains, or Lumps of above a hundred Quintals Weight, (note that a Quintal is a hundred Weight.) The *Indians* call one of those Mountains *Payen*, that is, Copper; and *Don John Melendez*, who made the Discovery, call'd it *S. Joseph*. He drew thence one Piece of 40 Quintals Weight,  
of

of which he was, during my Stay at *La Conception*, making six Field-Pieces, all Six Pounders.

There are Stones, which are partly Copper quite form'd, and partly imperfect Copper; for which Reason they say of that Place, that the Earth there breeds, that is, that Copper is there daily form'd. \* In that Mountain there is also *Lapis Lazuli*.

The other Mountain adjoining, by the *Spaniards* call'd *Cerro de Santa Ines*, or *S. Agnes's Hill*, is remarkable for its great Plenty of Load-stone, which composes almost the whole Body of it.

In the next Neighbouring Mountains, inhabited by the *Puelches*, there are Mines of Sulphur and Salt. At *Talca-guana*, at *Irequin*, and in the very City, there are excellent Coal Pits, without digging above a Foot or two: The Inhabitants do not know how to make their Advantage of it; they were much surpriz'd to see us dig up Earth to make Fire, when we laid in Provision for our Forge.

Whilst we lay there, News was brought by Land from *Reval* at *Chiloe*, that the *Indians* there had revolted, and had kill'd 60 *Spaniards* of both Sexes. In short, those poor Slaves being made desperate by the Cruelty of the *Spaniards*, and particularly of the Governor, who exacted of each of them a certain Quantity of Cedar Planks, which is the Wood they trade with to *Peru* and *Chili*, and other Tyrannies, mutiny'd and kill'd thirteen or fourteen *Spaniards*, and a Woman: But the *Spaniards* took a cruel Revenge; for, drawing together, they slew all they met, and went into the very Islands to seek out and destroy them. It was said they kill'd above 200, to regain their Reputation and the Authority of the Whites, who are but a small Number in Comparison of the *Indians*; for they do not reckon that there are in that Province above 1000, or 1200 Men, able to bear Arms; and there are, at least, ten Times as many *Indians*, but they are naturally fearful and tractable, and know not how to make their Advantage of the Superiority of the *Spaniards*, who are ill arm'd, and have only

ly one little Fort, call'd *Chacao*, which is always ill provided with Warlike Stores; for as to the Town of *Castro*, the Strength of it is compar'd to that of *La Conception*: However, it would import them to have some Force in those Islands, because, if the *European* Nations would make any Enterprize in the *South Sea*, it would be easy to possess themselves of them; bating Wine, they would there find all necessary Refreshments and Provisions; and there is also much Ambergrise found.

The *Indians* of the Country about *Chiloe* are call'd *Chonos*: They go stark-naked, tho' in a very cold Climate, and among Mountains; they only cover themselves with a Skin cut square, without any other fitting, two Corners whereof they cross over their Stomach; one of the other two comes upon their Head, and the other hangs down in a Point on their Back.

Farther up the Country is another Nation of *Indian* Giants, if it be true that there are any. whom they call *Caucabues*: They being Friends to the *Chonos*, some of them now and then come with them to the Dwellings of the *Spaniards* of *Chiloe*. *Don Pedro Molina*, who had been Governor of that Island, and some other Eye-Witnesses of the Country, told me, they were near four *Varas* high, that is, about nine or ten Foot. These are the same they call *Patagons*, who inhabit the East Coast of the Desert Country ancient Travels have taken Notice of, which has afterwards been represented as a Fable, because *Indians* have been seen in the Streights of *Magellan*, who did not exceed the Size of other Men: And this is what deceiv'd *Froger*, in his Relation of the Voyage of *Monsieur de Gemet*; for some Ships have at the same time seen both Sorts. In *July*, 1704, the Men belonging to the *James* of *S. Malo*, commanded by Captain *Harrington*, saw seven of those Giants in *Gregory Bay*: Those of the *S. Peter* of *Marseilles*, commanded by *Carman* of *S. Malo*, saw six, among whom there was one who bore some Mark of Distinction above the rest. His Hair was platted in a Net Cap made of the Guts of Birds, with Feathers quite



quite round his Head: Their Garment was a Bag of Skins, with the Hair inwards: Along their Arms, in the Sleeves, lay their Quivers full of Arrows, some of which they gave them, and help'd them to bring their Boat ashore. The Sailors offer'd them Bread, Wine and Brandy, but they would not taste any: The next Day they saw from aboard the Ship, 200 of them in a Body. Those Men, tho' larger, are more sensible of the Cold than the others; for the smaller Size have no other Cloaths but a single Skin on their Backs.

What I have here deliver'd upon the Testimony of Persons of Credit, is so agreeable to what we read in the Relations of the most famous Travelers, that I am of Opinion, it may be believ'd, without the Guilt of an Overcredulity, that there is in that Part of *America*, a Nation of Men much exceeding us in Stature. The Particulars of Time and Place, and all the Circumstances attending what is said about it, seem to carry a sufficient Character of Truth to overcome the natural Prejudice we have on the other Side. The Extraordinariness of the Sight may perhaps have occasion'd some Exaggeration in the Measure of the Height; but if we ought to regard it as guess'd at, and not taken exactly, we shall find that they differ very little from one another. The Reader will give me leave, in order to justify what I have here advanced, to collect in this Place, what is to be found dispers'd in several Books relating to this Subject.

*Anthony Pigafeta*, to whom we are indebted for the Journal of *Ferdinand Magalbanes*, or, as we call him, *Magellan*, tells us, That in the Bay of *S. Julian*, in the Latitude of about 49 Degrees and a half, the *Spaniards* saw several Giants, 10 tall, that they did not reach up to their Waistes. He speaks, among others, of one, who had the Figure of a Heart painted on each Check: Their Weapons were Bows and Arrows, and they were clad in Skins.

*Bartolome Leonardo de Argenfola*, in the first Book of his History of the Conquest of the *Molucco* Islands, says, That

Ozorius de  
zebus Ema-  
nuelis regis  
Lusitanie,  
Lib. 2.

Ciertos Ge-  
gantes de mas  
de quinze  
the Palinos.

the same *Magellan*, in the Streight that bears his Name, took some Giants who were above 15 Spans high, that is, 11 Foot, 3 Inches of our Measure; but they soon died, for want of their usual Sustainance.

Consta por  
otras que ti-  
ene cada uno  
destos mas de  
tres varas de  
alto.

The same Historian, in his third Book, says, That the Men of *Sarmiento's* Ships, fought with Men that were above three Yards high, that is, about eight Foot of our Measure: The first time they repuls'd the *Spaniards*; but the second, the latter put them to Flight, with such Precipitation, that, to make use of the *Spanish* Expression, *A Musket Ball would not have overtaken them.* According to this Instance, says he, the Books of Knight-Errantry have good Reason to represent Giants as Cowards. However, I have heard the Inhabitants of *Chiloe* say, that the *Caucabues* were as brave as they were tall.

Die 7 Maii,  
1599.

Quorum ut  
conjectura  
dabat longit.  
10 aut 11 pe-  
dum erat.

Hist. Antip.  
Part. 9.

Vasto ac proce-  
ro corpore  
sunt pedes 10  
vel 11 equan-  
te. Hist. Ant.  
p. 9.

\* Conspere-  
runt autem  
ibi ad terram  
de Fogon im-  
maris admo-  
dum & hor-  
rendæ longi-  
tudinis ho-  
minem.

Journal of  
*Schouten's*  
Voyage,  
Amst. 1619.

We find a Circumstance much to the same Purpose, but perhaps more magnify'd in *Sibald de Wert's* Voyage, who being at Anchor with five Ships in the *Green Bay*, 21 Leagues within the Streight of *Magellan*, saw seven *Piragua's*, or large *Indian* Boats, full of Giants, who might be about ten or eleven Foot high, whom the *Dutch* fought, and who were so frighted at the Fire-Arms, that they were seen to tear up Trees to shelter themselves against the Musket-Balls.

*Olivier de Noort*, who enter'd the Streight some Months after *Sibald*, saw Men ten or eleven Foot high, tho' he had also seen others of our Size.

*George Spilbergen* entering the Streight of *Magellan*, the 2d of April, 1715, saw, on *Tierra del Fuego*, a Man of a prodigious Height, who was got upon a Hill, to see the Ships pass by.

*William Schouten*, on the 11th of December of the same Year, being in Port *Desire*, in about 47 Degrees and a half Latitude, his Men found on the Mountain, Heaps of Stones placed in such Manner, as gave them a Curiosity to see what they cover'd, and found *Humane Bones between ten and*

and eleven Foot long, that is, nine or ten French Measure, to which all the former are to be reduced.

I have thought fit to make this little Digression, to justify a Matter of Fact which is suspected of Falshood, tho' the reading of Holy Writ and Historians, and the Examples of Giants we often enough see born and living among us, ought to dispose us to believe something extraordinary. I return to the Account of my Voyage.

They added to the News of the Revolt of the *Indians* of *Chiloe*, that a *French* Vessel, which put into that Island, had supply'd the *Spaniards* with Powder against the *Indians*. That Circumstance made us believe it was the *Mary*, which we lost about *Cape Horn*; but we understood soon after, that she was put into *Baldivia*. At last, on the 8th of *August*, she came and join'd us at *La Conception*.

The *Mary*  
joins them.

They inform'd us, that, after having run thro' much foul Weather, they had found themselves on the Island of *Diego Ramirez*, at the Time when they reckon'd themselves 80 Leagues to the Westward of it, by the Manuscript Charts, and 60 Leagues by the Printed, and two Degrees more to the Northward than they really were: But having corrected their Errors upon that View of Land, they had arrived very exactly at *Baldivia*, by *Pieter Goor's* Charts; which confirms the Conjectures I made before, in relation to the Currents.

Notwithstanding the continual Rains, we had already laid in our Provisions when the *Mary* arriv'd; it only remain'd to do the same for her; when, the *Oidor* or Judge of *La Conception* receiv'd Orders from the President of *Chili* to oblige all the *French* Ships that were in the Road, upon what Pretence soever, to depart, and that within four Days at the farthest; but those Orders were not much regarded, being given on Occasion of a notable Piece of Gallantry. The *Concord* did not sail till the 19th of *July* for *Valparaiso*, and the *Mary Anne* the 20th for *Hilo*; and we staid there some Days longer to make an End of our Business.

In the mean time, the fair Weather began to succeed the Winter Rains and Winds, and the Hope of Trade could not detain us at *La Conception*, because, besides that the two Ships above-nam'd, had furnished the City with what little Goods it had Occasion for, *Champrovet le Brun*, Captain of the *Assumption*, had been there ever since the 24<sup>th</sup> of *June*, endeavouring to sell as much as would pay for his Provisions; so that we thought of sailing, to go and trade in *Peru*.

### Departure from *La Conception*.

WE sail'd out of the Bay of *La Conception*, on the 30<sup>th</sup> of *August*, uncertain what Place to resort to; nothing but the Desire of receiving some Information made us put into *Valparaiso*, where, nevertheless, we stay'd above eight Months. By the Way, we had continually the Winds contrary, weak or variable: We also observ'd, contrary to what is usual, that there are in these Parts fair and serene Days at the Time when the North-Wind prevails. Six Days after our Departure, we discover'd the Head call'd *Morro del Obispo*, or, *The Bishops Head-land*, two Leagues to the Southward of *Cape Curaoma*, which is generally made in order to get to the Windward of *Valparaiso*, to the end that the strong Breezes at S. and S. W. may not drive Ships from that Port, which it would be hard to recover, without running far out to Sea. At five in the Evening, it appear'd to us thus:

Land discover'd to the Windward of *Valparaiso*.

Plate XII.

It being then late, we would not venture to go into *Valparaiso* by Night, tho' the Opening of the Road is very wide; we took a Trip out to Sea, and the next Morning making Land again, saw the same Head-Land, which alters but little, because it is high and round like a Bell.

After turning *Cape Curaoma*, two Leagues to the N. E. and by E. appears the Point of *Valparaiso*, which with that Cape forms the Creek of *Lagunilla*, where no Ships anchor, because the Bottom is naught.

Plate



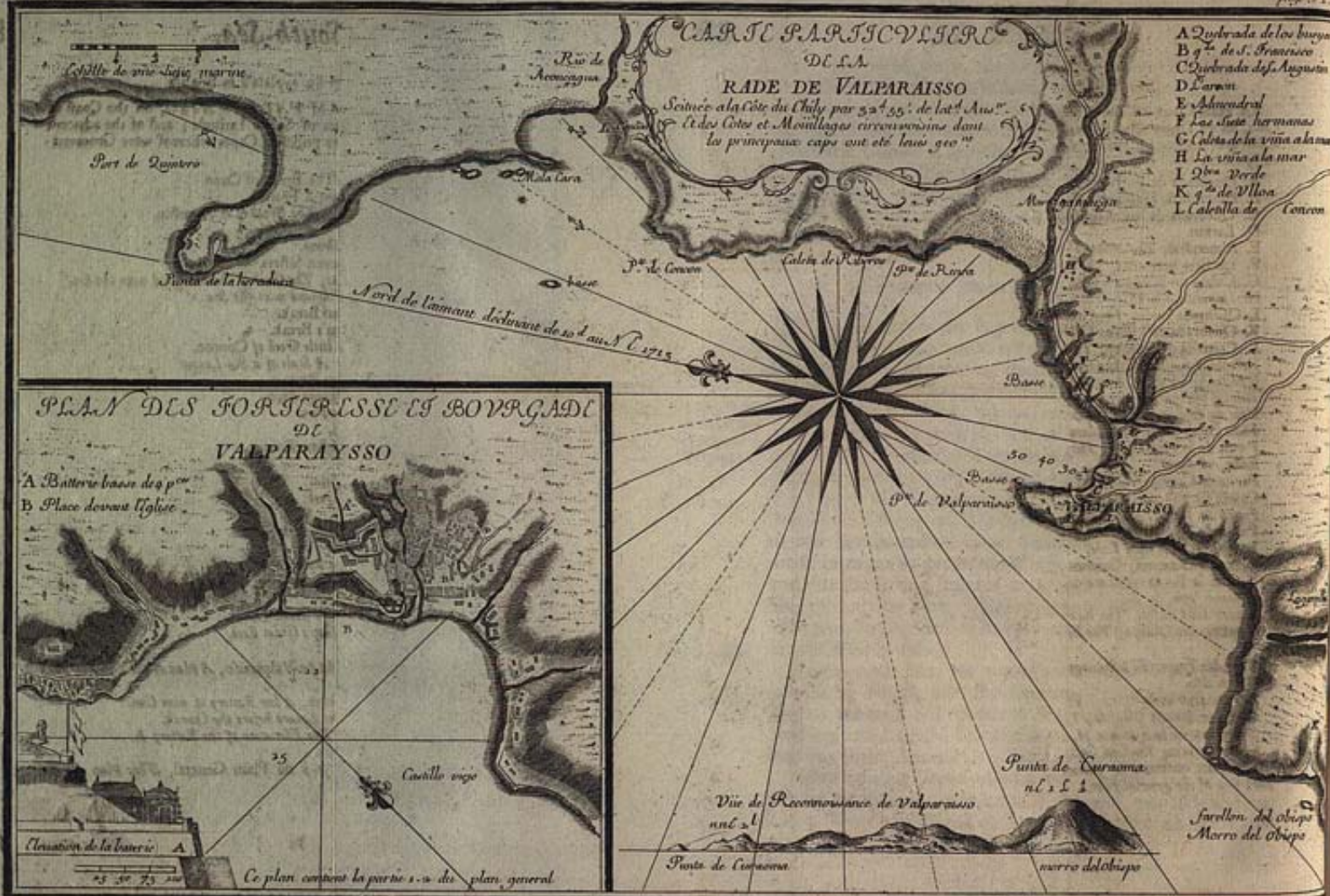


Plate XII. Page 89. explain'd in English.

An exact Chart of the Road of *VALPARAISO*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 32 Degrees, 55 Minutes of South Latitude; and of the adjacent Coast and Anchoring Places, the principal Capes whereof were Geometrically taken.

- A. Quebrada de los Bueyes, The Break of Oxen.
- B. Punta de S. Francisco, Point S. Francis.
- C. Quebrada de San Augustin, The Break of S. Augustin.
- D. Larion.
- E. Almendral, The Almond Grove.
- F. Las siete hermanas, The Seven Sisters.
- G. Caleta de la vinna à la Mar, The Creek of the Vineyard next the Sea.
- H. La vinna à la Mar, The Vineyard next the Sea.
- I. Quebrada verde, The Green Break.
- K. Quebrada de Ulloa, Ulloa's Break.
- L. Caletilla de Concon, The little Creek of Concon.
- Echelle d'une Lieue Marine, A Scale of a Sea-League.
- Rio de Aconcagua, Aconcagua River.
- Rio de Margamarga, Margamarga River.
- Port de Quintero, Quintero Port.
- Mala Cara, Ugly-Face Island.
- Punta de la Herradura, Horseshoe Point.
- Baïe, A Shoal.
- Punta de Concon, Concon Point.
- Caleta de Riberos, Riberos Creek.
- Punta de Rinca, Rinca Point.
- Punta de Valparaiso, Valparaiso Point.
- Lagunilla, The little Lake.
- Punta de Curaoma, Curaoma Point.
- Vue de la Reconnoissance de Valparaiso, Thus Valparaiso appears, and is to be known from the Sea.
- Morro del Obispo, The Bishop's Head-Land.
- Farellon del Obispo, The Bishop's Great Rock.

Plan des Forteresse & Bourgade de Valparaiso, A Plan of the Fort and Town of Valparaiso.

- A. Batterie basse de neuf Pieces, A low Battery of nine Guns.
  - B. Place devant l'Eglise, The Square before the Church.
  - Elevation de la Batterie A, The Elevation of the Battery A.
  - Castillo viejo, The Old Castle.
- Ce Plan contient la partie 1-2 du Plain General, This Plan contains Part 1-2 of the general Plan.

N

Description

## Description of the Bay of Valparaiso.

**I**n order to enter the Port of *Valparaiso*, upon turning the Point, Ships must range close along the Shoal, which shews itself within about half a Cable's Length from the Shore, for getting to the Windward. That Rock is very safe, for we have seen a *Spanish* Ship in a Calm, within a Boat's Length of it, without touching. When Ships keep too far from it, they are obliged to make many Trips to recover the Anchoring-Place, as happened to us. We came to an Anchor on the 5th of *September*, in 27 Fathom Water, the Bottom gray Owze, inclining to an Olive Colour, the Point of *Valparaiso*, bearing N. E. and by N. the white Battery W. S. W. and Cape *Concon* N. and by E. As soon as our Anchor was down, we saluted the Fort with seven Guns, and it answer'd with one. We found in the Road the *Concord*, and seven *Spanish* Ships lading Corn for *Callao*.

Anchoring at  
Valparaiso.

Those Ships generally run in so close to the Shore, that they have three Anchors on the Land, made fast to Stones, or Piles, and at that distance they still have eight or ten Fathom Water; that Way of making fast is very good, because in the Summer, every Day regularly about Noon, the Breezes come up at S. W. and S. so strong, that they make the best Anchors give way. However, Care must be taken of a Shoal, that is within a Cable's Length of the Shore, near the Battery call'd *Castillo Blanco*, or, *The White Castle*, on which there is not above thirteen or fourteen Foot Water at the Ebb. The *Assumption* commanded by *Champloret* touch'd there lightly one Day, because the Sea rises and falls six or seven Foot. In other respects, the Bay is very safe, and Ships may turn and anchor every where from fifty to eight Fathom Water; only Care must be taken when they take a Trip towards the *Siete Hermanas*, or *Seven Sisters*, that is, to the Eastward, not to draw nearer the Shore than two Cables Length and a half, opposite to



a little running Water, cross'd by a great reddish Road; in that Place there is a Shoal, on which there is no more than two Fathom and a half Water.

Ships generally anchor only in that Nook of the Road which is before the Fort, for the Conveniency of Trade, and the more Safety; yet after all, that Road is quite naught in Winter, because the North Winds which blow in at the Mouth, without any Opposition, make the Sea there so boisterous, that Ships have been sometimes forced ashore. The South Winds are no less Violent there in Summer; but as they come over the Land, they make no Sea, and in case they should force Ships from their Anchors, they can only be drove out to Sea.

The next Day after our Arrival, the Captain went to pay his Respects to the Commander in Chief, call'd *Governador de las Armas*, Governour of Arms, for so he is distinguish'd from the President of *Chili*, who is call'd Plain Governour. It was then *Don John Covarubias*, a Man of Birth, who having serv'd in *Flanders*, had much Kindness for the *French*; tho' he is subordinate to the President, he owns him not by that Name, but by that of Captain General of *Chili*.

The Fort where he commands, is of little Moment, as well because it is ill built, as because the Road it defends is near other Creeks, which afford the same Conveniencies as that. Such an one is that of *Quintero*, which is defenceless, and but five Leagues from it. True it is, that the Bay of *Valparaiso*, as nearest to the Capital, is the most frequented in all *Chili*; for which Reason, it has been thought fit to secure it against any Insults of the *English* and *Dutch*, who have often ranged along those Coasts. Formerly, there was only a little Battery level with the Water, but within these last thirty Years they have built the great Forts, at the Foot of the Mountain: It stands on an Eminence of an indifferent Height, cross'd towards the S. E. and N. W. by two Streams, which form two natural Ditches between twenty and twenty-five Fathom deep.

*Description  
of the Fort.*

Plate XIII. Page 92. explain'd in English.

The Profile of the Fort of *VALPARAISO*, by the Line A. B.

1. The Key before the Battery.
2. The low Battery, call'd Castillo Blanco, or the White Castle.
3. The Stairs and Ascent to go up to the Fort under Cover of the Epaulment.
4. The Corps du Garde.
5. The Place for setting up the Colours.
6. The Fort.
7. The Chappel.
8. The Corps du Garde.
9. The Magazines.
10. The Rampart.
11. The Fort next the Mountain.
12. The Half-Bastion over the Town.
13. The Rhoades that supplies the Place with Water.

The Profile by the Line C. D.

- A. The Brest of S. Augustin.
  - B. The Berm, or Foreland about the Fort.
  - C. The Flank of the Bastion of S. Augustin.
  - D. The Faces of the Demi-Bastions.
  - E. The Flank of the Demi-Bastions.
  - F. The Gate in the Middle of the Curtain next the Mountain.
  - G. The Corps du Garde.
  - H. Magazines and Lodgings.
  - I. The Brook.
  - K. The Cleft.
  - L. The Curate's House.
  - M. The Houses of the Town.
- Echelle des Profils double de celle du Plan, The Scale of the Profiles, being double that of the Plan.

The Prospect next the Anchoring-Place.

- a. The Gate of the Fort, on the Land-Side.
- b. The Gate to go down to the Low Battery and to the Town.
- c. The Gate to the Low Battery, at the Foot of the Stairs of the Upper Fort.
- d. The Parish-Church.
- e. The Governor's House.
- f. The Church and Monastery of S. Augustin.
- g. The Redans, or indented Work of S. Augustin.
- h. Spanish Ships lying in the Bay.

finck

PROFIL DU FORT DE VALPARAÏSSO PAR LA LIGNE A. B.



- Rennuy
1. Quay au devant de la Batterie
  2. Batterie basse ou Casillo Blanco
  3. Escalier et rempe pour monter au fort a couvert de l'epaulement 3
  4. Corps de Garde
  5. Lieu ou se met le pavillon
  6. Porte
  7. La Chapelle
  8. Corps de Garde
  9. Magasin
  10. Rempart
  11. Porte du Cote de la montagne
  12. Demi bastion sur la bourgade
  13. Panseron qui fournit l'eau

PROFIL Par la ligne C. D



- Rennuy du 2<sup>e</sup> profil
- A. Coste de S. Augustin
  - B. Digue au tour du fort
  - C. Flanc du bastion de S. Augustin
  - D. Flanc du deux bastions
  - E. Flanc du 4<sup>e</sup> deux bastions
  - F. Porte au milieu de la Courtine du cote de la montagne
  - G. Corps de garde
  - H. Magasin et logement
  - I. Panseron K. Grenasse
  - L. Maison du Cof
  - M. Maison de la bourgeoisie

VEUE DU CÔTÉ DU MOUVILLAGE



- Rennuy de la vue
- a. Porte du fort du Cote de terre
  - b. Porte pour descendre a la batterie basse et a la bourgade
  - c. Porte de la batterie basse au pied de l'escalier du haut fort
  - d. Escalier parvenu au fort
  - e. Maison du gouverneur
  - f. Eglise et couvent de S. Augustin
  - g. Redent de S. François
  - h. Nombreux Epaves qui chargent de l'eau



sunk down almost to the Level of the Sea. Thus it is absolutely parted from the Neighbouring Eminences, which are a little higher.

The Side next the Sea is naturally so steep, that there is no going up without much Difficulty, and on the Land Side, or next the high Mountain, it is defended by a Ditch, which crosses from one Stream to the other, and thus cuts off the Enclosure of the Fortrefs something near to a Square. The Situation of the Place would not permit the making of a regular Fortification; it cannot properly be call'd any other than Walls of Intrenchment, following the Compa's of the Height, which flank one another but very little, and sometimes not at all. At the Middle of the Wall, which is above the Town, there is a little *Redan*, or indented Work, of seven Fathoms in Front, with a *Guerite*, or Sentinel's Box.

The opposite Side, which is above the Stream of *S. Augustin*, is only defended by the Flank of a Demi-Bastion, which forms a dead Angle, the Face whereof makes too oblique a Defence. The Side next the Mountain, consists of a Courtin of 26 Fathoms, and of two Demi-Bastions of 20 Fathoms Face and 11 Flank, so that the Line of Defence is but of 45 Fathoms. All this Part is built with Brick, rais'd 25 Foot in height on a Berm, or Foreland, being a small space of Ground between the Wall and the Moat. The Depth of the Ditch is about ten Foot, and its Breadth three Fathoms towards the Salliant-Angles, whence it has its Defence to the Angle of the Epaule, or Shoulder of the Bastion. It is dug, or cut, in a soft Rock, which has been made a little steep at the two Ends, to render it inaccessible by way of the Streams. The Parapets are but two Foot and a Half thick, and the rest of the Enclosure of the Place is only a Piece of Masonry made up of Rubbish, weak enough. There is no Rampart but on the Land-Side, to cover the Fortrefs, and hinder its being overlook'd by the Mountain, which rises gently: But the Misfortune is, that the Flanks can be batter'd in Reverse, that is, on the  
Backs,

Backs, and the Curtins and Faces enshaded, nor scou'd along their whole Length by neighbouring Eminences within Musket-Shot, so that it is very easy to render them useles. At the Foot of the high Fort, adjoining to the Town, is a Battery of nine Pieces of Cannon, rais'd thirteen Foot high, on a Key of the same Height, whence they can fire upon the Anchoring-Place level with the Waters. But besides that it has no Defence from its Position, it is commanded by all the Parts about. It is call'd *Castillo Blanco*, or *White-Castle*, because it has been whitened, that it may be seen at a Distance. Behind that Battery, are the Gate, the Stairs, and the Ascent, which lead from the Town to the Fortrefs along a Way cover'd with a Piece of Wall, and higher up, a *Boyan*, or Branch of a Trench, the Epaulment whereof does not cover the Gate of the Body of the Place, which is all open to the Road.

In the Middle of the Curtin, on the Side next the Mountain, is another Gate, to which they climb up out of the Ditch for want of a Drawbridge. That Way passes the Conduit of Water drawn from the Stream of *S. Augustin* for the upper Fort, which might be easily cut off, and the Garrison could have no other but that of the Rivuler, which runs from the Bottom of the Stream of *S. Francis* through the Middle of the Town. Thus we see how little the Fortrefs of *Valparaiso* is to be fear'd, if Men were landed, as may be done in fair Weather, at that open Shore, which is at the Bottom of the Road, at the Place call'd *Almendral*, where the Cannon can scarce do any Harm.

Cannon.

In the low Battery there are 9 Brass Guns, from 12 to 18 Pound Ball, Spanish Weight, whereof no two can fire upon that Landing-Place; and the rather, for that it is almost half a League distant. In the Upper-Fort there are five, from six to twelve Pound Ball, and two little Drakes, making in all 16 Brass Guns. I must here take Notice by the By, that this Artillery was put into a Condition to be of Use by the Carpenters of *Buissonat*, Captain of the Ship *la Clere*, in the Year 1712. But had not the Governor been

more

more grateful than the President of *Santiago*, for the Service he did the *Spaniards*, he had been the first at feeling the Exactness of the Work on Account of a little Difference in trading.

At the Foot of the Fortrefs, in a little Gut, or narrow Space, is the Borough or Town of *Valparaiso*, consisting of about a hundred poor Houses, without any Order, and of several Heights; it also stretches out along the Sea, where the Stores of Corn or Granaries are. As little as the Place is, there are, besides the Parish, two Monasteries; the one of *Franciscans*, and the other of *Augustins*. Of 150 Families there may be in the Place, there are scarce 30 of them Whites; the rest are Blacks, Mulatto's, and Mestizo's. The Number of Men able to bear Arms there is very inconsiderable; but the Neighbouring Dwellings, or Farms, upon the first Signal from the Fortrefs, furnish six Troops of Horse, mounted at their own Expence; most of whom have no other Arms but Swords, which the Whites always wear at the vilest Employments. Upon Notice given by the Sentinels kept along the Coast, they are very regular in drawing together, at least, some Part of those Troops, when a Ship appears which is not thought to be *Spanish* built. We have often heard a Shot in the Night by way of Alarm, upon the least Suspicion, and without any Ground.

Some Days after our Arrival, the second Merchant of our Ship obtain'd Leave of the President to go to *Santiago*, on the Business of Trade.

During that Interval, the *S. Charles*, a *French Ship*, Ship cast away. bought by the *Spaniards*, was cast away on the most Easterly Island of *John Fernandes*, 80 Leagues West from *Valparaiso*, as it was coming to trade *Bacallan*, or Salt Cod, of which some *French Men* had a Bilhery there, under the Direction of one *Apremont*, formerly one of the King's Guards. Sailing along the Coast, the Ship struck on a Shoal, so near the Land, that all the Men were saved. Some of them ventur'd to come in their Boat to *Valparaiso*, to desire.

desire of the Governor to send a Ship to fetch off the Fishermen left on the Island, and lade what dry Fish they had. Upon our Offers of Service before made to the President, he desired our Ship *Mary* for that effect; but she being incumber'd with Goods, we could not grant it; so that he was obliged to send the *S. Dominick*, a Spanish Ship newly come from *Callao* to lade Corn, which sail'd the 1st, and return'd the 14th of *October*.

John Fernandes  
Island.

That most Easterly Island of *John Fernandes* would be very fruitful, if cultivated: There is no Want of Wood and Water; there are wild Swine and Goats, and a prodigious Quantity of Fish: The Road where Ships anchor has a good Bottom, but there is much Water close under the Shore. There the *English* and *French* Buccaniers often had their Retreat, when they were ranging the Coast about the Year 1682.

The great Plenty of Commodities the Country was furnish'd with at the Time of our Arrival, and the low Price they bore, made us resolve not to sell, till the Trade was somewhat more advantageous; which reduced us to a tiresome Idleness, and made us seek out for some Diversion. The Festival of the Rosary came on the 2d of *October*, which entertain'd us eight Days successively.

Festival of  
the Rosary.

This Festival among the *Spaniards* is one of the first Class; they kept it with as much, nay, I dare say, more Veneration, than those of the most sacred Mysteries of our Religion: For solemnizing of it, there were Illuminations on the Eve, and Fireworks, consisting of some Sky-Rockets, made in Canes instead of Cartridges, and several Volleys of Chambers. The three next Days a private Person entertain'd the Publick with a Bull Feast, which I thought did not much satisfy my Curiosity. We saw nothing there that was worth looking at, but only a Man astride on one of those mettled Animals, with Spurs, the Rowels whereof were four Inches Diameter, after the Country Fashion. That Engagement was perform'd in a Place hemm'd in with Scaffolds, fill'd with as many People



ple as there were Inhabitants, who are much delighted with that Sport. The three next Days they acted Plays in the same Place, before the Gate of *S. Francis's* Church, by Candle-light, in the open Air. It would be hard to relate the Subjects, so much they vary'd and changed; to speak properly, they were no other than Interludes of Farces, mixed with Dancing of several Sorts, well enough perform'd, and even fine, after the Manner of the Country, bating the Symphony, which consisted in only one Harp, and some Guitars; but that which made their Recitative ridiculous, and no way edifying, was an impertinent Mixture they made of the Praises of our *Lady of the Rosary*, with downright Buffoonry, and Obscenities not clean couch'd.

After this Festival, being tired with seeing nothing continually but a Village, I bethought me of seeing the Capital of the Country, of which the Inhabitants gave me great Accounts; but it being requisite for that Purpose to have the President's Leave, which I would not ask, for fear, lest, being acquainted with my Profession, he should refuse it me, I pretended to go away to embarque at *La Conception*, with a *French* Captain, who was returning to *France*. The great Credit he had given the President, had purchased him his Friendship; so I went with him under that Pretence to *Santiago*, as it were only taking it in my Way, without fearing to be stopp'd, and sent back with Fetters at my Heels, as had happen'd to some *French* Men, who went thither without Leave. A Privateer Captain, who having lost his Ship at *Buenos Ayres*, was passing through *Santiago* towards the *South Sea*, to endeavour to embarque on some *French* Ship, was imprison'd upon no other Account.

It might be here ask'd, why the *French*, who go to *Santiago*, are so ill used. There are two Reasons for it: The first, because, by the Laws of *Spain*, Strangers are forbid entering the Colonies of the *South Sea*; the second and chiefest is, because the Merchants of the City, among whom

Dangerous  
going to  
Santiago.

Reason why.

whom the President must be reckoned, complain, that the *French* carry Goods thither, which they sell cheaper than the Shops, and by that means ruin their Trade; so that I was to take double Precautions.

Foot from  
Valparaiso  
to Santiago.

We set out from *Valparaiso* on the Eve of *All Saints*, and pass'd the great Road of *Zapata*. I was much amazed the first Day's Journey, to see not only that it must be perform'd without drawing Bit, but that at Night we must lie in the open Field, for want of a House, tho' I had been promis'd a good Lodging; but I was inform'd, that what they call *Alojamiento*, or Lodging in *Chili*, only signifies a Place where there is Water and Pasture for the Mules. However, we had pass'd within half a Quarter of a League of *Zapata*, which is a Hamlet, and the only one there is in 30 Leagues traveling; but it is not the Custom of the Country to lie in Houses.

Zapata  
Mountain.

Poangué  
Val.

Cuesta de  
Prado Mountain.  
Podaguel  
River.

The next Morning we pass'd over the Mountain of *Zapata*, which is very high; and after crossing the Vale of *Poangué*, where a little River runs, which is dangerous in Winter rainy Weather, we pass'd another Mountain more difficult than the former, call'd *La Cuesta de Prado*, and went to lie at the Descent on the other side, on the Bank of the little River of *Podaguel*. During those two Days, we scarce saw any Lands till'd; all the Plains are desert; they are only full of a Sort of Thorny Trees, which make the Roads very incommodious.

At length, on the 20th of *October* in the Morning, we arrived at *Santiago*, which was but four Leagues from our Lodging beyond *Podaguel*. Thus I reckon'd that it is eight and twenty Leagues from *Valparaiso*, tho' *Herrera* reckons but fourteen.

### The Description of the City of Santiago, Capital of Chili.

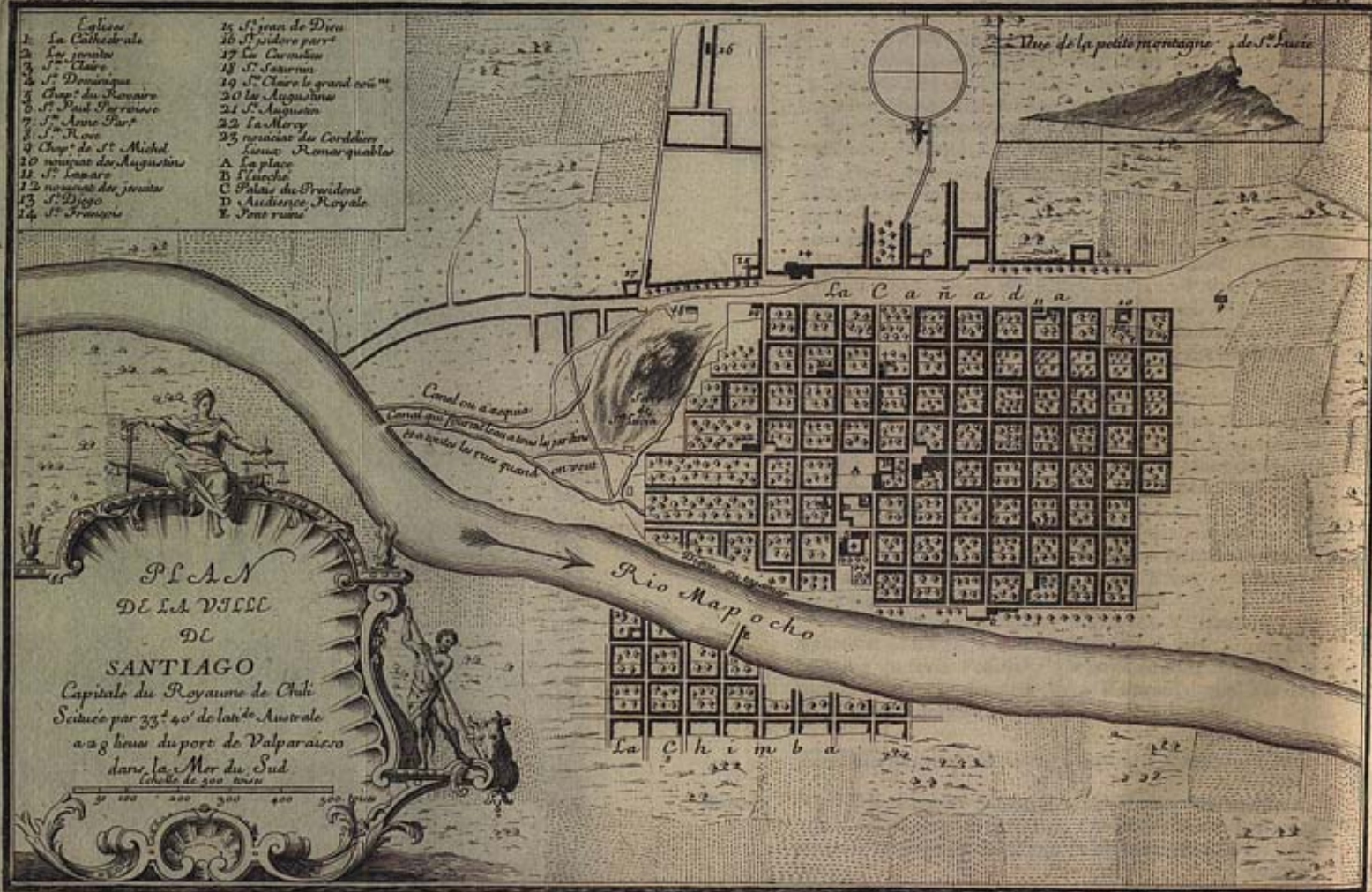
Situation.

THE City of *Santiago*, or *S. James* the Apostle, is seated in 33 Degrees 40 Minutes of South Latitude, at the West Foot of the Chain of Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*,

Plan of the [illegible] [illegible]



- |                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| 1. La Cathédrale                  | 15. St Jean de Dieu                      |
| 2. Les Jovato                     | 16. St Jovato par <sup>te</sup>          |
| 3. St Claire                      | 17. La Carmélite                         |
| 4. St Domingue                    | 18. St Saturne                           |
| 5. Chap <sup>e</sup> du Royaire   | 19. St Claire le grand cou <sup>te</sup> |
| 6. St Paul Ferrisier              | 20. St Augustin                          |
| 7. St Anne Par <sup>te</sup>      | 21. St Augustin                          |
| 8. St Nicolas                     | 22. La Mercy                             |
| 9. Chap <sup>e</sup> de St Michel | 23. Convent des Cordeliers               |
| 10. Convent des Augustins         | lieux Remarquables                       |
| 11. St Leonart                    | A. La place                              |
| 12. Convent des Jovato            | B. Marché                                |
| 13. St Diego                      | C. Palais du Prévost                     |
| 14. St François                   | D. Audience Royale                       |
|                                   | E. Fontaine                              |



**PLAN**  
 DE LA VILLE  
 DE  
**SANTIAGO**  
 Capitale du Royaume de Chili  
 Située par 33° 40' de lat<sup>de</sup> Australe  
 à 23 lieues du port de Valparaiso  
 dans la Mer du Sud  
 Echelle de 500 toises



Canal ou a égues  
 Canal qui jectait l'eau dans le port de  
 St. Jovato le long du canal

La Cañada

Rio Mapocho

La Chimba

*Zillera*, which runs quite through *South America* from North to South: It stands in a beautiful Plain of above 25 Leagues Surface, closed to the East by the Foot of the *Cordillera* Mountain, on the West by the Mountains of *Prado* and *Poangué*, on the North by the River of *Colina*, and on the South by that of *Maypo*.

It was founded by *Peter de Baldivia*, in the Year 1541. *Foundation.*  
That Conqueror of *Chili* having found a great Number of Indian Dwellings in the Vale of *Mapocho*, by it made a Judgment of the Fertility of the Soil; and the delightful  
O 2 Situation

*Plate XIV. Page 99. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the City of *SANTIAGO*, Capital of the Kingdom of *Chili*, in 33 Degrees, 40 Minutes of South Latitude, 28 Leagues from the Port of *Valparaiso*, in the *South-Sea*.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| Churches.                                  | 35. S. John of God.                          |
| 1. <i>The Cathedral.</i>                   | 16. S. Isidore, a Parish.                    |
| 2. <i>The Jesuits.</i>                     | 17. <i>The Carmelites.</i>                   |
| 3. S. Clare.                               | 18. S. Saturninus.                           |
| 4. S. Dominick.                            | 19. S. Clare, the Great Monastery.           |
| 5. <i>The Chappel of the Rosary.</i>       | 20. <i>The Augustins.</i>                    |
| 6. S. Paul, a Parish.                      | 21. S. Augustin.                             |
| 7. S. Anne, a Parish.                      | 22. <i>The Mercenarians.</i>                 |
| 8. S. Rose.                                | 23. <i>The Noviciate of the Franciscans.</i> |
| 9. S. Michael's Chappel.                   |  |
| 10. <i>The Noviciate of the Augustins.</i> | Places of Note.                              |
| 11. S. Lazarus.                            | A. <i>The Square.</i>                        |
| 12. <i>The Noviciate of the Jesuits.</i>   | B. <i>The Bishop's Palace.</i>               |
| 13. S. James.                              | C. <i>The President's Palace.</i>            |
| 14. S. Francis.                            | D. <i>The Royal Courts.</i>                  |
|  | E. <i>Armad's Bridge.</i>                    |

*Vue de la petite Montagne de S. Lucie, A Prospect of the little Hill of S. Lucy.*

*La Campada, The Reed Ground.*

*Canal, ou Azéquia, A Canal, or Trench.*

*Canal qui fournit l'eau à tous les Jardins, & à tous les Rues quand on veut, The Canal or Trench which supplies all the Gardens with Water, and the Streets, when thought fit.*

*Cerro de Santa Lucía, S. Lucy's Hill.*

*Digue, ou Tamará, A Dike, or Fence, against the Water.*

*Río Mapocho, Mapocho River.*

*La Chimba, A Place so call'd.*

*The Plan.*

Situation of the Place seeming to him proper to execute the Design he had of building a Town, he caus'd the Plan of it to be mark'd out in Squares, like a Draught-Board, by the same Measures as those of *Lima*, that is, 150 *Varas*, or Spanish Yards, or 64 Fathoms on each Side; whence came that Measure call'd *Quadra*, which they use in that Country to divide the Till'd Land, as it were into Acres. Each of those Squares of Houses was divided into four Parts, call'd by them *Solares*, for every Person to have a commodious Apartment. In short, tho' in Process of Time, that Space has been divided into several Parts: They have still so much Room, that there is scarce a House in the Town without a Court before it, and a Garden behind.

*Waters.*

The Town is water'd on the East Side by the little River of *Mapocho*, which is swell'd in Summer by the melting of the Snow on the Mountain call'd *La Cordillera*, and by the Rains in Winter: However, it is, for the most part, fordable. Being very rapid, its Water is almost always foul; but the Inhabitants, who have no other, take care to filtrate, or strain it through a Sort of Stones fit for that Purpose, especially at the Time when the Snows thaw, because it is then unwholsome, if not cleans'd: They might, nevertheless, without any great Trouble, bring Water from the Neighbouring Springs, which are not above half a League from the City.

*Dyke and Trenches.*

To prevent Inundations when the River overflows, they have built a Wall and a Dyke, by means whereof they at all Times convey Rivulets or Trenches to water their Gardens, and to cool the Streets when they think fit; an inestimable Conveniency to be found so naturally in few Cities in *Europe*. Besides these small Trenches, they draw larger Streams to drive the Mills there are in several Parts of the City, for the Conveniency of each Quarter.

*Streets.*

The Streets are laid with the four Cardinal Points of the Horizon, North, South, East and West. They are five Fathoms wide, exactly in a Line, and neatly paved with small Stones, divided in the Nature of Furrows, by others larger,

larger, crossing both Ways at equal Distances, and leaving in the Middle about two Foot and a half of running Water, to wash or cool them when they please. Those which run East and West, receive their Waters from the first Canals of the River; and those which cross from North to South from those which run in the Middle of the Squares of Houses a-cross the Gardens and the Streets, under little Bridges, whence it is caus'd to flow out. Were it not for that Relief, the Gardens would produce Nothing, for Want of Rain, during eight Months in the Year; whereas, by this Means, the City affords all the Delights of the Country, in relation to Fruit and Herbs; in the Day the cool Shade, and at Night the sweet Scents of Orange-Flowers and *Floripondio's*, which perfume the Houses.

The Earthquakes, which are there frequent, have much *Earthquakes.* endamaged the City; and among them, those of 1647 and 1657: The first of them was so violent, that it almost overturn'd the whole, and left such unwholsome Vapours in the Air, that all the Inhabitants died, except about 3 or 400. Since that Time there has been some little Alteration in the Plan, by the enlarging of the Monasteries; some of which have extended themselves beyond the strait Lines: However, it is still so open, and well distributed for the Conveniency of the publick and private Persons, that if the Houses were raised above the Edge of the Street, and of a better Structure, it would be a very agreeable City.

Much about the Middle of it is the great Square, call'd *Royal Square.* *Plaza Real*, or the Royal Square, made by the Suppression of one Quarter, the Surface whereof contains 4096 Fathoms, besides the Breadth of four Streets; so that there are eight Avenues leading into it. The West Side contains the Cathedral and the Bishop's Palace; the North Side, the President's new Palace, the Royal Court, the Council House, and the Prison: The South Side is a continued Row of Portico's, or uniform Arches, for the Conveniency of Merchants, with a Gallery over it to see the  
Bull

Houses and  
Churches.

Bull Feasts: The East Side has nothing peculiar. In the middle of the Square is a Fountain, with a Brass Basin. The Structure of the Houses is the same as is used throughout all *Chili*; they have only a Ground Floor, built with unburnt Bricks, excepting that here they are handsomer than elsewhere, and the Churches richer in gildings; but all the Architecture is of an ill Taste, excepting that of the *Jesuites*, which is a *Latin Cross*, arch'd, on a *Dorick Order*; they have all a small open Place before them for the Conveniency of Calashes and of Processions: Most of them are built with Brick; there are some of regular Stone, as also of small Stone, which they have from a small Rock that is at the East End of the City, call'd *S. Lucy's Hill*, from the Top of which there is an entire View of all the City and Parts adjacent; which afford a very agreeable Landskip.

Towns in  
Chili.

This City is the Capital of *Chili*, a large Kingdom, but so ill peopled, that in 400 Leagues Extent from North to South, there are scarce five Towns better than our good Villages, not including that we are speaking of: Those Towns are *Castro* in the Island of *Chilo*, *La Concepcion* or *Penco*, *Chillan*, *Coquimbo* or *La Serena*, and *Copiapo*: There is a 6th beyond the Mountain call'd *La Cordillera*, which is *Mendoza*. The best Boroughs are *Maule*, *Vulparaiso*, *Quillota*, *Aconcagua*, and *S. John de la Cordillera*, where there are very rich Silver Mines; but which cannot be wrought above four Months in the Year, because of the Snows. Throughout all the rest, there are only Farms, which they call *Estancias*, so remote from one another, that the whole Country, as I have been inform'd from good Hands, cannot raise 20000 Whites fit to bear Arms, and particularly *Santiago* 2000; the rest are all *Mestizo's* *Mulatto's*, and *Indians*, whose Number may be three Times as great, without including the Friendly *Indians* beyond the River *Bio Bio*, who are reckon'd to amount to 25000, whose Fidelity is not to be depended on.

Number of  
Inhabitants.

Whit



What may be said in general of the Strength of the *Spaniards* in that Country is, that their Military Power is composed of Men who are much scatter'd about, not disciplin'd, and ill arm'd; that the North Part of *Chili* is almost desert, and that the conquer'd *Indians* in the South Part are not well affected towards that Nation, whom they look upon as their Tyrants, whose Yoke they would willingly shake off; and in Conclusion, that the *Spaniards* have no Fortifications in their Lands, where they may secure themselves, unless they fly to the Mountains; and against a Maritime Force, they have none but those of *Baldovia* and *Valparaiso*; the one full of Men, who are Prisoners, and the other ill built, and in a bad Condition. I do not here reckon the Fort of *Chacao*, in the Island of *Chiloé*, which does not deserve that Name, either on Account of its Structure, or its Stores.

The Governor of the Kingdom has his usual Residence at *Santiago*. The *Sieur de Fer* rely'd too much on ancient Relations, and was mistaken in the Discourse he inserts in the last Chart of the *South-Sea*, where he says, The President resides at *La Conception*. Formerly, those who were zealous for the King's Interest, liv'd at *La Conception*, or on the Frontiers of *Arauco*, to carry on the Conquests over the *Indians*; and they are obliged to go thither every three Years; but at present they save themselves the Trouble, because they are at Peace with those *Indians*, and that the Royal Allowance call'd *Situado* is not paid.

The Governor also takes the Title of President and Captain-General, on account of his two Employments of the Sword and Gown, and from the latter he derives his Name, as presiding in the Royal Court, composed of four *Oidores*, or Judges, two *Fiscals*, or Attorneys General, one of whom has the Charge of Protecting the *Indians* and the Affairs of the *Croisade*; also an *Alguazil Mayor de Corte*, or Head Serjeant of the Court, the Chancery-Secretary, Reporters, &c. There lies no Appeal from a Judgment upon a Writ of Error, or Review upon a Royal Decision,

Decision, which only takes Cognisance of Matters of Moment, or such as have been before decided in other Courts, unless it be to the Royal Council of the *Indies*.

*The City Council.*

Lesser Matters are decided in the Council-House, which like that of *La Concepcion* is composed of two *Alcaldes*, a Royal Ensign, an *Alguazil Mayor*, or Head Serjeant, one Depository-General, and six *Regidores* or Aldermen, the one half whereof are *Encomendaderos*, or such as have *Indians* committed to them, others only Inhabitants, and others call'd Proprietors, because they have bought their Employments, the Badge whereof is a Wand six or seven Foot long.

*President.*

Tho' the President is subordinate to the Viceroy of *Peru*, the Distance very much lessens the Subordination; so that he may be look'd upon in *Cbili* as a Viceroy himself, for the seven Years his Government lasts. He that was then in the Post was call'd *Don John Andres Ustavis*, formerly a Merchant in *Sevil*, who, tho' he had changed his Condition, had not changed his Inclination or Occupation; for notwithstanding the Laws of the Kingdom, he traded publickly with the *French*, who have considerably rais'd his Fortune by the great Credit they have given him. It is true, he has fairly made Satisfaction, a Thing to be commended in a Country where a Man may abuse his Authority, where they borrow with more Ease than elsewhere, but do not pay so well.

*Church Government.*

The Ecclesiastical State, as well as the Secular, has a Dependence on *Lima*, the Metropolis of *Peru*; but the Bishop's Power is very much circumscribed; first by the Laws of the Country, which do not allow him the Disposal of any Cure; he has only a Right to present three Persons, of whom the President chooses one in the King's Name, whatsoever Month it is in; so that even the Pope has not his Turn, as in *Europe*. Secondly, the Religious Men pretend to encroach upon the Functions of Curates, which the *Jesuites* think they have a Right to perform where-soever they please, not to mention an infinite Number  
of

of other Privileges they have in the *Indies*; and whereof they were making a particular Theological Treatise at the Time when I was at *Santiago*; for which Reason the Parish Churches are little resorted to there: There are three besides the Cathedral, being *S. Paul*, *S. Anne*, and *S. Isidore*, whose Churches are the smallest, and the most neglected. There are eight Monasteries of Men, three of *Franciscans*, two of *Jesuites*, one of the *Mercenarians*, one of the Brethren of *S. John of God*, and one of *Dominicans*, which are the only Orders establish'd throughout all *Chili*: There are five of Nuns, one of *Carmelites*, one of *Augustins*, one of *Quezels*, a Confraternity of the Rule of *S. Augustin*, and two of *Poor Clares*: All these Communities are numerous, and in some of them there are above 200 Persons.

The Tribunal of the Inquisition of *Chili* is also settled *Inquisition* there; the Commissary General resides at *Santiago*, and his Officers, as those call'd *Familiars*, and Commissaries are dispers'd through all the Towns and Villages subordinate to him. They employ themselves upon the Notions of Sorcerers true or false, and certain Crimes, the Cognizance whereof belongs to the Inquisition, as *Polygamy*, &c. For as for Hereticks, I am sure none fall into their Hands. They there study so little, that they are not subject to run astray through too much Curiosity; only the Desire to distinguish themselves from others by an honourable Title, makes some Church-men learn a little School Divinity and Morality, to bear the Name of Licentiate, or Doctor, which the *Dominicans* and the *Jesuites* can conferr by a Privilege obtain'd from the Popes, tho' there be no University establish'd at *Santiago*; but these Titles are to be had of them so easily, that there are some among the Licentiates who know little *Latin*, which they do not look upon as necessary for attaining the Sciences.

Whilst I was taken up in viewing and getting acquainted with the City of *Santiago*, an Affair happen'd, which oblig'd me to withdraw. The Boat belonging to the Ship, *Unlucky Accident* call'd

call'd the *Virgin of Grace* of *S. Malo*, which had put into *La Concepcion*, in her Way back to *France*, being laden with some Goods to be set ashore, occasion'd some Difference between the *French* and the *Corregidor's* Guards, who oppos'd it. The said *Corregidor* resenting that Opposition, went away to the Ship's Store-house, follow'd by the Mob, and plunder'd it; but a *French* Man firing a Piece that was charged with small Shot, unfortunately kill'd a Soldier. All the *French* then in the Town were committed to Gaol, Search being made for them from House to House. The Captain immediately sent an Officer to the President, to complain of that Violence, and demand Justice. This Advice made some Noise at *Santiago*; and the *Spaniards* naturally hating our Nation, tho' we be never so little Blame-worthy, among them our Crimes are look'd upon as enormous: I therefore thought it convenient to withdraw myself, whilst the President and Council gave Judgment against the unfortunate Strangers, and condemn'd them to pay a Fine of 9000 Pieces of Eight.

### The Gold Mines of Tiltit.

THE earnest Desire I had to see Gold Mines, and new Places, made me take the Way of *Tiltit*, which is only two Leagues round about, to return to *Valparaiso*. That Country is somewhat less desert than the other of *Zapata*: There are now and then some Till'd Lands to be seen; and tho' there is a very uncooth Mountain to pass, there are none of those troublesome Defiles among the Thorny Trees, where a Man is torne on every Side. I arrived at *Tiltit*, a small Village seated a little above half way up a high Mountain, all full of Gold Mines; but besides that they are not very rich, the Stone of the Mine, or Mineral, is very hard, and there are few Labourers, since others richer have been discover'd elsewhere; as also, because the Mills want Water four Months in the Year. When I pass'd that Way, there were five of those Mills, which  
the

*Tiltit Village  
and Mines.*

the Spaniards call *Trapiche*, being made much after the Manner of those used in France to grind Apples for Cyder: They consist of a Trough, or great round Stone, about five or six Foot Diameter, with a circular Channel cut in it 18 Inches deep. This Stone is bored in the Middle, to let through the long Axle-tree of an Horizontal Wheel plac'd on it, and set round with Half Pitchers, on which the Water falls to make it turn; by that Means there comes to roll along the Circular Channel a Millstone, placed upright, and answering to the Axle-tree of the great Wheel. That Mill-stone is call'd *Volteadora*, or, that turns about; its usual Diameter is three Foot four Inches, and its Thickness ten, or fifteen Inches: Through the Center of it runs an Axle-tree, fix'd into the Main-tree, which causing it to turn vertically, grinds the Stone taken from the Mine, which those Country People call the Metal, and we, according to Founders Terms, the Ore. Some of it is white, some reddish, and some blackish; but most of it shews little or no Gold to the Eye.

When the Stones are a little broken, they put to them a certain Quantity of Mercury, or Quicksilver, which clings to the Gold the Mill has separated from the Stone it has ground: Then they let fall into the Circular Trough a Stream of Water, rapidly convey'd along a little Channel, to dissolve the Earth which it forces out at a Hole made for that Purpose. The Gold incorporated with the Mercury sinks to the Bottom, and is detain'd there by its own Weight: They grind in a Day half a *Caxon*, that is, 25 *Quintals*, or hundred Weight of the Ore; and when they have done grinding, they gather up that Paste of Gold and Quicksilver which lies at the Bottom of the deepest Part of the Trough; they put it into a Linnen Bag to squeeze out the Mercury, as near as they can; then they put it to the Fire for the rest to evaporate: And this is what they call *Oro en pinna*, or Gold' clung together like a Pine-Apple.

*Refining.*

In order to clear the Gold quite from the Quicksilver it is still impregnated with, the Lump must be run, and then they know the exact Weight, and the true Fineness. It is not done any otherwise there; the Weightiness of the Gold, and the Facility of its making an *Amalgama*, or *Paste* with the Mercury, makes the Dross immediately part from it. This is an Advantage the Gold Miners have over those of Silver; they every Day know what they get; whereas the others sometimes do not know it till two Months after, as shall be said in another Place.

*Gold weight.*

The Weight of Gold is regulated by *Castellano's*, and a *Castellano* is the hundredth Part of a *Spanish Pound Weight*: It is divided into eight *Tomines*; just six *Castellano's* and two *Tomines* make an Ounce. It is to be observ'd, that the *Spanish Weight* is 67 per Cent. less than the *French Standard*.

*Fineness.*

The Fineness of the Gold is reckon'd by *Quilates*, or Carats, limited to 24 for the highest; that of the Mines I speak of, is from 20 to 21.

*Prodell of Gold.*

According to the Nature of the Mines, and the Richness of the Veins, every *Caxon*, or 50 *Quintals*, that is, hundred Weight, yields four, five, or six Ounces; when it yields but two, the Miner does not make good his Charges, which often happens; but he has also sometimes good Amends made him, when he meets with good Veins; for the Gold Mines are, of all those which produce Metals, the most unequal; they follow a Vein, which grows wider, then narrower, and sometimes seems to be lost in a small Space of Ground. This Sport of Nature makes the Miners live in hopes of finding what they call the Purse, being the Ends of Veins, so rich, that they have sometimes made a Man wealthy at once; and this same Inequality sometimes ruins\* them, which is the Reason, that it is more rare to see a Gold Miner rich than a Silver Miner, or of any other Metal, tho' there be less Expence in drawing it from the Mineral, as shall be said hereafter: For this Reason also the Miners have particular Privileges; for they cannot

\* Gold hath been the Ruin of many, and their Desolation was present.  
Ecc. xxxi. 6.

cannot be sued to Execution on Civil Accounts, and Gold pays only a 20th Part to the King, which is call'd *Coro*, from the Name of a private Person, to whom the King made that Grant, because they used before to pay the Fifth, as they do of Silver.

The Gold Mines, like all others of what Metal soever, belong to him who first discovers them. There needs nothing but presenting a Petition to the Magistrates to have them adjudg'd to him. They measure on the Vein 80 *Varas*, or Spanish Yards in length, that is, 246 Foot, and 40 in breadth, for him it is adjudg'd to, who chooses that Space as he thinks fit. Then they measure 80 more, which belong to the King; the rest goes to the first Claimer, according to the same Measure, who disposes of it as he pleases. That which belongs to the King, is sold to the highest Bidder, who is willing to purchase an unknown and uncertain Treasure. Farthermore, those who are willing to labour themselves, easily obtain of the Miner a Vein to work on: What they get out of it is their own, paying him the King's Duty, and the Hire of the Mill, which is so considerable, that some are satisfy'd with the Profit it yields, without employing any to work for them in the Mines.

Formerly the Practice was otherwise, and there were more Formalities in adjudging the Mines in Germany, as may be seen in *Agricola*, L. 4. He who had made a Discovery, signify'd the same to the Intendant of the Mines, who repair'd to the Place with another Officer and two Witnesses, to examine the Claimer, where his Mine was, which he was obliged to point out, and, at the same time, to swear that it was his own: Then the Intendant assign'd him, for his Part, a certain Extent, containing two Acres and a half, according to the Custom of the Country. Then he measur'd one for the Prince; another for the Princess, a Third for the Master of the House, a Fourth for the Cup-Bearer, a Fifth for the Chamberlain, and lastly, he kept one for himself.

To whom  
Mine belongs

Ancient Practice,  
as to  
Miner.

Departing

*Rich Stream.* Departing from *Tiltil*, I continued my Journey for *Valparaiso*. On the Descent of the Mountain on the West Side, they shew'd me a *Stream*, where there is a rich *Lavadero*, or Place for washing of Gold. They there sometimes find Bits or Lumps of pure Gold, which weigh about an Ounce; but the Water failing in the Summer, they cannot work there above three or four Months in the Year.

*Natural Crucifix.* The same Day I proceeded to *Limache*, a Village, where a Tree was found, the Figure whereof *Father Orvalle* gives, in his Relation of the Missions of *Chili*. There is such another at *Rincan*, two Leagues W. N. W. from *Santiago*. It is a Cross form'd by Nature, on which is a Crucifix of the same Wood, as it were in Bas Relief: The Carvers have spoil'd it, by having touch'd up several Parts; for there is now no seeing what it was when first found.

*Answer.* *Don Francisco Antonio de Montalvo*, mentions such a Tree found in the Year 1533, at *Callacate*, in the Territory of *Caxamalca*, in the Kingdom of *Peru*, on the Day of the Invention of the Holy Cross. *Don John Ruiz Bravo*, who discover'd it, having left it, it was again found in the same Place in 1677, on the Day of the Exaltation of the Cross: If these Circumstances are true, they have something miraculous. This Cross is 22 Foot long, and 15 in the Arms, whereof the Thickness of the Tree takes up a third Part. From its three Extremities, Branches sprout out, which form so many more little Crosses.

*Bad Traveling.* At length I arrived at *Valparaiso*, displeas'd with traveling in that Country, where neither Houles nor Provisions, nor Places to lodge, are to be found; so that Travelers must carry so much as their very Beds, unless they will comply to lie like the Natives on the Ground, upon Sheeps Skins, with the Sky for their Canopy. It is true, that way of traveling has this Advantage, That *Rablaire's* Quarter of an Hour, that is, when the Reckoning is to be paid, does not disturb a Man\*.

\* Note, That the Pasture along the Road is common by Order of the King.



To make amends for not having seen the Ore ground at *Titil*, I went, some Days after my Return, to see Gold taken by washing, near *Palma*, four Leagues E. and by S. from *Valparaiso*, where the *Jesuites* had Men at work for them.

They dig in the Bottom of Streams, in the inward Angles, which are form'd in Proceſs of Time, where they judge by certain Tokens that there may be Gold; for it does not appear to the Eye where it is. To facilitate this Digging, they let a Rivulet into it, and whilst it runs, they turn up the Earth, to the end that the Current may dissolve and carry it away the better. At length, when they are come to the Floor of Earth where the Gold is, they turn off the Stream to dig by Strength of Arms: That Earth they carry on Mules to a little Baſon, made in the Shape of a Smith's Bellows, into which they turn a little rapid Stream of Water to dissolve it; and to the end it may the better ſoak in and looſen the Gold that is mix'd with it, they continually ſtir it about with an Iron Hook, which alſo ſerves to gather the Stones, and theſe they throw out of the Baſon with their Hands. This Precaution is neceſſary, to the end they may not ſtop the Water-Courſe, which is to carry all away, except the Gold, whoſe great Weight makes it ſink to the Bottom of the Baſon, among a ſort of fine black Sand, where it is not much leſs hid than in the Earth, if there are no Grains at leaſt as big as a Lentil. There are often larger found; and at the Washing-Place I ſpeak of, they had found ſome of three Marks Weight, that is, twenty four Ounces. However, I do not queſtion but that abundance of ſmall Particles of Gold run out at that Channel from the Baſon, which might be eaſily remedy'd. In *Turingia*, and on the *Rhine*, to ſave that Loſs, they lay on the Channel ſome Linnen, Woollen, or Horſes or Ox Hides, to the end that the ſmall Grains of Gold may ſtick there; and afterwards they waſh the Skins to recover it. Thus the People of *Colebia* gather'd it, having laid the Skins of Beaſts in the hollow

Parts

Parts of Springs, which gave occasion to the Poets to invent the Fable of the Golden-Fleece carry'd off by the *Argonauts*.

At last, after turning off the Water, they gather up that Sand which remains at the Bottom of the Basin, and put it into a great Wooden Platter, in the Middle whereof is a little Hollow or Depth of about a Quarter of an Inch: They stir and turn it with their Hands in Water, so that all the Earth and Sand there, runs over the Edges, only the Gold, which that little Motion of the Hand cannot sufficiently remove, remains at the Bottom in Grains bigger or smaller than Sand, of all sorts of Shapes, pure, clean, and of its natural Colour, without adding any other Help of Art.

This Way of getting Gold is much more beneficial, when the Earth is indifferently rich, than working at the Mines. The Expence is but small; there is no need of any Mill, nor of Quicksilver, nor of Crows, and other Instruments, to break the Veins with much Labour; a few Shovels sometimes made of the Blade Bones of Oxen are sufficient to dissolve the Earth that is wash'd.

Almost all the Streams in *Chili* have Earth, whence Gold may be drawn, only the greater or lesser Quantity makes the Difference. It is commonly reddish, and small on the Surface; at about the Depth of a Man, it is mix'd with Grains of coarse Sand, or Gravel, where the Bed of Gold begins; and, digging deeper, there are Layers of Stony Bottom, as it were a moulding Rock, bluish, mix'd with abundance of yellow Straws, which a Man would be apt to take for Gold, but which, in Reality, are no other than the *Marcaffite*, or yellow Fire-stone, so small and light, that the Current of the Water carries them away. Below those Beds of Stone no more Gold is found; it seems to be detain'd above, as having fallen from a higher Place.

*Opinion about Gold.*

The most learned Men in the Country ascribe this Mixture of Gold with the Earth to the universal Flood, which overturn'd the Mountains, and consequently broke up the Mines,

Mines; and loofed the Gold, which the Waters drove into the lower Grounds, where it has continued to this Day.

This Opinion, which Mr. Woodward has very much en-  
 forc'd, is not well grounded on Scripture; which, instead of speaking of fuch Overturning, seems, on the contrary, to signify to us, that the Deluge made very little Alteration on the Surface of the Earth, since the second Time that Noab let go the Dove, she brought back an Olive Branch. It may perhaps be alledg'd, that it was a Piece that floated of a Tree torn up, or broken, since, according to the Report of Travelers, there are no Olive Trees about Mount Ararat, where the Ark rested, according to Tradition. Tho' that were so, it is at least likely, that the third Time she found something to subsist on, since she did not return, by which the Patriarch understood that the Waters were dry'd.

Without going back to such remote Times, I am of  
 Opinion, that the Winter Rains alone may have caused the  
 same Effect; they are so heavy in *Chili* during the Months  
 of *May, June, July* and *August*, and the Ground is so lit-  
 tle supported by Rocks, that every Day there are new  
 Breaks, or Channels, form'd and enlarged on the Declivity  
 of the Mountains, which visibly sink in an Infinity of  
 several Places.

The frequent Earthquakes have also, doubtless, occa-  
 sion'd great Alterations in that Country. *Acosta* tells us  
 of one, which in *Chili* overturn'd whole Mountains; the  
 falling of which stopp'd the Course of Rivers, and turn'd  
 them into Lakes, and made the Sea run several Leagues  
 beyond its Bounds, leaving the Ships upon dry Ground.

This Reason will not fit other Countries, where Gold  
 Dust is found, as in the Rivers of *Guinea*, and Parts adja-  
 cent; it may be supposed, with the Author of the Book,  
 entitul'd, *Curiositates Philosophice*, Lond. 1713, that the  
 Mountains have been overturn'd by a Fermentation; and  
 that the Mines, not yet rightly form'd, burst, and in Pro-  
 cess

cess of Time ran into the lower Parts, such as the Channels of Rivers.

Tho' we are not rightly inform'd of the Manner how great Movements or Alterations have been made in the Earth, yet there is no Reason to doubt of them, when we observe some Bodies that are found out of their natural Place, and particularly Shells. I have seen a Bank of them in the Island of *Quiriquina*, five or six Foot high, parallel with the Surface of the Sea, enclosed within an Eminence of Earth above 200 Foot high. Such Observations have been long since made in *Europe*, which have found the Learned much Employment, without being able to assign sufficient Reasons for it.

More probable Opinion.

It may also be supposed with many of the Natives of the Country, that the Gold is form'd in the Earth, even without any Mineral Vein; grounding their Opinion on this, that after many Years Gold has been found in the Earth that had been wash'd, as many Persons report it of the Washing-Places of *Andacol*, near *Coquimbo*. We shall examine this Opinion elsewhere.

Be it as it will, it is certain that those Washing-Places are very common in *Chili*; that the Negligence of the *Spaniards*, and the Want of Labourers, leave immense Treasures in the Earth, which they might easily enjoy; but as they do not confine themselves to small Advantages, they only apply themselves to the Mines, where a considerable Profit is to be found: If any such new Discovery is made, they all run thither. Thus have we seen *Copiapo* and *Lampanguy* peopled all on a sudden, and so many Workmen drawn thither, that in two Years they had erected six Mills at the latter of those Mines.

Lampanguy Mine.

The Mountain of *S. Christopher* of *Lampanguy* is near the *Cordillera* Ridge of Mountains, in about 31 Degrees of South Latitude, 80 Leagues from *Valparaiso*. In the Year 1710 many Mines were discover'd there of all Sorts of Metals, Gold, Silver, Iron, Lead, Copper and Tin, which overthrows the Arguments of the Author above-mention'd, who thinks that all the said Metals cannot be found in the same

same Place; but Experience proves the contrary, for Gold and Silver are often seen mix'd in the same Stone.

The Gold of *Lampangay* is from 21 to 22 Carats fine, the Ore is there hard; but two Leagues from thence, on the Mountain of *Llaoin*, it is soft, and almost crumbling; and there the Gold is in such fine Dust, that no Sign of it appears to the Eye.

It may be said in general, that all the Country is very rich, and that the Inhabitants are nevertheless very poor in Cash, because, instead of working at the Mines, they are satisfy'd with the Trade they drive of Hides, Tallow, dry'd Flesh, Hemp and Corn.

Trade of  
Chili.

The Hemp comes from the Vales of *Quillota*, *Aconagua*, *La Ligua*, *Limache*, and other Places.

The Vale of *Quillota* is nine Leagues N. E. and by N. from *Valparaiso*; it is one of the first Places where the Spaniards began to make Settlements, and to meet Indians, who oppos'd the Progress of their Conquests: That Opposition made that Vale and the River of *Obili*, which crosses it, famous; and as the first Names of a new Country are those which happen to be most taken Notice of, this same

Quillota  
Vale.

was afterwards given to all that great Kingdom, which the Spaniards call *Chile*, and Foreigners, corruptly, *Chili*. This is, doubtless, the true Etymology of the Name, which some Historians derive from an Indian Word, signifying Cold, according to them; for, in short, that Name would be very improper for so agreeable and temperate a Country as that is.

Chili, why so  
call'd. Her-  
era, Dec. 7.

Be that as it will, the Vale of *Quillota* did so abound in Gold, that General *Bultrera* thought fit to erect a Fort there for the Security of the Settlement, and to curb the Indians he employ'd to get the Gold; but they possess'd themselves of it by a very ingenious Stratagem. One of them, on an appointed Day, carry'd thither a Pot full of Gold Dust, to excite the Curiosity and Covetousness of the Garrison-Soldiers. In short, they all soon gather'd about that little Treasure; and whilst they were busy contending

Indian Str-  
agem.

about their private Interest to divide the same, an Ambuscade of *Indians*, conceal'd and arm'd with Arrows, rush'd in upon them, and found them defenceless. The Victors then destroy'd the Fort, which has never been rebuilt since; and they have given over searching for Gold there. At present that Vale is only remarkable for the Fertility of the Soil: There is in it a Village of about 150 Whites, and perhaps 300 *Indians* and *Mestizo's*, who trade in Corn, Hemp, and Cordage, which are carry'd to *Valparaiso*, to rig and lade the *Spanish* Ships, which thence transport it to *Callao*, and other Parts of *Peru*. They make their Cordage white, and without Tar, because they have none but what is brought them from *Mexico* and *Guayaquil*, which burns the Hemp, and is only good for the Timber of Ships. For the rest, the Plain of *Quillota* is very agreeable in itself: I was there at the Carnival Time, or *Strove's* Fide, which, in that Country, falls about the Beginning of Autumn. I was charm'd to behold such great Plenty of all *European* choice Fruits, which have been transplanted thither, and answer to Admiration; especially Peaches, of which Trees there are little Groves, that are never pruned, nor have any other Care taken of them, than to cause Trenches, drawn from the River of *Chili*, to water their Rooms, to supply the Want of Rain in the Summer.

Corn Country.

The River of *Chili* is also call'd the River of *Aconcagua*, because it comes from a Vale of that Name, famous for the prodigious Quantity of Corn carry'd from it yearly. From thence, and from the Country about *Santiago*, towards the *Cordillera* Ridge of Mountains, comes all that is transported from *Valparaiso* to *Callao*, *Lima*, and other Parts of *Peru*. Unless a Man be acquainted with the Nature of the Soil, which generally yields 60 or 80 for one, he cannot comprehend how so desert a Country, where no till'd Lands are to be seen, but only in some Vales at ten Leagues Distance from each other, can furnish so much Corn, besides what is requisite for the Maintenance of the Inhabitants.

During



1. *Stachys recta*  
 2. *Stachys recta*  
 3. *Stachys recta*  
 4. *Stachys recta*  
 5. *Stachys recta*  
 6. *Stachys recta*  
 7. *Stachys recta*  
 8. *Stachys recta*  
 9. *Stachys recta*  
 10. *Stachys recta*

1. *Stachys recta*  
 2. *Stachys recta*  
 3. *Stachys recta*  
 4. *Stachys recta*  
 5. *Stachys recta*  
 6. *Stachys recta*  
 7. *Stachys recta*  
 8. *Stachys recta*  
 9. *Stachys recta*  
 10. *Stachys recta*



*Santolina foliis viridibus  
acutis Vulgo Quinchamali*

*Cytisus arboreus  
floribus spicatis  
dilute caeruleis  
Vulgo Cullen*



During the eight Months we stay'd at *Valparaiso*, thirty Ships sail'd from thence laden with Corn, the Burden of each of which may be reduc'd to 6000 *Hanegas*, or 3000 Mules Burden, which is enough to feed 60000 Men a Year. Notwithstanding that great Exportation, it is very cheap there, the *Hanega* weighing 150 Pounds, being sold from 18 to 22 *Royals*, which is about 9 or ten *Livres French*, a very inconsiderable Price for that Country, where the smallest Coin is a Silver Piece of four Sols and a Half *French*, which may be compared to two Liards, or an Half-Penny, with respect to the Division and Value. But as it does not rain there for eight or nine Months in the Year, the Land cannot in many Places be till'd, where there are no Brooks.

However, the Hills are cover'd with Herbs, among which there are many Aromatick, and Medicinal. Among the latter, the most famous with the Inhabitants of the Country is the *Cachinagua*, a Sort of small Centaury, which seem'd to me more bitter than the *French*, and consequently more full of Salt, reckon'd an excellent Febrifuge. The *Viravida*, a Sort of Sempervive, the Infusion whereof was used with great Success by a *French Surgeon* for curing of a Tertian Ague. There is also a Sort of *Senna*, exactly like that which is brought us from *Seyde*, or *Sidon* in the *Levant*; for want of which, the Apothecaries at *Santiago* make use of this, which the *Indians* call *Unoperquen*; it is somewhat smaller than the *Mayten*, a Tree of that Country.

The *Atvabaquilla*, in the *Indian Cullen*, is a Shrub which has the Scent of our Sweet Basil, and contains a Balm of great Use for Sores, whereof we saw a wonderful Effect at *Plate XV*: *Trequin*, on an *Indian*, whose Neck was deeply ulcerated. I also had Experience of it on myself. The Flower of it

*Plate XV. Page 117. explain'd in English.*

The *Quinchimall Plant*, a Sort of *Dwarf Cypress*, with sharp green Leaves. The *Flour Cullen*, being the Shrub call'd *Cytisus Arboreus*, or the large *Cytisus*, with Flowers like *Ears of Corn*, of a pale Blue.

is long, growing up like an Ear of Corn, of Colour white inclining to Violet, and is of that Sort which is put into the Number of *Leguminous*.

*Harilla*. Another Shrub call'd *Harilla*, different from the *Harilla* of *Tucuman*, serves also for the same Use: It has a Flower like Broom, and the Leaf very small, of a strong Scent, somewhat inclining to that of Honey: It is so full of Balm, that it is all glutinous.

*Payco*. The *Payco*, is a Plant of an indifferent Size, the Leaf whereof is very much jagg'd; it smells strong of a rotten Lemon; its Decoction is a Sudorifick, very good against Pleurifies. They have also much Bastard Rosemary, which has the same Effect.

*Palqui*. The *Palqui* is a Sort of very stinking Walwort, having a yellow Flower, and serves to cure the Scurf, or Scald-Heads. The *Thoupa* is a Shrub like Horse-Tongue, the Flower of it long, of an Aurora Colour, resembling that of Birthwort. Father *Feuillee*, who gives the Figure of it,

*Thoupa*. calls it *Rapuntium spicatum foliis acutis*; from its Leaves and Rind proceeds a yellow Milk, wherewith they cure some Ulcers: In other respects they pretend it is a Poison, but not so sharp as he says, for I have handled and felt it without finding any Harm. The *Bisnagar* so well known in *Spain* for making of Pick-tooths, cover the Vales about *Valparaiso*; this Plant is very like Fennel.

*Bisnagar*. The *Quilay* is a Tree, the Leaf whereof somewhat resembles that of the green Oak; its Bark ferments in Water like Soap, and is better for washing of Woollen Cloaths, but not for Linnen, which it makes yellow. All the *Indians* make use of it for washing their Hair, and to cleanse their Heads instead of Combs; it is thought to be that which makes their Hair so black.

*Quilay*. The *Coco Tree* has Leaves much resembling those of the Date Palm Tree; it bears a Cluster of round *Coco Nuts*, as big as little Walnuts, and full of a white oily Substance, good to eat. The Country about *Quillora* furnishes *Lima* with them to preserve, and to entertain the Children.

Children. This Fruit is wrap'd up in several Coverings; that which is about the Shell, is a Rind like that of green Walnuts, by which they are knotted together like a Bunch of Grapes. Another Rind wraps up the whole, which opens when yellow and ripe, into two large Hemispheroides, three Foot long, and one in Breadth, according to the Quantity of Fruit it contains. Father *Ovalle* says, these Trees never produce Fruit single, but that there must be a Female by the Male, but the Inhabitants told me the contrary.

The Fruit Trees carried thither from *Europe*, answer in *Great Fertili-* that Country to perfection; the Climate is so fertile when the Ground is water'd, that the Fruit is coming forward all the Year. I have often seen the same on one Apple-tree, which we here see in Orange-Trees, that is, Fruit of all different Ages or Growths, in Blossom, knotted, form'd Apples, half grown, and quite ripe, all together.

A League and a Half N. E. from *Valparaiso*, is a little *Wood* Vale called *La Vina à la Mar*, or the Vineyard next the Sea, where there are not only Trees fit for Fuel, whereof Ships lay in their Store, tho' somewhat remote, but also to make Planks and Ledges; and going up four or five Leagues farther, there is Timber fit to build Ships. We there cut Planks of a Sort of Bay-Tree, the Wood whereof is white and very light; of *Bellota*, another white Wood, of *Peumo*, which is very brittle; and of *Rauli*, which is the best and fastest. For Knee Timbers, there is the *Mayzen*, the Wood of it is hard, reddish and fast. *Champloret le Brun*, Captain of the *Assumption*, whilst we were there, built a Bark of 36 Foot in the Keel, of the same sorts of Wood.

In the same Places is found the *Molle*, which the *Indians* *Molle* call *Ovighan*, or *Huinan*, the Leaf of it is almost like that of the *Acacia*, its Fruit is a Cluster of little red Berries, like the *Dutch* Gooseberries, bating that these turn black as they ripen; it tastes of Pepper and Juniper. The *Indians* make *Chicha* or Drink of it, as good and as strong or stronger

stronger than Wine: The Gum of the Tree dissolv'd serves for a Purge. From this Tree they draw Honey, and they also make Vinegar. A little Incision being made in the Bark, there owzes from it a Milk which is said to cure the Web that grows on the Eyes; of the Heart of its Sprigs, they make a Water which clears and strengthens the Sight: Lastly, the Decoction of its Bark makes a Coffee Colour Tincture inclining to red, wherewith the Fishermen of *Valparaiso* and *Concon* dye their Nets, to the end the Fish may discern them the less.

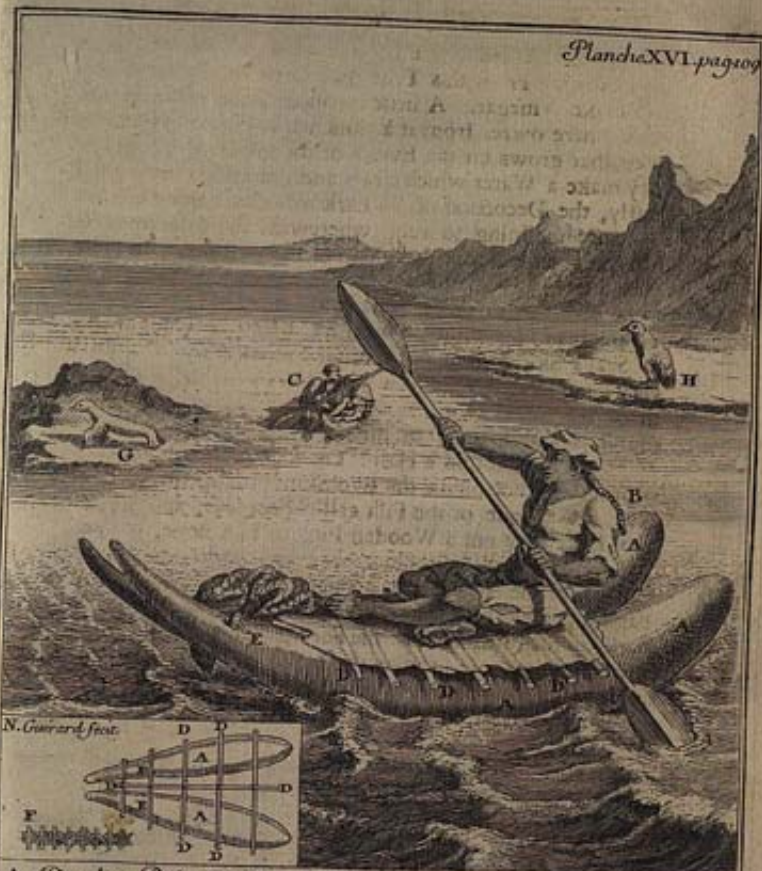
*Floats of  
Blown Skins.*

Plate XVI.

In order to cast their Nets in the Sea, those Fishermen make use of Floats instead of Boats, being great Bags made of Seal's Skins, fill'd with Wind; so well sew'd, that a very considerable Weight will not force any of it out, for there are some made in *Peru*, which will carry twelve Quintals and a Half, or fifty *Arrow's*, which is twelve Hundred Weight and a Half: The Manner of sewing them is peculiar, they pierce the two Skins put together with an Awl, or a Bone of the Fish call'd *Pezegallo*, and into every Hole they put a Wooden Pin, or Fish Bone, on both which they cross wet Guts over and under, to stop the Passage of the Air exactly. They tie two of those Blown Bags together, by means of certain Staves laid over them both, in such manner that the Fore-part be brought nearer than the Hind-part, and on that a Man ventures out, with a *Pagay*, or an Oar with two Paddles, or Blades, and if the Wind can help him, he puts up a little Cotton Sail; Lastly,

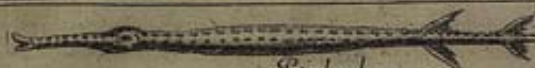
Plate XVI. Page 120. described in English.

- A. The Figure of a Float, made of the Skins of Sea Wolves, or Seals, sew'd up, and blown full of Air, like Bladders.  
 B. An Indian on a Float, seen Side-way.  
 C. Another View fronting.  
 D. Grass Pieces to unite the two Sides, or Halves of the Float.  
 E. The Hole to blow it full of Air.  
 F. The Manner of sewing the Skins.  
 G. A Sea-Wolf, or Seal ashore.  
 H. A Penguin.



N. Guillard fecit.

A. Plan d'une Balle faite de peaux de Loups marins cousues & pleines d'air.  
 B. Indien sur une Balle vue de Côté. C. autre vue de front  
 D. Traverses pour rassembler les deux moitiés de la balle E trou pour  
 l'enfler et la remplir d'air. F. manière de Coudre les peaux  
 G. Loup marin à terre H. Pinguin.



Painbuaba



Scie renversée



Scie en profil

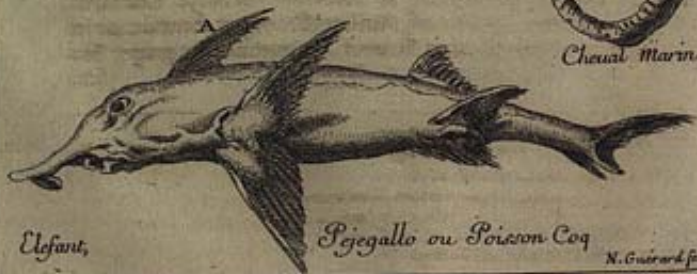


Tetis de Rondelet

Crevisse C ou Camaron de Salgado



Cheval Marin



Elefant

Pegallo ou Poisson Coq

Lastly, to make good the Air that may get out, he has two Leather Pipes before him, through which he blows into the Bags when there is Occasion.

That Sort of Invention is not new in our Continent: When *Alexander* the Great pass'd the *Oxus* and the *Tanais*, Part of his Troops cross'd those Rivers on Hides fill'd with Straw; and *S. Jerome*, in his Epistles, tells us, that *Malchus* made his Escape on Goats Skins, with which he cross'd a River.

The great Fishery is carry'd on at *Concon*, a Hamlet two Leagues N. and by E. from *Valparaiso* by Sea, where there is a Creek into which the River of *Aroncagua*, or of *Chili*, which runs by *Quillota*, falls. There is Anchorage for Ships, but the Sea almost continually runs high: There they take *Corbinos*, a Sort of Fish known in *Spain*, *Tollor* and *Pezzagallo*, which they dry to send to *Santiago*, which is also serv'd with fresh Fish from thence.

The last of them takes its Name from its Shape, because it has a Sort of Comb, or rather a Trunk, which has given Occasion to the *Creolians* to call it *Pezzagallo*, that is, Cock-Fish. The *French* call it *Demoiselle*, or *Elephant*, because of its Trunk, which is here to be seen, as I drew it by the Life; that mark'd *A*. is a Point so hard, that it may be made use of instead of an Awl to pierce the dryest Hides.

In the Bay of *Valparaiso*, there is a plentiful Fishery of all Sorts of good Fish, as *Pezereyes*, delicate *Gurnards*, Soles as above spoken of, *Mullets*, &c. not to mention an infinite Number of other Fishes that come in their proper Seasons.

*Plate XVII. Page 121. explain'd in English.*  
*Petimbuba*, A Fish so call'd.  
*Scie renverse*, A Sea-Fish turn'd on its Back.  
*Scie en Profil*, The Profile of the same Fish.  
*Ecrevisse*, &c. A Sea-Crab, or Cray-Fish.  
*Cheval Marin*, A Sea-Horse.  
*Pezzagallo*, ou *Poisson Coq*, The Cock-Fish.

sons, as Pilchards, and a Sort of Cod, which comes upon the Coasts about the Months of *October*, *November* and *December*; Shads, large Pikes, a Sort of Anchovies, whereof there is sometimes so great a Multitude, that they take whole Baskets full of them on the Surface of the Water.

I here represent a particular Sort of Crab, like that which *Rondelet* calls *Tetis* in *Greek*; and *Rumphius*, l. 1. c. 4. of his *Natural History*, *Squilla Lutaria*; the Colours whereof were extraordinary sprightly, and of singular Beauty; the two oval Fins A. were of the finest Blue that could be seen, edg'd with little Shaggs or Fringes of a Gold Colour; the Legs or Claws B. the like; the Defences C. were of the same Blue; D. represents two transparent Wings, or Fins; E. the Eyes; F. two Fins, inclining to Green, edg'd also with Jaggs, or Fringe; the Shell is of a Musk Colour, and the Extremities G. are of a Flesh Colour, edg'd white; under the Head are 6 other Legs, or Claws doubled, which do not appear, the Extremities whereof are round, flat, blue and edg'd like the other Parts, with gilded Jaggs or Fringes.

Butchers

Meat.

Seven horned

Sheep.

Butchers Meat is not so good there, as at *La Conception*, especially in Summer. Most of the Sheep have four Horns, and sometimes five or six; I have seen some that had seven, four on the one Side, and three on the other; or three on each Side, and one in the Middle.

Wild Fowl.

The like may be said of the Game, the wild Fowl is not well tasted there; However, about the farther Ends of Streams, there are abundance of Partridges, but they are dry, and almost insipid. The Wood Pigeons are there bitter, and the Turtle Doves are no Dainty. We one Day kill'd a Bird of Prey, call'd a *Condor*, that was nine Foot from the end of one Wing to the end of the other, and had a brown Comb, or Crest, but not jagg'd like a Cock's. The Fore-Part of its Throat is red, without Feathers like a *Turky*, and they are generally large and strong enough to take up a Lamb. In order to get them from the Flock, they draw themselves into a Circle, and advance towards them

Condor,  
Bird of Prey.



them with their Wings extended, to the end that being drove together, and too close, they may not be able to defend themselves; then they pick them out, and carry them off. *Cravellasso* says, there are some in *Peru* sixteen Foot, from the Point of one Wing to the other, and that a certain Nation of *Indians* adored them.

I must not here omit a Creature of so singular a Sort, that if seen without moving, it is taken for a Piece of a Branch of a Tree, cover'd with a Bark like that of a Chestnut Tree. It is as thick as a Man's little Finger, six or seven Inches long, and divided into four or five Knots or Joints, which grow smaller towards the Tail, which, as well as the Head, looks like no other than a broken Piece of a Bough of a Tree: When it stretches out its six Legs, and holds them close towards the Head, one would take them for so many Roots, and the Head for a broken Vine Branch. The *Chilinians* call it *Pulpo*, and say, that if it be handled with the naked Hand, it benums it for a Moment, without doing any farther Harm; which makes me believe, it is a Grasshopper of the same Kind as that *Father Du Tertre* has drawn and described by the Name of *Cofigrue*, in the History of the *Caribbee* Islands; with this Difference, that I did not observe it had a forked Tail, nor the two little Exerescences like Points of Pins, which he gives to his *Cofigrue*. Besides, he does not mention a little Bladder the *Pulpo* has, full of a black Liquor, which makes very fine Ink to write with: Be that as it will, this is doubtless the *Arumazha Brasilia* of *Margrave*, l. 7. Pag. 251.

We also took at *Valparaiso* two monstrous and hairy Spiders, like those which *Father Du Tertre* has drawn, which he says are full of a dangerous Poison: However, these are not reckon'd so in *Chili*.

We continued eight Months at *Valparaiso*, during which Time, there was nothing remarkable: There were several Earthquakes, especially in the Months of *October* and *November*, on which we shall make some Remarks elsewhere.

*Fris complimented.*

The Commissary General of the *Franciscans* in the *West-Indies*, who came from *Europe* by the Way of *Buenos Ayres*, arrived there towards the latter End of the Year 1712; the Fortress upon his Arrival, saluted him with three Guns, and the same at his Departure on the 10th of *January*. When he embark'd in the Road for *Lima*, all the *French* Ships saluted him with seven Guns each, by the Governor's Order. By this may be judg'd, in what Esteem Religious Men are with the *Spaniards*, since even those in Command endeavour to cultivate their Friendship.

*Reception of Nuns.*

Some time after, four *Capucin* Nuns also arriv'd from *Spain*, by the way of *Buenos Ayres*, and embark'd on the 13th of *January* for *Lima*, to settle and govern a Monastery of their Order that had been founded and built there. They were saluted by the Fort, and all the Ships that were in the Road, with seven Guns, a remarkable Epocha for the Annals of the Sisters of the Order of *S. Francis*. At their Arrival at *Lima*, they were received by the whole City in Procession, and with as much Solemnity as could have been done for the King.

The 22d of the same Month, the *S. Clement*, a Ship of fifty Guns, commanded by the *Sieur Jacinte Gardin* of *S. Malo*, arrived from *La Conception*, with its Pink of twenty Guns. It carry'd *Spanish* Colours and Pendants, as having the King of *Spain's* Licence to trade along the Coast, for 50000 Crowns. It brought the *Oidor*, or Judge, *Don Juan Calvo de la Torre*, who was retiring to *Santiago*, being weary of struggling continually with the bad Inclination of the People of *La Conception*, where he had been Governor.

*General of the South-Sea.*

On the 8th of *April*, the General of the *South-Sea*, *Don Pedro Miranda*, arrived from *Buenos Ayres*, to go and take Possession of his Post at *Lima*. The Fort saluted him with five Guns at his Arrival, and the same at his Departure: Then all our Ships saluted him with seven Guns, and the *Spanish* Ships with as many as they had.

In

For the rest, all that was remarkable in relation to our Ship, was the Ducking of a Sailor, for having absented himself from on board, for twelve Days, contrary to the Orders given.

The 26th of *January*, the same Punishment was inflicted on another Sailor convicted of a Theft, which he confess'd; the next Day he was whipp'd at the Main-mast, instead of being duck'd at the Yard-Arm, as is used at Sea.

The 6th of the same Month, the *Mary* being leaky, was careen'd, and only tarri'd, for want of other Necessaries.

On *Maundy Thursday*, the *Augustine* gave the *Sieur Maundy-Duchefne* the Key of the Tabernacle of their Church, in which the blessed Sacrament was kept: That is a Custom cunningly invented by the Religious Men, to ease themselves of the Expences they are obliged to be at on that Day. They do a Lay-man the Honour of giving him that Key to wear 24 Hours, hanging about his Neck with a broad Gold Ribbon, or Galloon; in Return for which, and in good Manners, the Keeper is obliged to present the Monastery with a Quantity of Wax; to treat the Monks, notwithstanding the Penitential Time; and besides, to perform some other Act of Generosity towards them. The same Night, after a Sermon of the Sorrows of the *Virgin Mary*, they perform'd the Ceremony of taking our Saviour down from the Cross, having a Crucifix purposely made, in the same Manner as might be done to a Man. As they drew the Nails, and took off the Crown of Thorns, and other Instruments of the Passion, the Deacon carry'd them to an Image of the blessed *Virgin*, clad in Black; so contrived, that he took them in her Hands, and kiss'd them one after another. At last, when he was taken down from the Cross, he was laid with his Arms folded, and his Head strait, into a stately Bed, between two white Sheets laced, and under a rich Damask Counterpoint; about the Bed, there is costly carry'd Work gilt, and set with abundance of Candles. In most of the Parish Churches throughout *Perse*, and those of the *Mercenarians*, such Beds

are kept for this Solemnity, which is call'd *Entierro de Christo*, the Funeral of Christ. In this Posture he was carry'd through the Streets by Candle Light; several Penitents, who went in the Procession, were cover'd with a Linnen Frock, or Bag, open at the Back, who scourg'd themselves so that the Blood trickled down the naked Part, which may be call'd an ill contriv'd Devotion; for according to *Tertullian's* Opinion, we are not to mortify our Flesh to the shedding of Blood. *Gerson* to that Purpose quotes the first Verse of the fourteenth Chapter of *Deuteronomy*, *Ye are the Children of the Lord your God; ye shall not cut yourselves*; and according to the *Hebrews*, *ye shall not tear yourselves*, for this the *Idolaters* did. That Custom had prevail'd in *France*, but the Parliament of *Paris* prohibited publick Whippings, by a Decree made in the Year 1601. They say, that at *Santiago* they hire Comforters to stay the Zeal of that Sort of Whippers, who yve with one another in lashing themselves. Others who were not inclin'd to tear themselves in that Manner, attended the Solemnity, with a heavy Piece of Timber laid on their Necks, their Arms being extended on it in the Form of a Cross, and fast bound to it, so that not being able to set right the unequal Weight, which sometimes tway'd them to the Right, and sometimes to the Left, others were fain now and then to support them, and to balance that unwieldy Weight; most of these last were Women, and the Procession lasting somewhat too long, notwithstanding that Assistance, they sunk under the Burden, so that they were forced to unbind them.

During the whole Night, the Ships in the Road fired a Gun every seven Minutes successively, till the next Morning, when the Ceremony of the Monument ended.

After having careen'd the *Mary*, we made Show of sending her to *Peru*, to see whether the *Spaniards* would not be brought to buy; but they scarce offer'd the Price that was current at *Pera*, so that we continued eight Months at *Kalparaiso*, without selling any thing but a few Trifles to purchase

purchase the Provisions we wanted, relying on the Hopes that the Peace would be soon concluded, and that no more Ships coming from *France*, we could not fail of retrieving the Trade, and making our Advantage of the last Opportunity of coming into those Seas. On these vain Notions, the Captains, *Gardin*, *Battar*, and *le Briton*, agreed among themselves for three Months, engaging to one another, upon Forfeiture of 50000 Crowns, not to sell their Goods under a certain Price agreed on in their Contract; but all those Precautions did not prevail on the Merchants.

At length, Winter beginning to bring on the North Winds, we one Day found by Experience how high those Winds, tho' then weak, made the Sea run in the Road; by which we guess'd what would be in foul Weather, and did not think fit to stay any longer there, to avoid running any Hazards.

*Departure from Valparaiso.*

**W**E sail'd from *Valparaiso* on *Thursday* the 11th of *May* 1713, to go and winter at *Coquimbo*, where Ships are safe from all Winds. A fresh Gale at South, which had carry'd us out, held but 24 Hours; then the North Wind came upon us so violent, that one Day, in that which they call the *Pacifick Sea*, we were obliged to take in all our Sails during eight Hours, the Sea running high, the Weather dark, with Thunder and Lightning. A Remark against *Father Ovalle*, who says, there is never any in *Chili*; however, every Night regularly the Weather grew fairer, even to a Calm. Thus that Passage, which is usually perform'd in 24 Hours, held us nine Days. At length the Wind coming again to South, we made the Bay of *Tongoy Bay*, remarkable for a little Hill, call'd *Cerro del Guanaco*, *Cerro del Guanaquero* and for a Point of Low-Land, call'd *Lengua de Vaca*, or *Neats-Tongue*, which closes that Bay to the Westward. The Land of the Coast, tho' indifferently high, looks at 25 or 30 Leagues Distance out at Sea, as if it was overflow'd,

verflow'd, the high Mountains over it appearing always cover'd with Snow; which is a sensible Effect of the Roundness of the Sea, which appears considerably in so small a Distance.

Coquimbo  
Bay how  
known.

When a Ship has Sight of the Bay of *Coquimbo*, it is eight Leagues to the Southward of *Coquimbo*, and must keep up with the Land to see the Mouth of the Bay, and get to the Windward, the South and S. W. always prevailing there, except two or three Months in Winter. Short of it, about three Quarters of a League to the Windward, is the Mouth of a little Creek, call'd *La Herradura*; or the Horse-shoe, about two Cables Length wide: Next to the Leeward appear three or four Rocks, the largest of them, which is farthest out at Sea, call'd *Paxaro Ninno*, is the third Part of a League N.W. and by N. from Point *Tortuga*, being the Starboard Point of the Continent that closes the Port of *Coquimbo*. To the Southward of that first Rock, which lies in the Latitude of 29 Degrees, 55 Minutes, is a little Island somewhat smaller, between which and the Continent is a Passage of 17 Fathom Water, but very narrow, through which some *French* Ships foolishly pass'd; for the Mouth of the Bay is about two Leagues and a half wide, and without any Danger.

Herradura  
Creek.

Paxaro Ninno  
Rock.  
Tortuga  
Point.

#### Description of the Bay of Coquimbo.

IT is true, that by reason the Winds blow continually from S. to S. W. it is convenient to keep close to the Starboard Point, and run close under the aforesaid Rock, call'd *Paxaro Ninno*; which is clear within a Boat's Length, to gain, at the fewer Trips, the good Anchoring Ground, call'd the Port, which is within half a Cable's Length of the West Shore. There they anchor from six to ten Fathom Water, the Bottom black Sand, near a Rock ten or twelve Foot long, which rises five or six Foot above the Water, shaped like a Tortois, from which it takes its Name. Ships are shelter'd from all Winds;  
by

Anchorage.

PLATE DE QUATRE

When a single animal is found in a  
 situation of the kind to be described  
 in the text, it is to be considered  
 as a single individual, and not as  
 a pair, unless it is accompanied  
 by another of the same kind.  
 In such cases, the animal is to be  
 considered as a pair, and not as  
 a single individual.

The following are the names of the  
 animals which are to be considered  
 as pairs, and not as single  
 individuals.

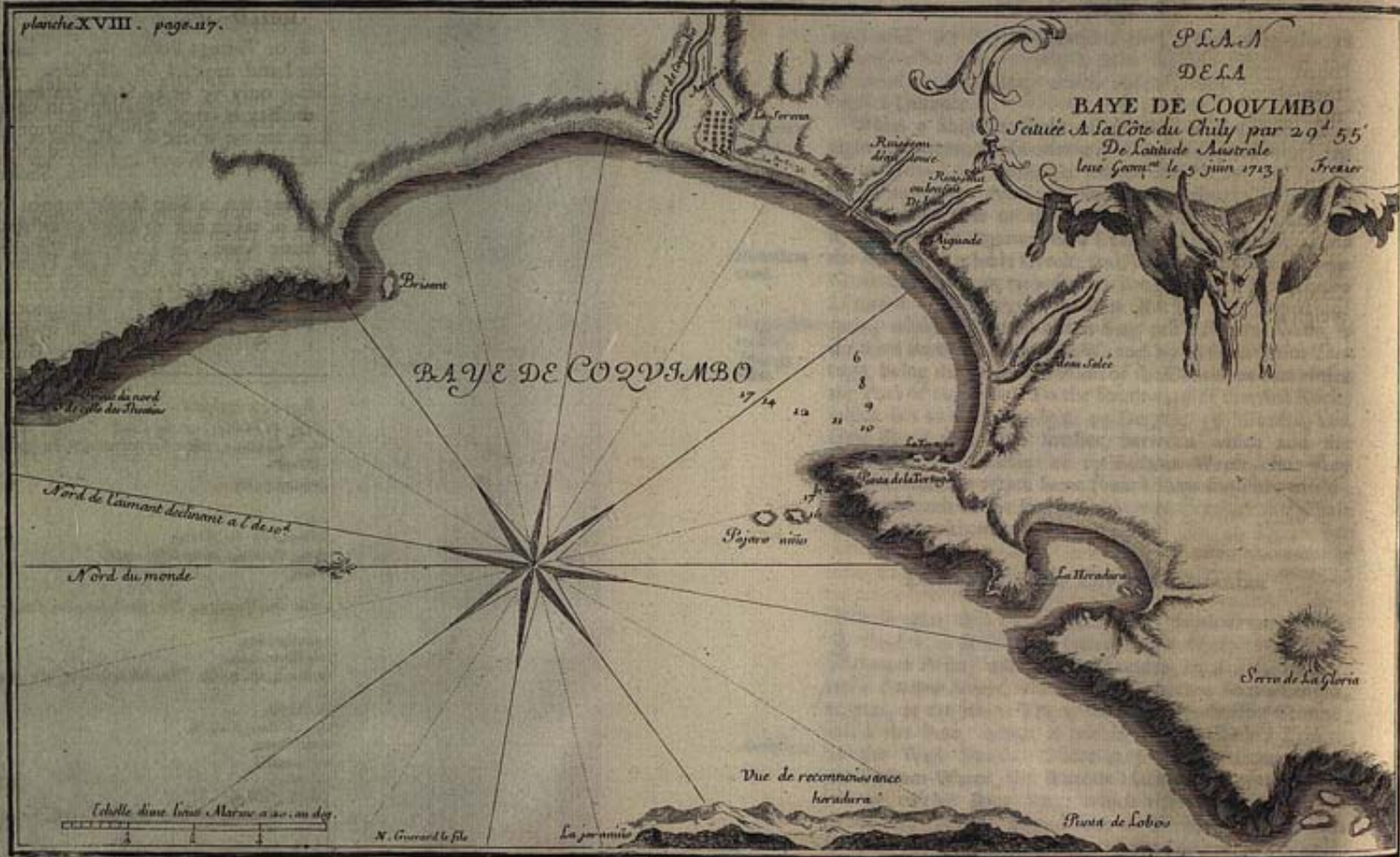
The following are the names of the  
 animals which are to be considered  
 as single individuals, and not  
 as pairs.

PLA.N  
DE LA

BAYE DE COQVIMBO

Scuée A la Côte du Chili par 29° 55'  
De Latitude Australe  
le 5 Juin 1713

Franco





by closing the Starboard, or *Tortuga Point*, with the Larboard Point, so that the Land appears on all Sides, and there is no rolling Sea; only 25 or 30 Ships can enjoy that Benefit, and tho' the Bay is large, and the Bottom is every where good, Ships are no where so well and easy; for next the Town, there is less Water and less Shelter than in the Port.

If in entering or coming out, a Ship should happen to be becalm'd, Care must be taken not to come to an Anchor near the Rock *Paxaro Niño*, in 40, or 45 Fathom Water, because the Bottom is full of Rocks, which cut the Cables, or else to engage the Anchors, that they cannot be weigh'd by the Buoy Ropc. The *Solide*, a Ship of fifty

*Caution about Anchoring.*

S Guns,

*Plate XVIII. Page 129. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the Bay of *COQUIMBO*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 29 Degrees, 55 Minutes of South Latitude, taken Geometrically the 5th of June 1713, by Monsieur *Frézier*.

- Rivière de Coquimbo*, *Coquimbo River.*
- Azequia*, *A Trench.*
- La Serena*, *The Town so call'd.*
- Ruisseau d'eau douce*, *A Rivulet of fresh Water.*
- Ruisseau où l'on fait de l'eau*, *A Rivulet where Ships water.*
- Aiguade*, *The Watering-place.*
- Brilant*, *A Rock.*
- Point du Nord à 2 l. de celle des Theatins*, *The North Point two Leagues from that of the Theatins.*
- Baye de Coquimbo*, *Coquimbo Bay.*
- Lagon d'eau salée*, *A Salt Water Lake.*
- Nord de l'aimant declinant à E. de 20 D.* *The North Point of the Compass inclining East 20 Degrees.*
- Nord du Monde*, *The due North.*
- La Tortuga, or the Tortois*, *A Place so call'd.*
- Punta de la Tortuga*, *Tortois Point.*
- Paxaro Niño*, *An Island so call'd.*
- La Heradura*, *The Horse-shoe.*
- Cerro de la Gloria*, *The Hill of Glory.*
- Echelle d'une lieue Marine à 20 au deg.* *A Scale of a Sea League, after the Rate of 20 to a Degree.*
- Vue de reconnaissance*, *So the Land shews by which the Port is known.*
- Punta de Lobos*, *The Point of Sea-Wolves, or Seals.*

Guns, commanded by Monsieur de Ragueine, lost two Anchors there in April 1712.

In the Port there is the Conveniency, not only of riding at Anchor very near the Shore, as still as in a Bason; but besides in Case of Need, a Ship of twenty four Guns may be careen'd on the *Tortuga* Rock above-mention'd, where there is twelve Foot Water at low Ebb quite close to it; some *French* Ships have made use of it to that Purpose.

Inconveniencies in the Port.

But as it is rare to find all Conveniencies in one Port, this has its Defects: The most considerable of them is, that Ships anchor there a League from the Watering-place, which is to the E. N. E. in a Rivulet that runs into the Sea; and tho' it be taken at low Ebb, the Water is always somewhat brackish; however it does not appear to be unwholesome. The second is, that there is no Wood for Fuel, but that of some Bushes, which is only fit to heat an Oven, without going far into the Vale, which is three Leagues from the Port.

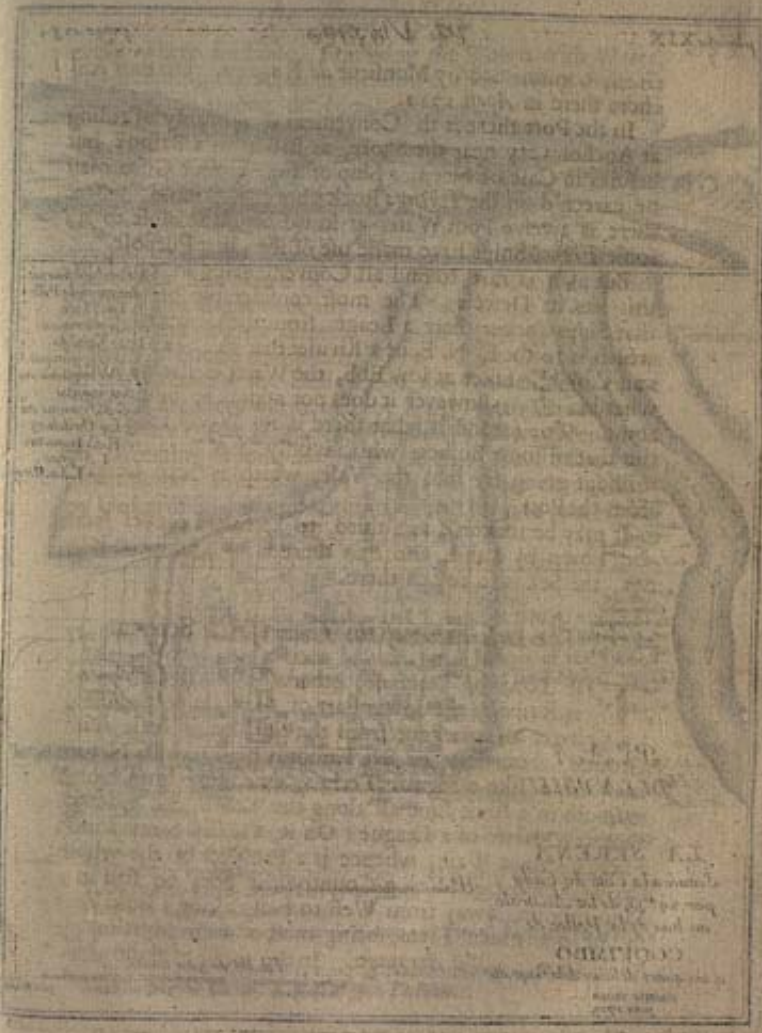
It may be reckon'd as a third, to be two Leagues from the Town by Land, and that there is no landing at it by Sea, the Sea is so rough there.

### The Description of the Town of La Serena.

THE Town of *Coquimbo*, otherwise call'd *La Serena*, is seated at the lower Part of the Vale of *Coquimbo*, \* a Quarter of a League from the Sea, on a little rising Ground, about four or five Fathoms high, which Nature has form'd like a regular Terrass, extending from North to South in a strait Line all along the Town, the Space of about a Quarter of a League: On it, the first Street forms a very pleasant Walk, whence is a Prospect of the whole Bay and the neighbouring Country; it goes on still in a Line, turning away from West to East, along a little Vale full of ever-green Trees, being most of them Myrtles, by the Spaniards call'd *Aryyanes*. In the midst of those pleasant Groves, the River of *Coquimbo* runs winding, almost every

F. Feuillée places it in 29 Deg. 54 Min. 10 Sec. Lat. and 7 Deg. 35 Min. 45 Sec. Longitude.

Coquimbo River.



Faint, illegible text at the top of the page, possibly a title or introductory paragraph.

Faint, illegible text in the middle section of the page, appearing to be a main body of text.

Faint, illegible text in the lower middle section of the page.

Faint, illegible text at the bottom of the page, possibly a conclusion or signature.



every where fordable, supplying the Town with Water, and freshning the adjacent Meadows, after having made its Escape from among the Mountains, where in its Passage it fertilizes several fine Vales, whose Soil refuses no Sort of Tillage.

*Peter Baldivia*, who made Choice of this curious Situation, in the Year 1544, to build a Town on, which might serve for a Retreat in the Passage from *Chili* to *Peru*, ravish'd with the Delicousness of the Climate, call'd it *La Serena*, the Name of the Place of his Birth, to which it had more Right than any other Place in the World, the Name signifying *the Serene*; and, in short, there is continually a serene and pleasant Sky. That Country seems to have retain'd the Delights of the Golden Age: The Winters are there warm, and the sharp North Winds never blow there: The Heat of the Summer is always temper'd by refreshing Winds, which come to moderate the Heat about Noon; so that all the Year is no other than a happy Union of Spring and Autumn, which seem to join Hands

S 2

Plat XIX. Page 131. described in English.

Vue de La Serena, A Prospect of LA SERENA.

The Plan of the Town of LA SERENA, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 29 Degrees, 55 Minutes of South Latitude, at the Bottom of the Vale of *Coquimbo*, a Quarter of a League from the Bay of the same Name, *Juxta* 1713.

- |   |                      |
|---|----------------------|
| A. A Trench which supplies all the Town with Water. | F. The Jesuites.     |
| B. The Square.                                      | G. The Franciscans.  |
| C. The Parish Church.                               | H. S. Augustin.      |
| D. The Council House.                               | I. S. Agnes.         |
| E. S. Dominick.                                     | L. The Mercenarians. |

R. de *Coquimbo* qui ne remplit son lit qu'en été, *The River of Coquimbo*, which is full of Water only in Summer.

Partie de la Vallée de *Coquimbo*, Part of the Vale of *Coquimbo*.

Ruines de *S. Lucie*, *The Ruins of S. Lucy*.

Forges de Cuivre, *Copper Works*.

Terrasse naturellement alignée & de niveau, *A Terrace naturally form'd in a Line, and level*.

Plaine continuée jusques à la mer, *A Plain extending to the Sea*.

Echelle de 500 Toises, *A Scale of 500 Fathoms*.

to reign there together, in order to produce at once both Flowers and Fruits; so that we may, with much more Truth, say of it what formerly *Virgil* said of a certain Province in *Italy*, *Georg.* 1. 2.

*Hic ver assiduum, atque alienis mensibus astat,  
Bis gravida pecudes, bis pomis utilis arbor:  
At rapida Tigres absunt, & seva Leonum  
Semina.*

Thus English'd by Mr. *Dryden*.

----- Perpetual Spring our Climate sees,  
Twice breed the Cattle, and twice bear the Trees,  
And Summer Suns recede by slow Degrees.  
Our Land is from the Dread of Tygers freed,  
Nor nourishes the Lyon's angry Seed.

No wild  
Beasts, nor  
venomous  
Creatures.

This last Commendation of being free from wild Beasts and venomous Creatures, is due, as the Inhabitants say, to all the Kingdom of *Chili*, where they lie at all Seasons in the open Air, without fearing any Poison. Nevertheless, whatsoever Father *Ovalle* may say of it, I have seen Toads at *La Conception*, Snakes and monstrous Spiders at *Valparaiso*; and, lastly, white Scorpions at *Coquimbo*. It is likely, all those Creatures are of a different Nature from ours in *Europe*; for there is no Instance that ever any body was hurt by them.

Plan of the  
Town.

The Plan of the Town is answerable enough to the Advantages of Nature; the Streets are all exactly strait in a Line from one End to the other, like *Santiago*, answering to the four Cardinal Points of the Horizon, from East to West, and from North to South. The Quarters or Squares they form, are also of the same Dimensions, with each a Rivulet running through it; but the small Number of Inhabitants, the Foulness of the Streets which are not pav'd, the Meanness of the Houses made of Mud Walls, and Thatch'd,

Thatch'd, make it look but like a Plain, and the Streets like the Walks in Gardens; and in short, they are set round with Fig, Orange, Olive, Palm-Trees, &c. which afford them an agreeable Shade.

The most considerable Part of it is taken up by two *Churches, &c.* Squares and six Monasteries of *Dominicans, Augustins, Franciscans, Mercenarians* and *Jesuites*, without reckoning the Parish and the Chappel of *S. Agnes*. Formerly there was a Church of *S. Lucy*, on an Eminence of the same Name, which runs out in a Point to the Middle of the Town: It is of the same Height as the first Terrass, and commands all the Town by reason of the Lowness of the Houses, which have only a Ground Floor. From thence, as it were from an Amphitheatre, appears a curious Landskip, form'd by the Town, the Plain which reaches down to the Sea, the Bay and its Mouth. All the Quarter of *S. Lucy* was formerly inhabited; but since the *English* and other Pyrates plunder'd and burnt the Town, it has nor been rebuilt, any more than the South Part: This has happened twice within forty Years.

The Discovery of the Mines of *Copiato*, and the Vexations of the *Corregidores*, or Chief Magistrates, daily contribute towards unpeopling of it; tho' those Mines are near a hundred Leagues from *Cochimbo* by Land, several Families are gone thither to settle; so that at present there are not above two hundred Families, and at most three hundred Men fit to bear Arms, not including the Neighbourhood. In those few Houses, there are some of the Fair Sex of a pleasant and obliging Conversation, which adds very much to the other Delights of the agreeable Place and Climate.

The Fertility of the Soil keeps abundance of People in the Country, in the Vales of *Elquer, Sotaque, Salsipued, Andacol, Limari, &c.* whence they bring Corn to load four or five Ships, of about 400 Tuns Burden, to send to *Lima*. They also supply *Santiago* with much Wine and Oil, reckon'd the best along the Coast: These Provisions, together with some few Hides, Tallow, and dry'd Flesh, are all the

the Trade of that Place, where the Inhabitants are poor; by reason of their Slothfulness, and the few *Indians* they have to serve them; for that Country is one of the richest in the Kingdom, in all Sorts of Metals.

*Hec eadem argenti rivus arisque metalla  
Ostendit venis, atque auro plurima fluxit.* Virg. *Geo.* 2.

Thus English'd by Mr. Dryden.

*Our Quarries deep in Earth, were saw'd of old  
For Veins of Silver, and for Ore of Gold.*

Plenty of  
Gold.

In Winter, when the Rains are somewhat plentiful, Gold is found in almost all the Rivulces that run down from the Mountains, and it would be found all the Year if they had that Help. Nine or ten Leagues to the Eastward of the Town, are the washing Places of *Andacol*, the Gold whereof is 23 Carats fine; the Work there always turns to great Advantage when there is no want of Water. The Inhabitants affirm, that the Earth breeds; that is, that Gold is continually growing, because 60 or 80 Years after it has been wash'd, they find almost as much Gold as they did at first. In that same Vale, besides the Washing-Places, there are on the Mountains so very many Gold Mines, and some of Silver, that they would employ 40000 Men, as I have been inform'd by the Governor of *Coquimbo*: They propose to set up Mills there out of hand, but they want Labourers.

Copper Mines.

The Copper Mines are also very common, three Leagues N. E. from *Coquimbo*: They have wrought a long Time at a Mine, which supplies almost all the Coast of *Chili* and *Peru* with Utensils for the Kitchen; it is true, they use fewer of that, than of Earthen Ware or Silver. They there give eight Pieces of Eight per Quintal, or Hundred Weight for Copper in Ingots, which is an inconsiderable Price in respect of the Value of Silver in the Country. The *Jesuites* have another Mine five Leagues North from the City, on a Mountain



Mountain call'd *Cerro Verde*, or Green Hill, which is high and shaped like a Sugar-loaf; so that it may serve for a Land-Mark to the Port. There is an infinite Number of others, which are neglected for want of Sale. It is affirm'd, that there are also Mines of Iron and of Quick-silver.

I must not here omit some Particulars of the Country, which I was told by the Guardian of the *Franciscans* at *Coquimbo*. The first of them, That ten Leagues to the Southward of that Town there is a blackish Stone, from which flows a Spring only once a Month, at an Opening like un-<sup>Strange</sup> to that humane Part, whose regular Flowing it imitates, and <sup>Spring</sup> that Water leaves a white Track on the Stone.

The second is near that they call *La Hazienda de la Marquesa*, or the Marchioness's Estate, six Leagues East from the Town: There is a gray Stone of the Colour of Lead <sup>Remarkable</sup> Ore, as smooth as a Table, on which there is exactly drawn <sup>Stone</sup> a Buckler and a Head-Piece, both red, the Colour sinking deep into the Stone, which has been purposely broken, in some Places, to see it.

The third, that in a Vale there is a small Plain, on which <sup>Singular</sup> if a Man falls asleep, when he awakes he finds himself <sup>Plain</sup> swollen, which does not happen some few Paces from thence.

The Port of *Coquimbo* being no Place of Trade for *European* Commodities, of which not above the Value of 12 or 15000 Pieces of Eight can be sold in a Year, the *French* Ships resort thither only for fresh <sup>Provisions</sup> Provisions, Wine and Brandy. The Beef is there somewhat better than at *Valparaiso*, and much about the same Value of eight or ten Pieces of Eight a Beast. There are Partridges, but they are inspid: On the other hand, the Turtle Doves are very delicious; there are abundance of Ducks in a little Pool near the Port. The Fishery is plentiful enough in the Bay, yielding abundance of Mulletts, Pezereyes, Soles, and a Sort of Filh without Bones, very delicious, call'd *Tesson*, and peculiar to that Coast; but there is no good casting  
of

of a Net, because the Shore is full of Stones; the Sea is rough and breaking.

Plants.

The Plants in these Parts are almost the same as at *Valparaiso*. The *Paiso* is there smaller, and more aromatick, and consequently a better Sudorifick. There is abundance of a Sort of Stone-Fern, which they call *Doradilla*, the Leaf whereof is all curl'd; they drink the Decoction of it to refresh themselves after the Fatigue of Traveling, and hold it in great Esteem for cleansing the Blood. There is a Sort of Lemon Balm, which lasts all the Year, call'd *Lacayota*; they make it run up the Tops of Houles, and it is an excellent Preserve. There is great Plenty of that they call *Algarroba*, being a Sort of Tamarind, bearing a very rosiny Bean; the Cod and Grain whereof dry'd, pounded, and in Infusion, serve to make very good Writing-Ink, adding to them a little Copperas; it is also call'd *Tara*, from its Resemblance with the Cod of that Plant, tho' in Reality, it be somewhat different.

Lucumo  
Tree.

In this Climate we begin to see a Tree, which does not grow in any other Part of *Chili*, and is peculiar to *Peru*; it is call'd *Lucumo*: The Leaf of it somewhat resembles that of the Orange-Tree and the *Floripondio*; the Fruit is also very like a Pear, which contains the Seed of the latter; when ripe, the Rind is a little yellowish, and the Flesh of it very yellow, almost of the Taste and Consistence of a new-made Cheese: In the midst of it is a Kernel, exactly like a Chesnut in Colour, Hairiness and Substance, but bitter, and good for nothing.

Poisonous  
Plant.

In the Valley, near the Ridge of Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*, is a Herb, which, when young, may be eaten as Sallad; but when beginning to grow large, it becomes so deadly a Poison for Horses, that as soon as they eat it they become blind, swell, and burst in a short Time.

DEPAR-

## DEPARTURE from COQUIMBO.

*The Author goes a-board another Ship.*

THE little Likelihood there was that the *Sieur Duobene* should sell his Goods at the Price he demanded, and the Resolution he had taken to wait till the Peace was proclaim'd, designing to stay the last on the Coast, flattering himself that no more Ships would come from *France*, prevail'd with me to take such Measures as might be agreeable to his Majesty's Orders, who limited the Leave he had been pleas'd to grant me, for performing this Voyage, to two Years; being persuaded that the *S. Joseph* would be still two Years longer on the Coast, and upon its Voyage.

I embark'd on board a *Spanish Ship*, call'd the *Jesús Mary Joseph*, laden with Corn for *Callao*, commanded by *Don Antonio Alarcon*, in order to come to some of the *French Ships* that had done trading, and would suddenly return to *France*. The Opportunity was favourable, because we were to touch at the Ports resorted to, call'd *Puertos Intermedios*, or Ports in the Way.

The 30th of *May* we set Sail to get out of the Bay of *Coquimbo*; but a Calm taking us without, the Current carry'd us in again, and we anchor'd in 17 Fathom Water E. S. E. of the Rock *Paxaro Ninno*. The next Day the same Thing befell us, and we came to an Anchor again.

It is no easy Matter to get out of that Bay, unless a Ship sets out with a good Land Breeze, which generally blows only from Midnight till Day. No Man must expose himself to be becalm'd a little without the Mouth of the Bay, because the Currents, which set to the Northward, drive Ships in between the Islands of *Pajaros*, or Birds, and the Continent that is beyond the Point of the *Theatins*. Those Islands are seven or eight Leagues to the N. W. of the Compass, or N. W. and by N. of the World, in respect to Point *Tortuga*. It is true, that with a fair Wind a Man

*Directions for getting out of the Bay of Coquimbo.*

T

might

might get off, because there is a Passage; but besides that it is dangerous, and little frequented, the Tides set upon the Islands, where some *Spanish* Ships have perill'd: For which Reason, if the Land Breeze is not fix'd, a Ship must not go out but with the S. S. W. Breeze, and run some Leagues W. N. W. to get enough to Seaward of those Islands, which the *Spanish* Pilots shun as a Shoal in a Calm, and the more, for that the Tides are not known to be regular. However, I do not think the Case is the same for the inner Part of the Bay: I thought I observ'd that the Delay was not that of the Moon's passing to the Meridian, but perhaps of the Third Part, or of a Quarter of an Hour, I do not affirm any thing as to this Particular: Such an Observation would require several Months to be satisfy'd.

At length, on the 7th of *June* about Four in the Morning, we got out with the Wind at East. At Noon I took an Observation West of the Rock *Paxaro Ninno*, which I found to be in 29 Degrees, 55 Minutes of South Latitude, as has been said before. The Breeze coming up, we in the Night pass'd by the Island *Choros*, which is four Leagues North from those of *Paxaros*, and even thought in the Dark that we had some Sight of it.

Choros  
Island.

Channaral  
Island.

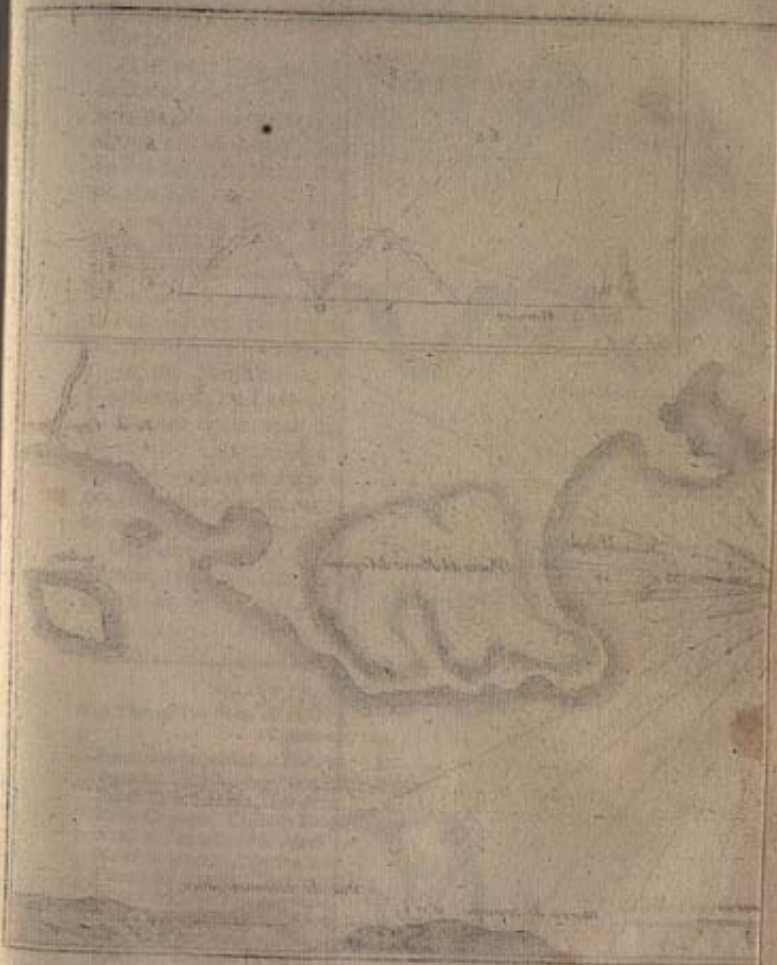
The next Morning we found ourselves four Leagues N. W. and by N. of the Island of *Channaral*, join'd to the Continent by a Bank of Sand, which the Sea covers with a North Wind: It is four Leagues from the Island of *Choros*, and 16 from Point *Tortuga*. This Island is almost plain, and very small.

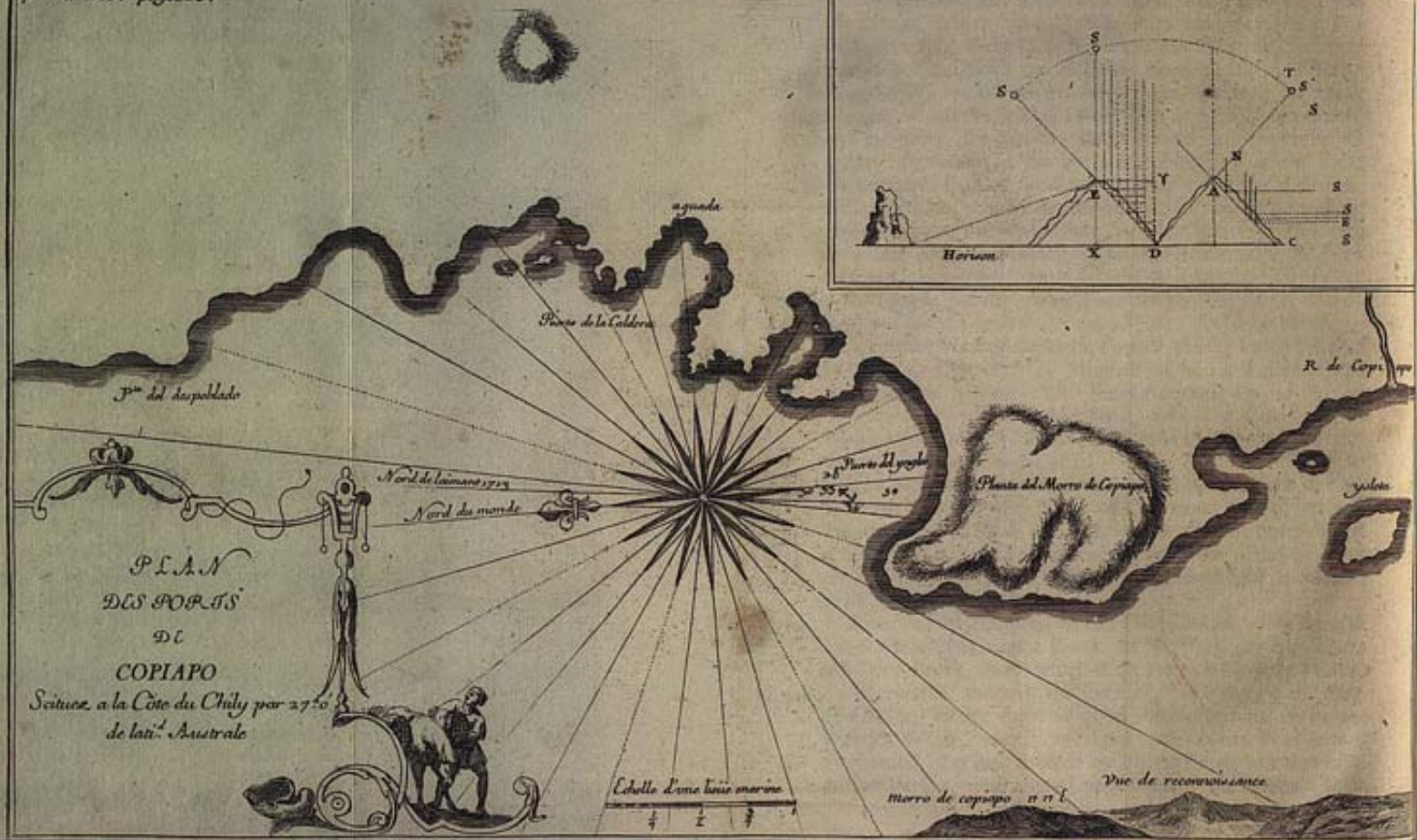
Quebrada  
honda  
Break.

Four or five Leagues farther Northward, they shew'd me a white Spot near a Break, call'd *Quebrada honda*, or the Deep Break, above which there are rich Copper Mines.

Guaſco Bay.

Afterwards, towards the Evening, we desery'd the Bay of *Guaſco*, where there is good Anchorage in 18 or 20 Fathom Water, very near the Land. That Port is not frequented, because there is no other Trade but that of a private Person, who takes Copper out of the Mines. It is open





open to the North about a League wide; and there is good Water.

The next Day from four or five Leagues out at Sea we discover'd the Creek of *Totoral*, where there is Anchorage: Totoral Creek. It is not to be perceiv'd any otherwife, than that it lies about the Mid-way, between a Cape call'd *Cerro Prieto*, or Black Cape, and a low Point, which is the Southermoft of the Salt Bay.

The 10th we had Sight of the Head call'd *Morro de Copiapo*, which appears at a Distance like an Island, because it joins to the Continent by a very low Neck, or Point, for which it is very remarkable. That Head is of a less than indifferent Height, in 27 Degrees Latitude; it is compared to *S. Helen's Point* in *Peru*: It appears thus, seen from the Southward, and but little different from the Northward, or Leeward. Morro de Copiapo Head. Plate XX.

As you draw near it, there appears a little low Island of about a Quarter of a League Diameter, between which and the Continent they say there is Anchorage under Shelter from the North, towards the Bottom of the Creek into which the River of *Copiapo* falls.

Opposite to that Creek we were thwarted by the North Winds, and a Calm made me observe, that the Currents drove us Southward; which confirms what the *Spanish Pilots* Currents.

T 2

Pilots

*Plate XX. Page 139. explain'd in English.*  
The Plan of the Ports of *COPILAPO*, on the Coast of *Chili*, in 27 Degrees of South Latitude.

*Punta del despoblado, The Point of the Desert Country.*

*Aguada, The Watering-Place.*

*Punta de la Caldera, The Point of the Kettle.*

*Ri de Copiapo, Copiapo River.*

*Nord de l'aimant, The North Point of the Compass.*

*Nord du Mopde, The true North Point.*

*Puerto del Yngles, The Englishman's Port.*

*Planta del Morro de Copiapo, The Plan of the Headland of Copiapo.*

*Yleta, A small Island.*

*Echelle d' une lieue marine, A Scale of a Sea League.*

*Morro de Copiapo N. N. E. The Headland of Copiapo N. N. E.*

*Vue de reconnoissance, The View to know the Port by.*

Pilots say, that when the North Wind blows, they go like the Wind.

*Puerto del  
Ingles Creek.*

At length the South Wind coming up again, we put in at Night, and anchor'd in a Creek, which they call *Puerto del Ingles*, the *English Man's Port*, because a Pyrate of that Nation was the first that anchor'd there. We rode in 36 Fathom Water, the Bottom Sand and Shells, N. E. and by N. of the Head of *Copiapo*, and S. and by E. of the Starboard Point of *Caldera*, the nearest. I went the next Day to sound in that Creek, and found a Rocky Bottom towards the Head; and much Water; and, on the contrary, a Sandy Bottom, and less Water on the North-side.

*Description of the Port de la Caldera.*

**TUESDAY** the 13th we sail'd for the Port de la *Caldera*; which is parted from the former by a Point of Land, before which there is a Rock, which we coasted within Pistol-Shot, and so held on along the Starboard Shore; which is very clear, in order to gain upon the Wind, and get into the Anchoring Place, without being obliged to make several Trips. In Conclusion, we came to an Anchor without shifting our Sails, in 10 Fathom Water S. E. and by E. of the most advanced Land on the Starboard Side, the low North Point bearing N. and by E. three Leagues distant. There we unladed a little Corn for the Town of *Copiapo*, and laded Sulphur, which we found upon the Shore, where it had been laid against our coming.

*Anchoring.*

This Port is secured against the South Wind; but in Winter, tho' the North Winds are no longer violent in that Latitude, the Sea runs high. It is the nearest to *Copiapo*, but little frequented, because it affords no Conve- niency: Wood is very scarce there, and they must go five or six Leagues up the Vale, thro' which the River runs, to get it. The Watering-Place is bad; it is taken in a Hollow 50 Paces from the Edge of the Road, where a little brackish Water meets: There is no Dwelling about it, but only a Fisher-

*Wooding,  
Watering, &c.*



a Fisherman's Cottage, at the Bottom of the N. E. Creek. The Town is 14 Leagues distant Eastward, the shortest Way by the Mountains, and 20 Leagues the common Road, which keeps the Course of the River; the Mouth whereof is five Leagues to the Southward of *La Caldera*; as has been said.

All the Shore of *La Caldera* is cover'd with Shells, especially that Sort they call *Locos*\*; so that *Dampier* is in the wrong to say, that there is no Shell-Fish all along that Coast.

*Copiapo* is an open Town, the Houses whereof do not stand in any Order, but scattering up and down. The Gold Mines that have been discover'd there within six Years past, have drawn some few People thither; so that at present there may be above 900 Souls. This Increase of the Number of *Spaniards* has occasion'd an Order for dividing the Lands, by which they take from the poor *Indians* not only their Lands, but their Horses also, which the *Corregidor*, or chief Magistrate, sells to the new Comers for the King's, or rather for his Officers Advantage; under Colour of making more easy the Settlements of those who improve the Mines. There are Mines directly above the Town, and others at two or three Leagues Distance, whence they bring the Ore on Mules to the Mills, which are within the Town. In the Year 1713, there were six of those they call *Trapiches*, and they were making a seventh of that Sort which they call *Ingenio Real*, the Royal Engine, with Hammers, or Pounders, of which we shall speak elsewhere, which can bruise or grind 12 times as much as the *Trapiches*, that is, six *Caxones*, or Chests, a Day, each Chest there yielding 12 Ounces, more or less; it must yield two to pay the Cost; the Ounce of Gold is there sold for 12 or 13 Pieces of Eight cast.

Besides the Gold Mines, there are about *Copiapo* many Mines of Iron, Brass, Tin, and Lead, which they do not think fit to work: There is also much Load-stone, and *Lapis Lazuli*, which the People of the Country do not know.

\* See Plate XX.

*Dampier* wrong.

Account of the Borough of *Copiapo*.

Gold Mines of *Copiapo*.

Mines of all Sorts.

know to be of any Value; these are 14 or 15 Leagues from *Copiapo*, near a Place where there are many Lead Mines. In short, all the Country is there full of Mines of Sal Gemm, for which reason sweet Water is there very scarce: Salt-peter is no less plentiful, being found in the Vales an Inch thick on the Ground.

Sulphur.

On the high Mountains of the Chain call'd *La Cordillera*, 40 Leagues E. S. E. from the Port, there are Mines of the finest Sulphur that can be seen: It is taken pure from a Vein two Foot wide, without needing to be cleans'd. It is worth three Pieces of Eight a *Quintal*, or hundred Weight, at the Port, whence it is carry'd to *Lima*.

Rosin.

At *Copiapo* they have also a little Trade of Stuff for paying of Ships, being a Sort of Rosin coming from a Shrub, the Leaf whereof is like Rosemary; it proceeds from the Branches, and from the Berries, which they cast into large square Cakes two Foot long, and ten or twelve Inches thick: It is very dry, and only good to use instead of Glazing, for the Earthen Jars in which they keep Wine and Brandy; it costs five Pieces of Eight the *Quintal*, or hundred Weight, in the Port. In other respects the Country is barren, scarce yielding enough to subsist the Inhabitants, who have their Provisions from about *Coquimbo*.

Guanaco  
Beasts.  
Bezoar Stones.

In the Mountains of this Country there are abundance of *Guanaco's*, a Sort of Creature between a Camel and a wild Goat, in whose Bodies the *Bezoar Stones* are found; formerly of such Value in Physick, that they were worth their Weight in Silver; but now it has been found out that Crab's Eyes and other *Alkalis* can serve instead of them; they have lost much of their Value in *France*; however the *Spaniards* give great Rates for them still.

Between *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, which is 100 Leagues, there is no Town nor Village, but only three or four Farms; and between *Copiapo* and *Atacama* in *Peru*, the Country is so hideous and desert, that the Mules starve for want of Grass and Water. In eighty Leagues Length there is but one River, which runs from Sun-rising till it sets, perhaps because

because that Planet melts the Snow, which freezes again at Night; the *Indians* call it *Anchallalac*, that is, the Hypocrite. Those are the dreadful Mountains which divide *Chili* and *Pern*, where the Cold is sometimes so excessive, that Men are frozen up, their Faces looking as if they laugh'd; whence, according to some Historians, the Name of *Chili* is derived, signifying Cold; tho' beyond those Mountains the Country is very temperate. We read in the History of the Conquest of *Chili*, that some of the first *Spaniards* who pass'd it died there, sitting upright on their Mules. A much better Way has been now found out along the Sea-Coast.

The Sulphur we were to lade being brought aboard, we <sup>Departure</sup> set sail on *Sunday* the 18th of *June* for *Arica*; but the <sup>from Copin-</sup> Calms and North Winds kept us within Sight of Land for some Days: The Owner of the Ship and the *Spanish* Captain being concern'd at that Delay, perform'd, with the Sailors, a nine Days Devotion to *S. Francis Xaverius*, from whom they expected a Miracle, which was not wrought at the appointed Time; they were so enraged at it, that they loudly declared they would no more pray to the Saints, since they did not vouchsafe to hear them. The Captain then address'd himself to a little Image of the blessed Virgin, which he hung at the Mizzen-Mast, and often said to it, *My dear Friend, I will not take you down from hence, till you give us a fair Wind*; and if it happen'd that our Lady of *Bethlem* did not perform, he hung there our Lady of *Mount Carmel*, of the *Rosary*, or of the *Solitude*, or *Affliction*; whence may be inferr'd after what Manner most *Spaniards* honour Images, and what Confidence they repose in them.

At length a fresh Gale at S.S.E. carry'd us into the Latitude of 22 Degrees 25 Minutes, which is that of *Cobija*, the <sup>Cobija Pern.</sup> Port to the Town of *Atacama*, which is 40 Leagues up the Country. It is to be known by this Land-mark, that from *Morro Moreno*, or the Brown Head-land, which is ten Leagues to the Windward, the Mountain goes on rising till it

it comes directly over the Creek where it is, and from thence it begins to lower a little; so that the same is the highest Part of the Coast, tho' but little: This Mark is more certain than that of the white Spots seen there, because there are many all along that Coast.

*Not safe.*

Tho' we did not put in there, I will not omit inserting what I have been told by the *French* who have anchor'd there: They say it is only a little Creek, a third Part of a League in Depth, where there is little Shelter against the South and S. W. Winds, which are the most usual on the Coast.

They who will go ashore, must do it among Rocks, which form a small Channel towards the South, being the only one where Boats can come in without Danger.

*Cobija Village.*

The Village of *Cobija*, consists of about fifty Houses of *Indians*, made of Sea Wolves, or Seal's Skins. The Soil being barren, they generally live upon Fish, and some little *Indian* Wheat and *Topinambours*, or *Papas*, brought them from *Atacama* in Exchange for Fish. In the Village, there is only one little Rivulet of Water, somewhat brackish, and all the Trees are four Palm, and two Fig-trees, which may serve for a Land-mark to the Anchoring-place. There is no Grass at all for Cattle, but they are obliged to send their Sheep to a Break towards the Top of the Mountain, where they find some Sprigs to subsist on.

This Port being destitute of all Things, it has never been frequented by any but *French*; who to draw the Merchants to them, have sought the nearest Places to the Mines, and the most remote from the King's Officers, to facilitate the Trade, and the Transporting of Plate and Commodities. This Port is the nearest to *Liper*, and to *Potosi*, which is nevertheless above a hundred Leagues distant, through a Desert Country; the Road whereof is thus: From *Cobija* they must travel the first Day 22 Leagues without Wood or Water, to come to the little River of *Chacanza*, the Water whereof is very Salt.

*Road from  
Cobija to  
Potosi.  
Chacanza  
River.*

Next, they must travel seven Leagues to find the like again: In short, it is the same River under a different Name.

Then

Then nine Leagues to *Calama*, a Village of ten or twelve *Calama* <sup>Indians</sup> <sup>17<sup>th</sup></sup>; two Leagues short of it, they pass through a <sup>14<sup>th</sup></sup> Wood of *Algarrovo*, or *Carobs*, being a Kind of *Tamarinds*.

From *Calama* to *Chioucbiou*, or the Lower *Atacama*, six <sup>Chioucbiou</sup> Leagues; being a Village of eight or ten *Indians*, 17 Leagues <sup>Village</sup> South from the *Upper Atacama*, where the *Corregidor*, or chief Magistrate, of *Cobija* resides.

From *Chioucbiou* to *Lipes* is about sixty Leagues, which <sup>Desert Road</sup> are travel'd in seven or eight Days, without meeting any Dwelling; and there is a Mountain of twelve Leagues, without Wood or Water, to be pass'd.

*Lipes* is a Place of Mines, as the *Spaniards* call it *Assi-Lipes* <sup>Mines</sup> <sup>ento</sup>, that is Settlement, which have for many Years yielded much Silver; without reckoning the Settlements of other lesser Mines in the Neighbourhood, as *Escala*, *Aquegua*, and *S. Christopher*, where there are six. *Lipes* is divided into two Parts, at least half a Quarter of a League distant from each other; the one call'd *Lipes*, and the other *Guaico*. <sup>Guaico</sup> <sup>Mines</sup> In these two Places, including the People that work at the Bottom of the Hill where the Mines are, there may be about 800 Persons of all Sorts. That Hill is in the midst between *Guaico* and *Lipes*, all full of Mouths of Mines; one of which is so deep, that they came to the Bottom of the Rock, under which there was Sand and Water, which they call'd the *Antipodes*.

From *Lipes* to *Potosi* is about seventy Leagues, which they travel in six or seven Days, without meeting in all that Way above two or three *Indian* Cottages.

*Potosi* is that Town, so famous throughout all the World <sup>Potosi Town</sup> <sup>and Mines</sup> for the immense Wealth formerly drawn from thence, and still taken out of the Mountain, at the Bottom of which it stands: There are reckon'd to be above 60000 *Indians* and 10000 *Spaniards*, or *Whites*; the King obliges the Neighbouring Parishes to send thither a certain Number of *Indians* yearly, to work at the Mines, which is call'd *Mita*. The *Corregidores*, or chief Magistrates, cause them

to set out on the Feast of *Corpus Christi*. Most of them take their Wives and Children with them; who are seen to go to that Servitude with Tears in their Eyes, and with Repugnance; however, after the Year's Duty, there are many who forget their Habitations, and continue settled at *Potosi*, which is the Occasion of that Place's being so populous.

The Mines are much decreas'd of their Value, and the Mint does not coin one Quarter of what it did formerly: There were once 120 Mills, at this time there are only 40; and for the most part, there is not Employment for half of them.

*Conceited Remark.*

That Place is said to be so cold, that formerly the *Spanish* Women could not lie-in there, but were obliged to go twenty or thirty Leagues from thence, to avoid being expos'd to the Danger of Dying with their Infants; but now some lie-in there. That Effect of their Tenderneſs was look'd upon as a Punishment from Heaven, because the *Indian* Women are not subject to that Inconveniency: The other Particulars of that Town are to be found in several Relations.

*Pavellon Island.*

Having pass'd *Cobija*, we were becalm'd in 21 Degrees Latitude, near the little Island call'd *Pavellon*, because it looks like a Tent; the upper Half black, and the lower white. Behind this Island, on the Continent, is a little Creek for Boats: On that Coast there are Beasts, which the Inhabitants call Lions, tho' much differing from those of *Africa*. I have seen their Skins stuff'd full of Straw, the Head whereof somewhat resembles a Wolf and a Tiger, but the Tail is less than that of either of them. These Creatures are not to be fear'd, for they fly from Men; and do Harm only among the Cattle. We continued two Days becalm'd, near the Island *Pavellon*, without being sensible of any Current.

*Lions of Peru.*

*Carapocho Head-land, Iquique Island.*

Some small Gales set us forward to the Land's Head call'd *Carapocho*, at the Foot whereof is the Island of *Iquique*, in a Creek where there is Anchorage, but no Water; the

the *Indians* who live on the Continent are obliged to go and fetch it ten Leagues from thence, at the Break of *Pissagua*, with a Boat they have for that Purpose; but as it sometimes happens, that the contrary Winds keep them back, they are then obliged to fetch it five Leagues by Land, at the Rivulet of *Pica*.

The Island of *Iquique* is also inhabited by *Indians* and *Blacks*, who are there employ'd to gather *Guano*, being a yellowish Earth thought to be the Dung of Birds, because besides that it stinks like that of the *Cormorants*, there have been Feathers of Birds found very deep in it: However it is hard to conceive, how so great a Quantity of it could be gather'd there; for during the Space of a hundred Years past, they have laden ten or twelve Ships every Year with it, to manure the Land, as shall be observ'd lower; and it is scarce perceivable that the Height of the Island is abated, tho' it is not above three Quarters of a League in Compass; and that besides what is carry'd away by Sea, they load abundance of Mules with it for the Vines and plow'd Lands of *Tarapaca*, *Pica*, and other Neighbouring Places; which makes some believe, that it is a peculiar Sort of Earth: For my part, I am not of that Opinion; for it is true, the Sea Fowls are there so very numerous, that it may be said without romancing, that the Air is sometimes darken'd with them. In the Bay of *Arica*, infinite Multitudes of them are seen, rendezvousing every Morning about ten o' Clock, and every Evening about six, to take the Fish which at that time comes up to the Surface of the Water, where they make a Sort of regular Fishery.

In the Year 1713, Silver Mines were discover'd twelve Leagues from *Iquique*, which they design'd to work out of hand; it is hop'd they will be rich, according to all Appearance.

From *Iquique* to *Arica*, the Coast is all the Way very high and clear, Ships must run close along it, for fear lest the Currents, which in Summer set N. and N. W. should drive them out to Sea. However, it is also true,

that in Winter they sometimes set to the Southward; as we and several others have found by Experience.

*Camarones  
and Vitor  
Breaks.*

Next to the Break of *Pissagua* is that of *Camarones*, which is larger; and four Leagues to the Windward of *Arica*, is that of *Vitor*, where there is Wood and fresh Water: It is the only Place where the Ships anchoring at *Arica* can be supply'd with them.

*Marks to  
know Arica.*

When come within about a League of the Break of *Camarones*, the Head-land of *Arica* begins to appear, which looks like an Island, because it is much lower than the Coast towards the Windward; but when come within three or four Leagues of it, then it is known by a little low Island that is before it like a Rock, and by its Steepness, wherein none can be mistaken, because beyond it is a low Coast. It is in 18 Degrees 20 Minutes of South Latitude.

*Arica Head-  
land.*

This Head-land on the West Side is all white with the Dung of the Sea Fowls call'd *Cormorants*, who there gather in such Numbers, that it is quite cover'd with them: This is the most remarkable Place of all the Coast. When the Weather is fair, there may be seen up the Land the Mountain of *Tacora*, which seems to rise up to the Clouds, forming two Heads at the Top; near which is the Way that leads to *La Paz*. The Air there is so different from what is breath'd before, that those who are not used to pass it, suffer the same Dizziness in their Heads, and Qualms in their Stomachs, that People do usually at Sea.

#### Description of the Road of Arica.

*Plate XXI.*

*Anchorage.*

ENTERING the Road of *Arica*, Ships may coast the Island of *Guano*, which is at the Foot of the Head-land within a Cable's length, and go and anchor N. and by E. of that Island, and N.W. from the Steeple of *San Juan de Dios*, distinguishable by its Height, from all the Buildings in the Town: There is nine Fathom Water, the Bottom tough Ooze, little out of Danger from the Rocks under Water, which



in several Places of the Road cut the Cables: There is no Shelter from the South and S.W. But the Island *Guano* something breaks the Swelling of the Sea.

As it is advantageous on that Account, it is offensive for the Stench of Birds Dung that covers it, and the more, because it lies directly to the Windward of the Ships; it is even thought, that it makes the Port unwholsome in Summer; but it seems to be more likely, that the Distempers of that Season are the Effect of the great Heats which the Winds cannot temper; because the Course of the Air is stopp'd by the North Coast, which forms a Gut of Sand and Rocks continually burning.

However, the Water Ships take in is good enough, tho' it be had after an odd Manner. When the Tide ebbs, they dig about half a Foot deep in the Sand on the Shore, from whence it falls off, and from those so shallow Cavities they take good fresh Water, which keeps well at Sea.

The Shore being full of great Stones, having little Water, and always rough, the Boats cannot come to set any thing ashore, but only in three little Creeks, or Gurs, the best of which is that at the Foot of the Headland. To enter it, they must pass between two Rocks, and coast along that on the Starboard Side, among Stones: It is bare at low Water, and may be perceiv'd at high: When Boats have pass'd it, they turn short to the Larboard Side, steering directly to the first Houses; and thus they enter the great Creek, the Bottom whereof is almost upon a Level, and there is so little Water at low Ebb, that Canoes are not afloat, and Boats laden touch at high Water; so that, to prevent their being staved, they are obliged to strengthen the Keel with Iron Bars.

To obstruct the Landing of Enemies in that Place, the Spaniards had made Entrenchments of unburnt Bricks, and a Battery in the Form of a little Fort, which flanks the three Creeks; but it is built after a wretched Manner, and is now quite falling to Ruin: So that the said Village deserves nothing less than the Name of a strong Place given it by

Dampier's by Dampier, because he was repuls'd there in the Year  
*False Account.* 1680. The English being convinced of the Difficulty of  
 landing before the Town, landed at the Creek of *Chacota*,  
 which is to the Southward of the Head-land, whence they  
 march'd over the Mountain to plunder *Arica*.

*Arica Town.* Those Ravages, and the Earthquakes which are frequent  
 there, have at last ruin'd that Town, which is at present  
*Plat XXI.* no other than a Village of about 150 Families, most of  
 them Blacks, Mulattoes and *Indians*, and but few Whites.  
 On the 26th of *November* 1605, the Sea being agitated by  
 an Earthquake, suddenly flooded and bore down the  
 greatest Part of it; the Ruins of the Streets are to be  
 seen to this Day, stretching out near a Quarter of a League  
 from

*Plat XXI. Page 150. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the Road of *ARICA*, on the Coast of *Peru*, in 18 Degrees,  
 20 Minutes of South Latitude.

- Village de *S. Michel de Sapa*, *The Village of S. Michael de Sapa.*
- Vallée d' *Arica*, *The Vale of Arica.*
- Rivière, *A Rivulet.*
- Morne, *The Head-land.*
- Anse de *Chacota*, *Chacota Bay.*
- Illa del *Guano*, *Guano Island.*
- Rade de *Arsea*, *Arsea Road.*
- Echelle d'une lieue Marine, *A Scale of a Sea League.*
- Vüe de Reconnoissance de *Arica*, *The Prospect to know Arica by.*

The Plan of the Town of *ARICA*, which contains great Part of the  
 general Plan.

- D. *Juan de Mur*, *Duo John de Mur.*
- S. *Francois*, *S. Francis.*
- Marais, *The Marsh.*
- Partie du Morne, *part of the Head-land.*
- Ruines du Corps de Garde, *Ruins of the Corps de Garde.*
- Passage des Chaloupes, *The Way for the Boats.*
- Illa de *Guana*, *Guana Island.*
- A. *S. Mark's Parish.*
- B. *The Square.*
- C. *The Mercenarians.*
- D. *S. John of God.*
- E. *The Fort.*
- F. *The Ruins of the Entrenchments.*
- G. *The Magazines of Guana.*
- H. *Project de S. Francois, The Plan of S. Francis.*
- I. *Quai, or Quay.*
- K. *Watering-Place on the Edge of the Sea, in the Sand.*

PLAN  
DE LA

planche. XXI. page. 134.

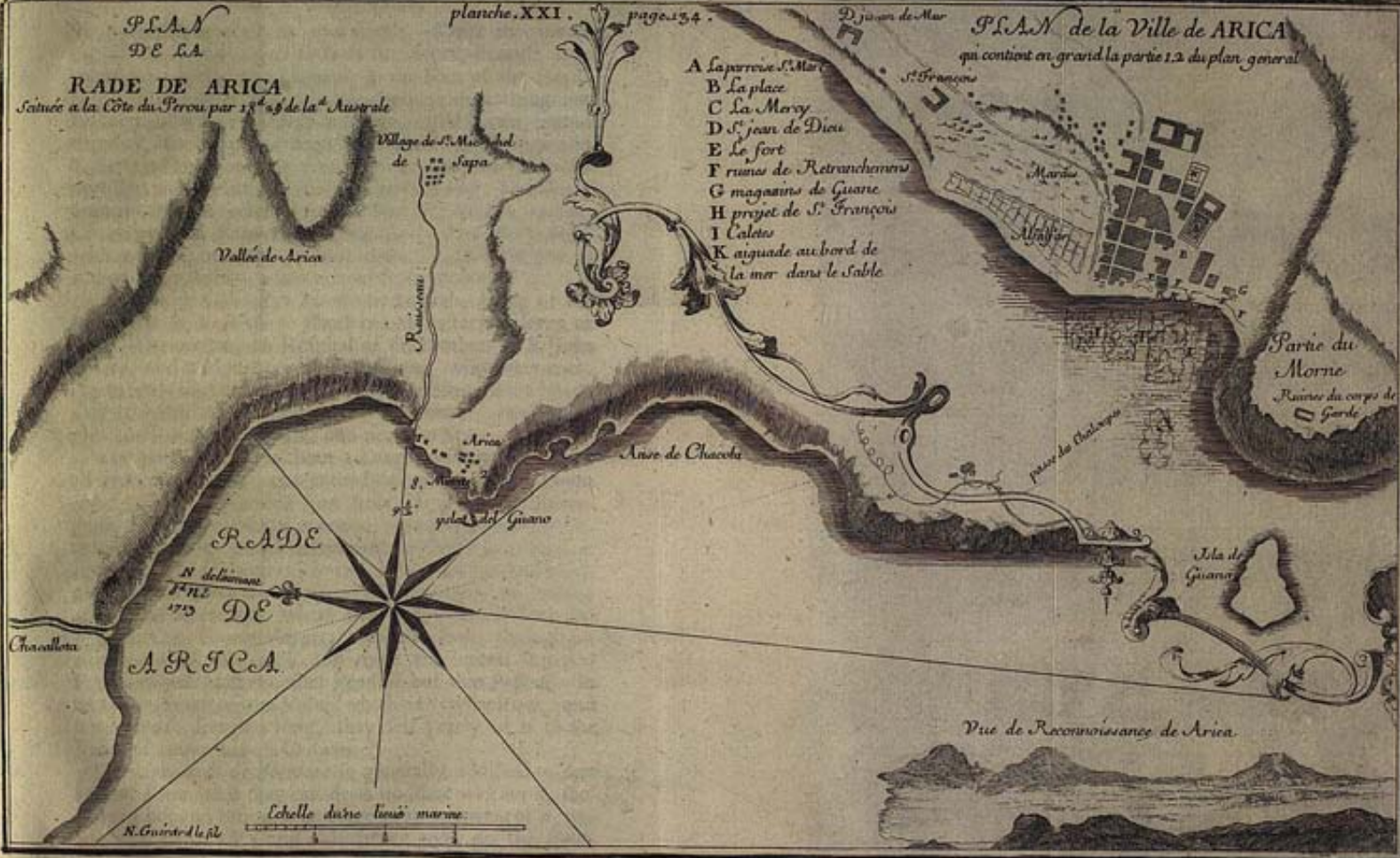
PLAN de la Ville de ARICA

qui contient en grand la partie 1.2 du plan general

RADE DE ARICA

Située a la Côte du Perou par 18° 29' de la 4<sup>e</sup> Australe

- A La paroisse S. Marc
- B La place
- C La Morsy
- D S. Jean de Dieu
- E Le fort
- F ruines de Retranchement
- G magasins de Guano
- H projet de S. François
- I Caleta
- K aiguade au bord de la mer dans le sable



Vallee de Arica

Village de S. Michel de Sapa

Ruisseau

Arica

Anse de Chacota

Caleta

passage de Chalvayo

Isla de Guano

Partie du Morne  
Ruines du corps de Garde

RADE  
DE  
ARICA

N de l'annee  
1775

N. Guindé de file

Echelle d'une lieue marine

Vue de Reconnoissance de Arica



from the Place where it now stands. What remains of the Town is not subject to such Accidents, because it is seated on a little rising Ground, at the Foot of the Headland: Most of the Houses are built with nothing but Fascines, of a Sort of Flags or Sedge, call'd *Totora*, bound together, standing end-ways with Leather, Thongs and Canes crossing them; or else they are made of Canes set upright, and the Intervals fill'd up with Earth. The Use of unburnt Bricks is reserv'd for the stateliest Houses, and for Churches; No Rain ever falling there, they are cover'd with nothing but Mats, which makes the Houses look as if they were Ruins, when beheld from without.

The Parish Church is handsome enough, being of the *Churches* Invocation of *S. Mark*: There is a Monastery of seven or eight *Morganians*, an Hospital of the Brothers of *S. John of God*, and a Monastery of *Franciscans*, who were coming to settle in the Town, after having destroy'd the House they had half a Quarter of a League from it, tho' in the pleasantest Part of the Vale, and near the Sea.

The Vale of *Arica* is about a League wide next the Sea; *Arica Vale* all a barren Country, except the Place where the old Town stood, which is divided into little Meadows of Clover-grass, some Spots of Sugar-canes, with Olive and Cotton-trees intermix'd, and Marthes full of the Sedge, used as above to build Houses: It is thrust in to the Eastward, growing narrower that Way. A League up is the Village of *S. Michael de Sapa*, where they begin to cultivate the *Agi*, that is, *Guinea Pepper*, which is sown throughout all the rest of the Vale; and there are several scatter'd Farms, which have no other Product but that Pepper. *Agi Guinea Pepper*. In that little Space of the Vale, which is very narrow, and not above six Leagues long, they sell yearly of it to the Value of above 80000 Crowns.

The *Spaniards* of *Peru* are so generally addicted to that Sort of Spice, that they can dress no Meat without it, tho' *Trade of Arica* so very hot and biting, that there is no enduring of it, unless well used to it; and as it cannot grow on the *Puna*, that

that is, the Mountain Country, abundance of Merchants come down every Year, and carry away all the *Guinea* Pepper that grows in the Vales of *Arica*, *Sana*, *Taena*, *Locumba*, and others ten Leagues about; whence it is reckon'd there is exported to the Value of above 600000 Pieces of Eight, tho' sold cheap.

Great Fertility.

Considering the Smalness of the Place, it is hard to believe that such vast Quantities should go from them; for, excepting the Vales, the Country is every where so parch'd up, that there is no green to be seen. This Wonder is produced by means of that Bird's Dung, which, as was said before, is brought from *Iquique*, and fertilizes the Earth in such Manner, that it yields 4 or 500 for one, of all Sorts of Grain, Wheat, *Indian* Corn, &c. but particularly the *Agi*, or *Guinea* Pepper, when they know how to manage it right.

Cultivating of *Guinea* Pepper.

When the Seed is sprouted, and fit to be transplanted, the Plants are set winding, that is, not in a strait Line, but like an S, to the end that the Disposition of the Furrows, which convey the Water to them, may carry it gently to the Foot of the Plants; then they lay about each Plant of *Guinea* Pepper as much *Guana*, or Birds Dung, above-mention'd, as will lie in the Hollow of a Man's Hand. When it is in Blossom, they add a little more; and, lastly, when the Fruit is form'd, they add a good Handful, always taking care to water it, because it never rains in that Country; otherwise, the Salts it contains not being dissolv'd, would burn the Plants, as has been found by Experience. For this Reason it is laid down at several Times with a regular Management, the Necessity whereof has been found by Use, by the Difference of the Crops produced.

Llamas, Sheep of Peru.

For carrying of the *Guana*, or Dung, to the Lands, they generally, at *Arica*, make use of that Sort of little Camels, by the *Indians* of *Peru* call'd *Llamas*; by those of *Chili*, *Chillebueque*; and, by the *Spaniards*, *Carneros de la Tierra*, or the Country Sheep. Their Heads are small in Proportion.

Proportion to their Bodies, something resembling both a Horse's and Sheep's Head; the upper Lip, like a Hare's, is cleft in the middle, through which they spit ten Paces from them against any that offend them; and if that Spit-  
See Plate XXII.  
 tle falls on their Faces, it makes a reddish Spot, which is often follow'd by an Itching. Their Necks are long, bowing downwards like the Camels, towards the fore Part of the Body, which would well enough resemble them, if they had a Bunch on the Back. The Figure I here insert may serve to explain what is wanting in this Description: Their Height is from four Foot to four and a half.

They generally carry only a hundred Weight, and walk Their Burden, Food, &c. holding their Heads up, with wonderful Gravity and Majesty, so regular a Pace, that no Beating will make them go out of it. At Night, it is impossible to make them move with their Burden; they lie down till it is taken off, to go and graze: Their common Food is a Sort of Grass, somewhat like the small Rush, bating that it is a little finer, and has a sharp Point at the end; it is call'd *Ycho*: All the Mountains are cover'd with nothing else; they eat little, and never drink, so that they are Creatures easily kept. Tho' they have Cloven Feet like Sheep, yet they make use of them in the Mines to carry the Ore to the Mill; as soon as loaded, they go without any Guide to the Place where they are used to be unloaded. Above the Foot they have a Spur, which makes them sure-footed among the Rocks, because they make use of it to hold, or hook by. Their Wool has a strong Scent, and even disagreeable; it is long, white, gray and russet in Spots, and very fine, tho' much inferior to that of the *Vicunna's*.

The *Vicunna's* are shaped much like the *Llamas*, bating Vicunna's hair taken, that they are smaller, and lighter: Their Wool being extraordinary fine and much valu'd; they are sometimes hunted after such a manner as deserves to be related. Many *Indians* get together to drive them into some narrow Pass, where they have made Cords fast across, three or four Foot from the Ground, with Bits of Wool and Cloth hanging at them. The *Vicunna's* coming to pass, are so frightened

at the Motion of those Bits of Wood and Cloth, that they dare not go any farther; so that they press together in a Throng, and then the *Indians* kill them with Stones made fast at the End of Leather-Thongs. If any *Guanaco's* happen to be with them, they leap over the Cords, and then all the *Vicunna's* follow them: The *Guanaco's* are larger and more corpulent; they are also call'd *Viscacha's*.

*Guanaco's*

*Alpaques*  
*useful*  
*Crea-*  
*tures.*

There is another Sort of Black Creatures like the *Llamas*, call'd *Alpaques*, whose Wool is extraordinary fine, but their Legs are shorter, and their Snout contracted, so that it has some Resemblance of a human Countenance. The *Indians* make several uses of those Creatures; they make them carry a Burden of about a hundred Weight; their Wool serves to make Stuffs, Cords and Sacks; their Bones are used to make Weavers Utensils; and lastly, their Dung serves to make Fire to dress Meat, and to warm them.

*Former Trade*  
*of Arica.*

Before the last Wars, the *Armadilla*, or little Fleet, composed of some Ships of the King's and of private Persons, resorted every Year to *Arica*, to bring thither the *European* Commodities and Quick-silver for the Mines of *la Paz*, *Oruro*, *la Plata*, or *Chuquisaca*, *Potosi*, and *Lipes*; and then carry'd to *Lima* the King's Plate, being the Fifth of what Metal is drawn from the Mines; but since no more Galeons come to *Portobelo*, and the *French* have carry'd on the Trade, that Port has been the most considerable Mart of all the Coast, to which the Merchants of the five Towns above, being the richest in Mines, resort. It is true, that the Port of *Cobija* is nearer to *Lipes* and *Potosi*, than *Arica*; but being so desert and barren, that there is nothing to be had for Men or Mules to subsist, they chosse rather to go some Leagues farther, and be sure to find what they want; besides that it is not a very difficult Matter for them to bring their Plate thither privately in the Mass, and to compound with the *Corregidores*, or chief Magistrates, to save paying the Fifth to the King.

The



## The Manner of taking the Silver out of the Mines :

O R,

*The Management of the Ore to reduce it into Masses.*

THOSE the Spaniards call *Pinnas*, are porous and light Masses of Silver, made of dry'd *Amalgama*, or *Paste*, before form'd by the Mixture of Quick-silver, and the Dust of Silver taken out of the Mines, as I am going to relate.

After having broken the Stone taken out of the Vein of Ore, they grind it in those Mills with Grind-stones above-mention'd, or in the *Ingenios Reales*, or Royal Engines, which consist of Hammers or Pounders, like the *French* *Royal Engine.* *Plaster-Mills*. They have generally a Wheel of about 25 or 30 Foot Diameter, whose long Axle-tree is set with smooth Triangles, which, as they turn, hook or lay hold of the Handles of the Iron Hammers, and lift them up to a certain Height, from whence they drop at once at every Turn, and they generally weighing about 200 Weight, fall so violently, that they crush and reduce the hardest Stone to Powder, by their Weight alone. They afterwards sift that Powder through Iron, or Copper Sieves, to take away the finest, and return the rest to the Mill. When the Ore happens to be mix'd with some Metals, which obstruct its falling to Powder, as Copper, they then calcine it in an Oven, and pound it over again.

At the little Mines, where they use none but Mills with *Writing the Ore.* Grind-stones, they, for the most part, grind the Ore with Water, which makes a liquid Mud, that runs into a Receiver; whereas, when it is ground dry, it must be afterwards steep'd, and well moulded together with the Feet for a long Time.

To this Purpose, they make a Court, or Floor, where *Moulding and Mixing.* they dispose that Mud in square Parcels, about a Foot thick, each of them containing half a *Caxon*, or Chest, that is 25

Quintals, or Hundred Weight of Ore; and these they call *Cuerpor*, that is, Bodies. On each of them they throw about two hundred Weight of Sea, or common Salt, more or less, according to the Nature of the Ore, which they mould and incorporate with the Earth for two or three Days. Then they add to it a certain Quantity of Quick-silver, squeezing a Purse made of a Skin into which they put it, to make it fall in Drops, with which they sprinkle the Body or Mals equally. According to the Nature and Quality of the Ore, they allow to each Mals ten, fifteen, or twenty Pounds; for the richer it is, the more Mercury it requires to draw to it the Silver it contains; so that they know not the Quantity but by long Experience. An *Indian* is employ'd to mould one of those square Parcels eight times a day, to the end that the Mercury may incorporate with the Silver; to that effect they often mix Lime with it, when the Ore happens to be greasy, where Caution is to be used; for they say it sometimes grows so hot, that they neither find Mercury nor Silver in it, which seems incredible. Sometimes they also strew among it some Lead, or Tin Ore, to facilitate the Operation of the Mercury, which is slower in very cold Weather than when it is temperate; for which Reason, at *Potosi* and *Lipes*, they are often obliged to mould the Ore during a whole Month, or a Month and half; but in more temperate Countries the *Amalgama* is made in eight or ten Days.

*Fire used in  
some Places.*

To facilitate the Operation of the Mercury, they in some Places, as at *Puro* and elsewhere, make their *Buiterrons*, or Floors on Arches, under which they keep Fires, to heat the Powder of the Ore for 24 Hours, on a Pavement of Bricks.

*Essaying.*

When it is thought that the Mercury has attracted all the Silver, the Essayer takes a little Ore from each Parcel apart, which he washes in an Earthen Plate, or a Wooden Bowl, and by the Colour of the Mercury found at the Bottom of the Bowl, knows whether it has had its Effect; for when it is blackish, the Ore is too much heated, and then they add more

more Salt, or some other Drug: They say that then the Mercury *dispara*, that is, shoots, or flies away; if the Mercury is white, they put a Drop under the Thumb, and pressing it hastily, the Silver there is among it, remains sticking to the Thumb, and the Mercury slips away in little Drops. In Conclusion, when they perceive that all the Silver is gather'd, they carry the Ore to a Bason into which a little Stream of Water runs, to wash it, much in the same nature as I have said they wash the Gold, excepting that this being only a Mud, without Stones, instead of a Hook to stir it, an *Indian* stirs it with his Feet, to dissolve it. From the first Bason it falls into a second, where another *Indian* is, who stirs it again, to dissolve it thoroughly, and loosen the Silver: From the second it passes into a third, where the same is repeated, to the end that what has not sunk to the Bottom of the first and second may not escape the third.

When all has been wash'd, and the Water runs clear, they find at the Bottom of the Basons, which are lined with Leather, the Mercury incorporated with the Silver, which they call *La Pella*. It is put into a Woolen Bag, hanging up for some of the Quicksilver to drain through; they bind, beat, and press it as much as they can, laying a Weight upon it with flat Pieces of Wood; and when they have got out as much as they can, they put that Paste into a Mould of Wooden Planks; which, being bound together, generally form the Figure of an Octogon Pyramid cut short, the Bottom whereof is a Copper-plate, full of little Holes. There they stir, in order to fasten it; and when they design to make many *Pinna's*, as they call them, that is Lumps of various Weights, they divide them with little Beds, or Layers of Earth, which hinder their coming together. To that end the *Pella*, or *Mals*, must be weigh'd, deducting two Thirds for the Mercury that is in it, and they know within a small Matter what near Silver there is.

They then take off the Mould, and place the *Pinna*, or *Mals*, with its Copper Base on a *Frevet*, or such-like Instrument,

strument, standing over a great Earthen Vessel full of Water, and cover it with an Earthen Cap, or Covering, which they again cover with lighted Coals; which Fire they feed for some Hours, that the Mals may grow violent hot, and the Mercury that is in it evaporate in Smoak; but that Smoak having no Passage out, it circulates in the Hollow that is between the Mals and the Cap, or Covering, till coming down to the Water that is underneath, it condenses and sinks to the Bottom, again converted into Quicksilver. Thus little of it is lost, and the same serves several Times; but the Quantity must be increas'd, because it grows weak: However, they formerly consumed at *Potosi* 6 or 7000 Quintals, or Hundred Weight, of Quick-silver, every Year, as *Acosta* writes, by which a Judgment may be made of the Silver they got.

Way of Heat-  
ing.  
Plate XXII.

There being neither Wood nor Coals throughout the greater Part of *Peru*, but only that Plant they call *Ybo*, before spoken of; they heat the Masses by Means of an Oven placed near the *Desazogadera*, that is the Machine for drying the Silver and separating the Mercury, and the Heat is convey'd through a Pipe, which violently draws it, as may be seen in this Figure.

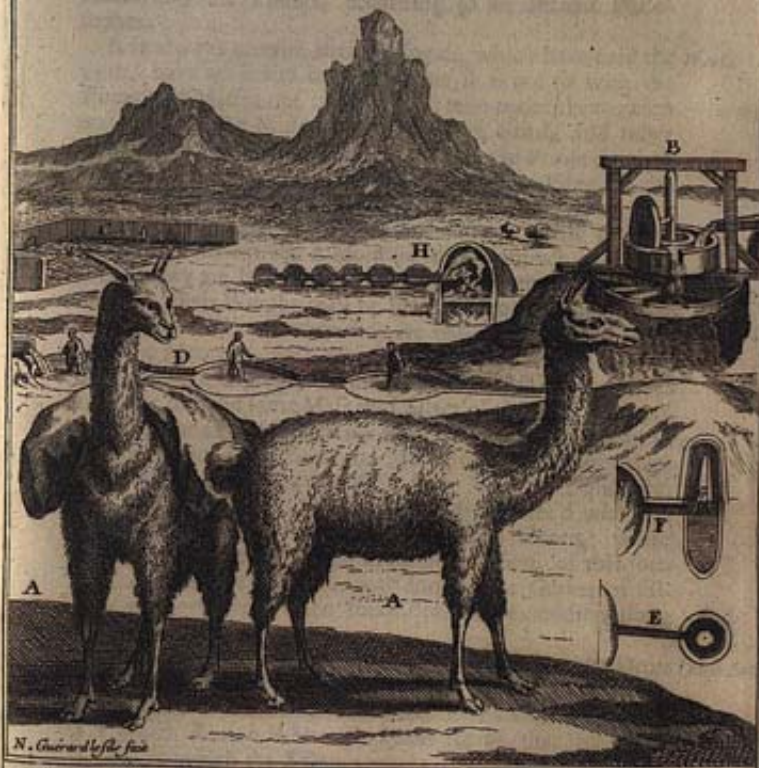
Casting and  
paying the  
Esfib.

When the Mercury is evaporated, there remains nothing but a spongy Lump of contiguous Grains of Silver, very light, and almost mouldring, which the *Spaniards* call *La Pinna*, and is a Contraband Commodity from the Mines, because, by the Laws of the Kingdom, they are obliged to carry it to the King's Receipt, or to the Mint, to pay the Fifth to his Majesty. There those Masses are cast into Ingots,

Plate XXII. Page 158. explain'd in English.

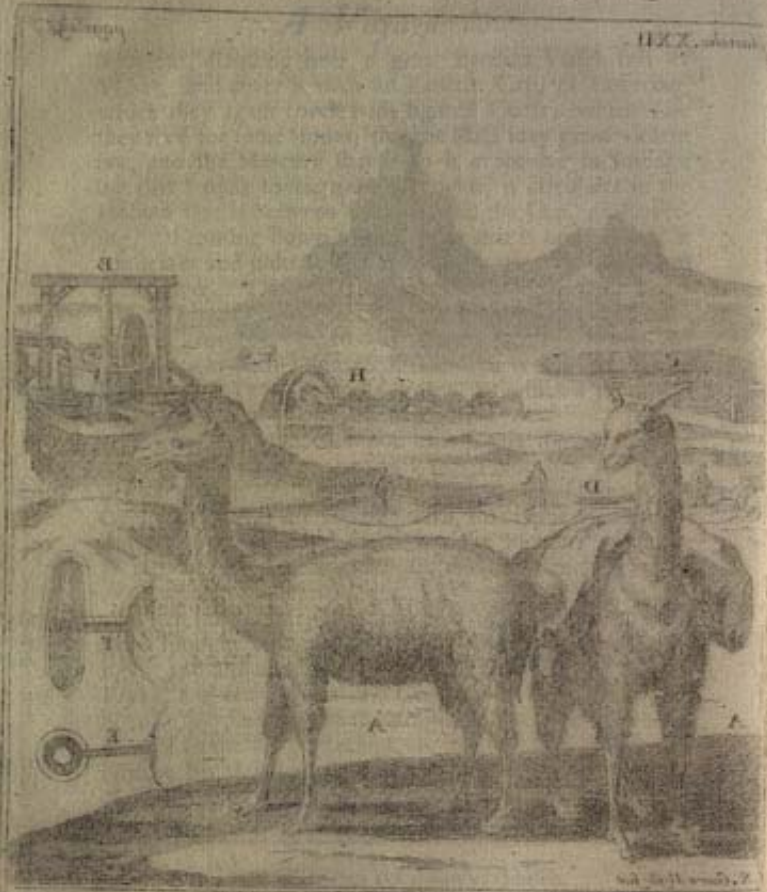
- |  |   |
|--|---|
| A. Llamas, or Sheep of Peru.             | E. The plan of the Instrument to draw off the Quick-silver. |
| B. Trapiche, or a Mill to grind Ore.     | F. The Profile of the same.                                 |
| C. Bouteron, or a Coar to mould the Ore. | G. The Mass of Silver.                                      |
| D. Basins to wash it.                    | H. The Furnace to separate the Quick-silver.                |





N. Guirre d'après les lieux

- |   |                                 |
|---|---------------------------------|
| A Llamas ou moutons du Perou                | E Plan de la dorazogadera       |
| B Trapiche ou moulin a minerai              | F Profil de la dorazogadera     |
| C Bailerons ou cour ou lon petri le minerai | G La pigne                      |
| D Bassins a laver                           | H Fourneau a tirer le visargent |



A. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 B. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 C. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 D. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 E. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 F. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 G. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 H. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 I. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 K. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 L. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 M. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 N. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 O. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 P. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 Q. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 R. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 S. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 T. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 U. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 V. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 W. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 X. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 Y. Llamas ou moutons de Perou  
 Z. Llamas ou moutons de Perou

gots, on which the Arms of the Crown are stamp'd, as also those of the Place where they were cast, their Weight and Quality, with the Fineness of the Silver, to answer the Measure of all Things, according to an ancient Philosopher.

It is always certain, that the *Ingots*, which have paid the *Fraud*, Fifth, have no Fraud in them; but it is not so with the *Pinna*, or Masses not cast: Those who make them, often convey into the Middle of them Iron, Sand, and other Things, to increase the Weight; so that in Prudence they ought to be open'd, and made red-hot at the Fire, for the more Certainty; for if falsify'd, the Fire will either turn it black or yellow, or melt more easily. This Tryal is also useful to extract a Moisture they contract in Places where they are laid on purpose to make them the heavier. In short, their Weight may be increas'd one Third, by dipping them in Water when they are red-hot; as also to separate the Mercury, with which the Bottom of the Mass is always more impregnated than the Top: It also sometimes happens that the same Mass is of Silver of different Fineness.

The Stones taken from the Mines, the Ore, or to speak in the Language of *Pern*, the Metal from which the Silver is extracted, is not always of the same Nature, Consistence, or Colour; there is some white and gray, mix'd with red or bluish Spots, which is call'd *Plata blanca*, white Silver; the Mines of *Liper* are most of them of this sort. For the most part there appear some little Grains of Silver, and even very often small Branches extending along the Layers of the Stone.

There are some on the other hand, as black as the Dross *Oiber Sars* of Iron, in which the Silver does not appear, call'd *Negrillo*, that is blackish; sometimes it is black with Lead, for which Reason it is call'd *Plomo Ronco*, that is, coarse Lead, in which the Silver appears if scratch'd with something that is harsh; and it is generally the richest, and got with least Charge; because instead of moulding it with Quicksilver, it is melted in Furnaces, where the  
Lead

Lead evaporates by dint of Fire, and leaves the Silver pure and clean. From that sort of Mines the *Indians* drew their Silver; because having no use of Mercury, as the *Europeans* have, they only wrought those whose Ore would melt, and having but little Wood, they heated their Furnaces with the *Yeco* above-mention'd; and the Dung of the *Llamas*, or Sheep, and other Beasts, exposing them on the Mountains, that the Wind might keep the Fire fierce. This is all the Secret the Historians of *Peru* speak of, as of something wonderful. There is another sort of Ore like this, as black, and in which the Silver does not appear at all; on the contrary, if it be wetted and rubb'd against Iron, it turns red, for which Reason it is call'd *Rosicler*, signifying the Ruddiness of the Dawn of Day; this is very Rich, and affords the finest Silver. There is some that glitters like Talk, or *linglafs*; this is generally naught, and yields little Silver, the Name of it is *Zoroche*. The *Pato*, which is of a yellowish Red, is very soft, and broken in Bits, but seldom rich; and the Mines of it are wrought only on account of the easiness of getting the Ore. There is some Green, not much harder than the last, call'd *Cobrisse*, or Copperish, it is very rare; however, tho' the Silver generally appears in it, and it is almost mouldring, it is the hardest to be managed, that is, to have the Silver taken from it. Sometimes, after being ground, it must be burnt in the Fire, and several other Methods used to separate it, doubtless because it is mix'd with Copper. Lastly, there is another sort of very rare Ore, which has been found at *Potosi*, only in the Mine of *Cotamiso*; being Threads of pure Silver, entangled or wound up together like burnt Lace, so fine, that they call it *Arama*, Spider, from its Resemblance to a Cobweb.

What Mines  
are richest.

The Veins of Mines, of what sort soever they be, are generally richer in the Middle than towards the Edges; and when two Veins happen to cross one another, the Place where they meet is always very rich. It is also observ'd, that those which lie North and South are richer than those  
which



which lie any other way. Those which are near Places where Mills can be erected, and that are more commodiously wrought, are often preferable to the richer that require more Expence; which is the Reason that at *Lipes* and *Potosi*, a Chest of Ore must yield 10 Marks, being 8 Ounces each Mark, of Silver, to pay the prime Charges; and at those of the Province of *Tarama* 5 pay them.

When they are rich, and sink downwards, they are sub-<sup>Mines flooded.</sup>ject to be flooded; and then they must have recourse to Pumps and Machines, or else drain them by those they call *Socabones*, being Passages made in the side of the Mountain for the Water to run out at, which often ruin the Owners by the excessive Expence they insensibly draw them into.

There are other ways of separating the Silver from the <sup>Other ways of</sup>Stone that confines it, and from the other Metals that are <sup>separating.</sup>mix'd with it, by Fire, or strong separating Waters, made use of at some Mines where I have not been, and where they make a sort of Ingots, which they call *Bollos*; but the most general and usual Method being to make the *Pinnas*, or Masses above-mention'd, either for Easiness, or to save Fire and other Ingredients; the Curious may have Recourse to *Agricola's* Treatise of Minerals, where what is practis'd at the Silver Mines in *Germany* is related. See also *Cesalpin*, *Cesius*, *Kentmant*, *Esker*, *Eucelius*, *Van Helmont*, and *Quercetan*.

When we examine in what manner the Silver is mix'd <sup>Silver low</sup>with the Stone, in Grains or long Slips like Straws, <sup>form'd.</sup>separated by great Intervals of meer Stone, or else in fine Dust mix'd with the same Stone, it looks as if Nature had form'd them both at the same Time, and many are of that Opinion. However, if we may believe the *Spaniards*, the Silver is daily form'd anew in certain Parts of the Mines, not only in the solid Stone, but even in external Bodies, which have been long since put into them. Experience has verifi'd this Opinion in the Mountain of *Potosi*, where they have dug so much in several Places, that several Mines have  
Y fallen

fallen in and bury'd the *Indians* that were working in them, with their Tools and Props to keep up the Earth. In process of time they have again dug the same Mines, and have found Threads of Silver in the Wood, the Skulls and Bones, running through them as they do in the Vein it self.

Strange Relation

This matter of Fact is reported by so many several Persons, that it cannot be look'd upon as an Invention. Monsieur *Chambon*, in his Treatise of Metals, tells us something very like this, which may nevertheless be suspected to be magnify'd. He tells us, That in a Mine of Gold and Silver, in *Hungary* it is likely, they assured him, that they had found three human Figures, of the same Matter of which the Veins of the Mine are compos'd; and that tho' the said Figures had been bruis'd and broken by the Hammers and Wedges, what was taken up had been so well put together, that there was no occasion to question their having been Men. That those Figures had their peculiar Mineral Veins, that the inward Head, and all the Bones were of pure Gold, and that was the Reason why those Figures had been destroy'd.

Another.

*Paliffi*, in his Treatise of Metals, tells us of such another Phenomenon. He affirms he saw a Stone of *Lapis Calaminaris*, in which there was a Fish of that same Substance; he adds, that in the Country of *Mansfeld*, abundance of Fishes are found converted into Metal.

Silver grows.

It is also an undoubted Matter of Fact, that much Silver has been found in the Mines of *Lipes*, which had been wrought long before. I know they answer to this, that formerly they were so rich, that the smaller Quantities were not regarded; but I much question whether Men would voluntarily lose what they had, when it was to cost but very little Labour: If to these Facts we add, what has been said of the Washing-Places of *Adacol*, and of the Mountain of *S. Joseph*, where the Copper is form'd, there will be no longer Occasion to doubt, that Silver and other Metals are daily form'd in certain Places. Experience daily shews it in relation to Quick-silver, if it be true that  
it

it breeds in the Earth, or in a Cellar, by putting in a Mixture of Sulphur and Saltpeter, as Monsieur *Chambon* affirms.

Besides, there want not Natural Philosophers, who place *Metals*, *Metals* among Vegetables, and pretend that they proceed *Vegetables* from an Egg; an Opinion which nevertheless does not please all Men, and to maintain which, they alledge Facts that are too wonderful to be easily believ'd.

*Theophrastus* affirms, that in the Island of *Cyprus*, there grows a sort of Copper very like Gold, which being sow'd in Bits, shoots like a Plant. *Palissi* says, that in *Hungary* a very fine sort of Gold has been seen, which winding about a certain Plant like Fibres, increas'd from time to time. See *John Webster's Metallographia, London.*

The Ancient Philosophers, and some of the Modern, *Metals not* have ascribed to the Sun the Forming of Metals; but besides *form'd by the* that it is incomprehensible that his Heat can penetrate to *Sun* an infinite Depth, a Man may undeceive himself in regard to this Opinion, by reflecting on an indisputable matter of Fact, which follows.

About 30 Years ago, a Flash of Lightning fell on the *Prov'd by a* Mountain of *Ilmanni*, which is above *La Paz*, otherwise *good Instance* call'd *Obuquiago*, a Town in *Peru*, 80 Leagues from *Arica*; it beat down a Part of it, the Pieces or Shivers whereof, found scatter'd about the Town and Country adjoining, were full of Gold, and yet the Mountain has been Time out of Mind cover'd with Snow. Therefore the Heat of the Sun, which has not been strong enough to thaw the Snow, could not have the Power to form the Gold that was under it, and which it has cover'd without any Intermission.

This Fact farther proves, that we are here misinform'd as to the Country of the Mines; for *Vallemon*, in his occult Philosophy, says, 'That Mines are known or discover'd, when there is a white Frost on the Ground, and there is none on the Veins of Metals, because they exhale dry and hot Vapours, which hinder it from freezing'.

ing there; and that for the same Reason the Snow does not lie long there. If that be true in some Places, it is not so in *Peru*, nor at the Silver Mines of *S. John in Chili*, which are cover'd with Snow eight Months in the Year.

*How Metals are form'd.*

I, who cannot admit of any Conjectures but such as are grounded on Experience, should be more inclinable to ascribe the Formation of Metals to subterraneous Fires; and without troubling myself about the Central Fire of certain Philosophers, I should not want Proofs to make it appear, that all that Part of *America* is full of them, as appears by the burning Mountains, which from time to time are there seen to break out and flame; such are those of *Arequipa*, *Quito*, and *Chili*, which are in the Mine Country. Nor is it impossible that those of *Mexico* should have some share in it, tho' to Appearance somewhat remote; for there is no Reason why the Earth may not be compared to a Charcoal Kiln, where one Hole is sufficient to give Air and preserve the Fire in the opposite Side.

This Heat being well establish'd, it must give Motion to the Salts, the Sulphurs, and the other Principles the Earth contains, and which may be Ingredients in the Composition of Metals, and being exagitated and rarify'd like a Vapour, insinuate themselves into the Pores of the Stone, and particularly those of the Piles of Rock, like a Plate or strange Body, enclosed in Heterogeneous Masses. There that Exhalation fixes itself, and condenses like Wax, by the Disposition of the Pores it is forced into. We have a sensible Experience hereof in Mercury, which becomes Volatile in Smoak, as has been observ'd before, and condenses again when it returns to the Water. If that Metal can be reduced to the Consistence of the others, as Chymists pretend, the Conjecture appears to be well grounded.

*Presence of Chymists.*

1. *Paracelsus* says, that Gold is Mercury coagulated, or congeal'd.
2. *Christian I.* Elector of *Saxony*, converted Mercury, Copper, and other Metals, into real Gold and Silver; and Prince *Augustus*, about the Year 1590, with some

“ some of a certain Tincture, converted 1604 times as  
 “ much Mercury into Gold, which went through all Tryals,

“ *Joan. Kunkeli Observationes, Lond.*

“ 3. *Zweiser*, in his Book entitled, *Pharmacopœia Regia*,

“ Part 1. Cap. 1. says, that the Emperor *Ferdinand III.*

“ having with his own Hands made two Pounds and a

“ half of good Gold of three Pounds of ordinary Mercury,

“ by Means of a certain Philosophical Tincture, caus'd a

“ Medal to be made of it; on the one Side of which was

“ an *Apollo*, with an Inscription certifying that Transmuta-

“ tion; and on the Reverse he prais'd God, for having

“ communicated to Men some Part of his Divine Know-

“ ledge, which may be better seen in the Original *Latin*

“ Words, which I have here inserted.

*On the Apollo.*

DIVINA METAMORPHOSIS.

*Then follow's,*

EXIBITA PRAGÆ

XV JAN. A<sup>O</sup> MDCXLVIII.

IN PRÆSENTIA

SAC. CÆS. MAJESTAT

FERDINANDI

TERTII

*On the Reverse.*

RARIS

HÆC UT

HOMINIBVS NOTA

EST ARS ITA RARO IN

LYCEVM PRODIT

LAUDETUR DEVS

IN ÆTERNVM

QVI PARTEM INFINITÆ

SVE SCIENTIÆ ABIEC

TISSIMIS SVIS CREATV

RIS COMMVNI

CAT

“ In *English* thus: The Divine Metamorphosis, or Trans-

“ mutation, perform'd at *Prague*, on the 15th of *Janu-*

“ *ary*, in the Year 1648, in the Presence of the sacred Im-

“ perial Majesty of *Ferdinand III.* *Then on the Reverse:*

“ As this Art is known to few Men, so it seldom appears

“ abroad. God be prais'd for ever, who has communi-

“ cated Part of his Divine Knowledge to his most abject

“ Creatures.

“ The same *Zweiser* takes care to observe that the said

“ Gold was very good, *not at all Sophistical*, and that the

“ Emperor was too sharp a Man to suffer himself to be im-

posed:

posed upon by any artful Substituting of Natural Gold, instead of that he made.

I will not here fall into the Dreams of those Searchers after the Philosophers Stone; nay, I will believe, notwithstanding all the most plausible Stories they tell us, as above, in the Words of *Zweiser*, upon the Experiments that have been seen made, that they are fraudulent Sleights of Hand, which have gain'd Reputation to that vain Employment; but tho' they have not attain'd the Degree of the Perfection of Gold, it is still certain that they have imitated it very well with Mercury. This is sufficient to establish my Opinion about the Formation of Metals. May it not be thence infer'd, that the Mechanism of Nature in those Productions differs from this only, in that it is more perfect? I am beholden for this Thought only to the Observation I have made of the several Sorts of Ore that have fallen into my Hands, tho', in the main, it be something agreeable to that of Messieurs *Vossius* and *Vallemont*, who look upon the subterraneous Fires as the first Principle for the Formation of Metals.

*Exhalations of the Mines.* Be that as it will, it is certain that there are continually strong Exhalations coming from the Mines. The *Spaniards*, who live over them, are obliged frequently to drink of the Herb of *Paraguay*, or *Mate*, to moisten their Breasts, without which they are liable to a Sort of Suffocation. The very Mules that pass along those Places, tho' much less steep and mountainous than others, where they trip it away, are forced to stand almost every Minute to recover their Wind. But those Exhalations are much more sensible within; they have such an Effect on Bodies that are not used to them, that a Man who goes in for a Moment, comes out as it were benumb'd, or blasted with such a Pain in all his Limbs, that he is not able to stir, which often lasts above a Day; and then the Remedy is to carry the diseas'd Person back into the Mine. The *Spaniards* call that Dilemper *Quebrantabueffos*, that is, *Bone-Breaker*. Even the *Indians*,

*Indians*, who are used to it, are obliged to relieve one another alternatively, almost every Day.

It has also happened sometimes, that in working in certain Parts of the Mines, pestilential Exhalations have broke out, which have kill'd the Workmen upon the Spot; so that they have been forced to abandon them. For the same Reason in those *Hungarian Silver and Gold Mines*, which are clayish and so glutinous, that they are obliged *Clayish Mines* to make good Fires to dry them; the Workmen are oblig'd to get out immediately. Those Sorts of clayish Mines are in all Likelihood very rare in *Peru*; for I have never heard of them.

The *Indians*, to preserve themselves against the ill Air they breathe in the Mines, are there continually chewing *Coca*, a Sort of *Betele*, and they pretend that without it they could not work there. *Coca Preservative.*

The Mines which at present yield most Silver, are those of *Oruro*, a little Town eighty Leagues from *Arica*. In the Year 1712, one so rich was found at *Ollachea*, near *Cusco*, that it yielded 2500 Marks, of 8 Ounces each, out of every Chest; that is, almost one fifth Part of the Ore; but it has declined much, and is now reckon'd but among the ordinary Sort. Next to these are those of *Lipes*, which have had the same Fate. Lastly, those of *Potosi* yield little, and cause a great Expence, by reason of their great Depth. *Rich Mines.*

As for Gold Mines, they are very rare in the South Part of *Peru*; there are none but in the Province of *Guamaco*, towards *Lima*; in that of the *Chiebar*, where the Town of *Tarija* is, and at *Chuquiaguillo*, two Leagues from *La Paz*, and other Places there-about, which for that Reason are in the *Indian Tongue* call'd *Chuquiago*, signifying a House, or Farm of Gold. There are there, in short, very plentiful Washing-places, where Grains of Virgin or Pure Gold have been found of a prodigious Magnitude; two among the rest, one of which, weighing 64 Marks and some odd Ounces, (the Mark, as has been often said, being eight Ounces) was bought *Large Grains of Gold.*

bought by the Count de la Moncloa, Viceroy of Peru, to present it to the King of Spain; the other fell into the Hands of Don John de Mur in 1710, whilst he was Corregidor, or chief Magistrate of Arica. This is shap'd like an Ox's Heart in little, and weighs 45 Marks, that is 360 Ounces, of three different Degrees of Fineness; to the best of my Remembrance of 11, 18, and 21 Carats, which is very remarkable in the same natural Mass.

Land of  
Mines cold  
and barren.

All the Places above-mention'd where there are Mines, are so cold and barren, that the Inhabitants of them are oblig'd to seek their Provisions from the Coast. The Reason of that Barrenness is plain, if we consider the bad Exhalations which continually issue from the Mines, as has been observ'd before, they certainly containing Salts and Sulphurs contrary to the Vegetation of Plants.

Others in  
temperate Places.

If those Places are inhabited, it is only in regard to their great Wealth, which draw thither all the Necessaries of Life; however, there is no Want of Mines towards the Coast, in more temperate Places, as appears by that newly discover'd at Iquique: It is even pretended, that there are Mines in all the Mountains about Arica, but that they are not rich enough to be at the Expence of working them.

Salt Mines,  
&c.

In the same Mountains there is an infinite Number of Mines of Salt, and some of the fine Lime-stone for making of Plaster of Paris; as also certain Spungey Stones, serving to filtrate or strain Water, and a Sort of transparent Alabaster, used in some Places instead of Glafs for Windows.

Plants.

In other respects they are all barren; no Green is to be seen there but what is down in the Vales. In that of Arica there is Jalop, the Root whereof is of great Use in Physick; there is also China Root and Mechacacan, which the Inhabitants, if I mistake not, call *Jongqui*. There is also the Molle Tree, spoken of in the Article of Valparaiso; the Tara Tree, somewhat resembling the *Acacia*; the Fruit of it, which is a God like the *French Beans*, serves to make Writing-Ink, as has been said of the *Algarroba*, or Carob. On the Mountains near *La Paz*, there is a Sort of Moss, call'd



call'd *Hiareta*, which being put into the Fire, makes a Smoak which immediately blinds those whose Eyes it reaches; it also yields a Gum, which is of good Use in some Distempers.

*Removal to another Ship.*

**AFTER** having waited above a Month at *Arica*, for an Opportunity to prosecute my Voyage, I embarked on the 8th of *August* on a little Ship of 150 Tons, commanded by *Monsieur de Ruffy*, who was bound for *Hilo*, and thence for *Callao*, to join its Commandant the *Great Holy Ghost*.

The same Day a Suspension of Arms for four Months, Suspension of Arms. between the *European* Crowns was proclaim'd, and an Order to the *Corregidores*, or chief Magistrates, to seize and confiscate the Effects of the *French* that were in *Peru* and *Chili*, and to oblige them to embarque, in order to return to *France*.

The same Express also inform'd us, that an *English* Privateer had taken a *Spanish* Ship laden with Sugar, near *Guayaquil*, and that he had put half his Men into the Prize, which was said to be of 24 Guns: The Viceroy sent Captain *S. Juan*, Commander of the *S. Rose* in quest of him; but the Ship being cast away on the Coast, he found only two or three Men.

*Departure from Arica.*

**T**HE 10th of *August* in the Morning, we sail'd with a small Gale at N. E. the Land Breeze, which is generally expected in order to get out of the Creek of *Arica*, Difficulty of getting clear of Arica. where the Tides often drive down and detain Ships in calm Weather, for several Days, towards the Inlet of *Quidea*, for they always see that Way. Most Ships are made sensible of the Difficulty of getting out, because the Land Breeze which holds from Midnight till Day, is succeeded

by that from S. W. being too soon to turn the Head-land of *Sama*, lying W. N. W. from that of *Arica*, and the more for that the Tides sensibly come from above; and for this Difficulty in turning of it, on our Chart it is call'd the *Devil's Head-land*. By good Fortune the Land Breeze carry'd us far enough out to Sea, not to apprehend any thing during a Calm that lasted five Days, because the Tides were not then very strong: In case of being too much forced back towards the Land, and no possibility of working up again, there is the Remedy of being able to come to an Anchor a League to the Southward of *Quiaxa*, in 30 or 40 Foot Water; the Bottom greenish Owze, like an Olive Colour, in some Places mix'd with Sand.

Marks to know Hilo by.

At length, after eight Days spent in sailing thirty Leagues, we arriv'd at *Hilo*, on the 18th of *August*: That Road is to be known to the Windward, by a plain Point of Land, low in Comparison of the high Mountains. From five or six Leagues distance to the Sea-ward, it looks almost like an Island; that is it which they call the Point de *Coles*, at the End whereof is a very low Rock, which seems to be higher as you draw nearer to it.

#### Description of the Road of Hilo.

Plate XXIII.

Landing-Place.

THE Road being scarce any other than a Strait Coast; the Ships that are at Anchor there, are seen at a Distance; and for the same Reason, there must be a great Sea upon all Winds. In short, there is but one Place to land at, among the Rocks, which appear at the Entrance of the Vale; and by N. or E. N. E. from the Anchoring place; when you have 15 or 12 Fathom Water, the Bottom fine Sand, somewhat Owzy, and to the Northward of the Little Island, which is at the Point of *Coles*.

The Ridge of Rocks, which covers the Creek where they land out of Boats, is divided into two: The second Cut makes a little Creek on the Starboard-Side, where,

not-

by that time 2 W. being not far from the  
 least time W. N. W. from the  
 for that the Tides usually come from the  
 Authority in turning of it - either  
 the Wind and the good Fortune that  
 in the month out to Sea - nor so appearing  
 ting a Gale that lasted five Days - but  
 not then any strong - in case of being  
 back towards the Land - and no possibility  
 again - there is the Hazard of being  
 for a League to the Southward of  
 Foot Water - the bottom streight  
 at least three miles wide  
 After a fair eight Days past  
 we were to be taken on the 12th  
 be blown to the Windward by a plain  
 low in comparison of the high Mountains  
 and cays - hence to the Sea-ward  
 an Island - that is - when they  
 the land water - is very low  
 great - you draw water to it

Description of the Red Sea

The Red Sea - takes its name  
 and for the same reason that  
 of all Winds - in short - there is  
 among the Rocks - which appear  
 place - and it is the same  
 when you have it - from  
 Sand - towards Owy - and to the  
 the Island - which is the Point  
 The Ridge of Rocks - which  
 they land out of - from

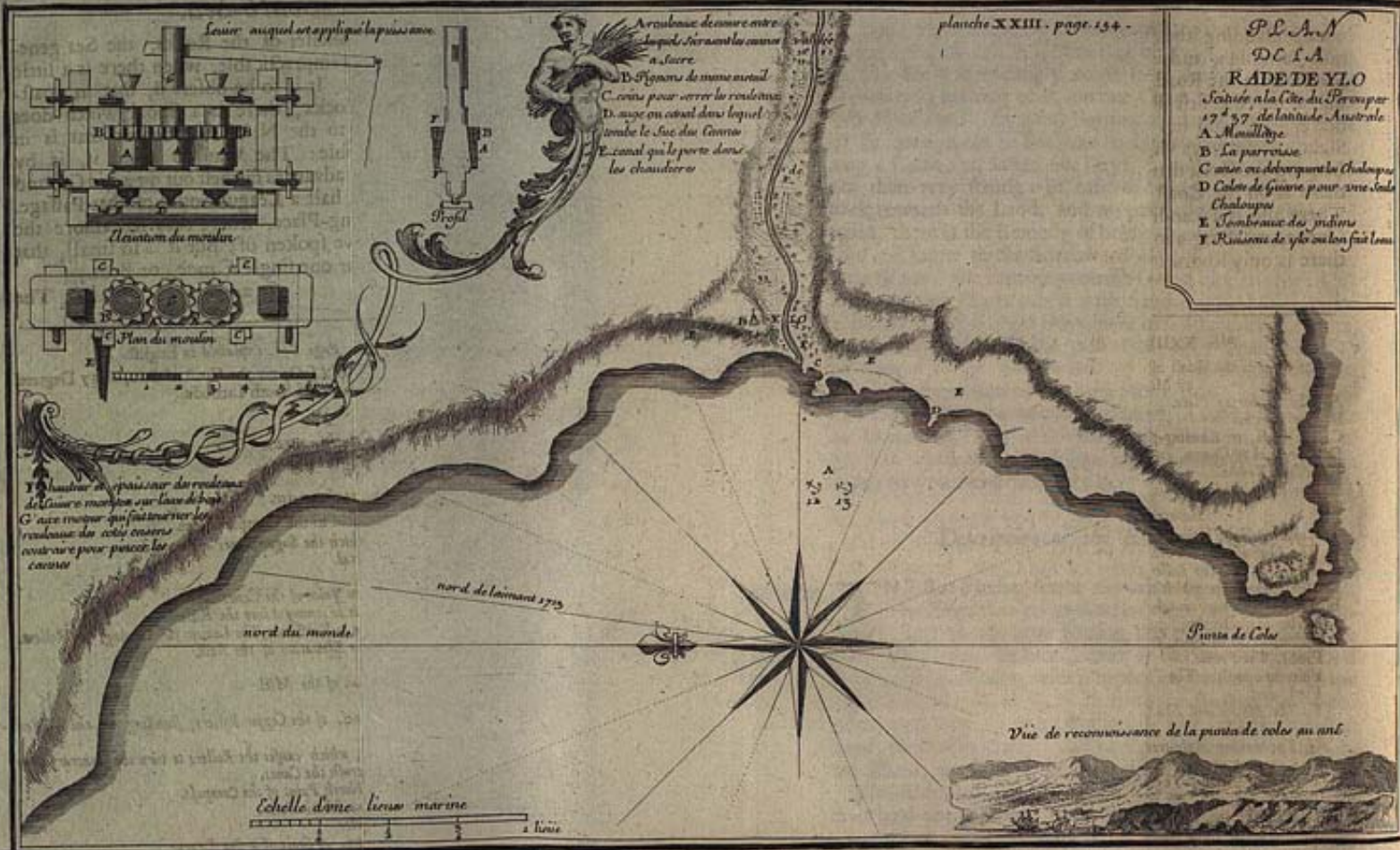


PLANN  
DE LA

RADE DE YLO

Située à la Côte du Pérou par  
17° 27' de latitude Australe

- A. Moulins
- B. La parroisse
- C. Canal ou débouchure du Chaloupa
- D. Cote de fuane pour sixe Sable
- E. Chaloupa
- F. Tombereau des indiens
- I. Remise de ylo ou son fruit



notwithstanding the Shelter of the Rocks, the Sea generally runs high, and is impracticable, when there is a little Swelling in the Road. It is to be observ'd, that in coasting along the first Rocks, there is a Shoal which does not appear, and lies to the N. W. of another that is in Sight, and always visible: The Way to avoid it, is by Keeping the Rock that advances farthest out on a red Ground there is on the Coast, half a League South of that Passage: There also is a Landing-Place, where they see ashore the *Guano*, or *Dung* above spoken of; but it is so small, that there is only Room for one single *Canoe*, or *Boat*.

The

Plate XXIII. Page 197. explain'd in English.

The Plan of the Road of *M.L.O.* on the Coast of *Peru*, in 17 Degrees, 27 Minutes of South Latitude.

- A. The Anchoring Place.
- B. The *Parish*.
- C. The *Grill*, or Landing-place for *Baños*.
- D. The *Creek* of *Guano*, the only one here.
- E. *Indian Temples*.
- F. The *Rivula* of *Hillo*, where they water.

References to the Compartiments.

- A. *Copper Rollers*, between which the *Sugar Cane* are crush'd.
- B. The *Nuts* of the *Lame Metal*.
- C. *Wedges* to close the *Rollers*.
- D. The *Trough* into which the *Juice* of the *Cane* runs.
- E. The *Spout* through which it is convey'd into the *Roller*, which is a *Leaver* for turning the *Roller*, The *Elevation* of the *Moulin*, The *Elevation* of the *Mill*.
- F. The *Height* and *Thickness* of the *Copper Rollers*, standing on the *Wooden Axle-tree*.
- G. The *moving Axle-tree*, which causes the *Roller* to turn the *contrary Way* to one another, to crush the *Cane*.
- Nord de l'aimant, The *North Point* of the *Compass*.
- Nord du Monde, the *true North Point*.
- Punta de Coles, *Point Coles*.
- Echelle d'une lieue Marine, A *Scale* of a *Sea League*.
- Lieue, A *League*.
- Voë de reconnaissance de la punta de Coles au N. N. E. This *Point Coles* appears to the *N. N. E.*

*Hilo Village.* The Vale of *Hilo*, upon coming into the Road, looks only like a narrow Cut, which appears opening by Degrees, as you draw near, till the Church appears, and about fifty Cottages made of the Branches of Trees, scatter'd up and down near the Rivulet, which runs winding along the Middle of the Vale: That is all the Village of *Hilo*; most of it is built and inhabited by *French*. It is certainly too great an Honour to call it a little Town, as *Dampier* does.

*Watering-  
Place.*

That Rivulet, whose Ships water, is sometimes subject to be dried up, during the six Months that the Sun is to the Southward, when the Winter has not prov'd rainy on the high Mountains. They were sensible of that Drought in the Year 1713, when they were fain to bury Casks in the Sand, to receive what drain'd from the Land, whence a Water flows, which is naught and unwholesome. The great Diseases, which that Year carry'd off the one half of the Crews of the *French* Ships that happen'd to be there, were ascribed to it; but it was a Sort of Plague, which was felt 18 Leagues from thence, at *Moquegua*, and even as far as *Arequipa*, which is 40 Leagues distant.

*Wooding.*

The Conveniency of Wooding is better there than the Watering, because the Vale is cover'd with Trees; but the great Quantity the *French* have fell'd within 14 Years past, has remov'd it a League from the Sea. Besides the Wood for Fuel, that Vale is in several Places planted with fine Rows of Olive-trees, which afford the best Oil in *Peru*; as also abundance of Fruit-trees, as Orange, Lemon, Fig, Guayava, Banana and Lucumo-trees, of which Mention has been made before. There is also of that Sort of Fruit call'd *Paltas* in *Peru*, and *Avocats* in the *French* *Caribbee* Islands; they are like a large Pear, and contain a round Kernel, somewhat pointed, of the Consistence and Bulk of a Chestnut, but of no other Use than a Musk Colour Dye: The Substance that incloses it is greenish, and almost as soft as Butter, and has something in it of that

*Fruit-trees.*

Taste,

The Vale of the ... upon coming ...  
 only a narrow ... which ...  
 gives as you draw near ...  
 opportunity ...  
 the middle of the ...  
 this ...  
 certainly too great in honor to call ...  
 Darius does

The ... where ...  
 to be ...  
 the ...  
 in the ...  
 the ...  
 a ...  
 great ...  
 the ...  
 were ...  
 which ...  
 as ...

The ... of ...  
 Waring ...  
 great ...  
 as ...  
 Row ...  
 as ...  
 Gaway ...  
 has ...  
 call'd ...  
 heads ...  
 Kmet ...  
 of ...  
 the ...  
 not ...



*Juga Peruviana,*  
*Siliquâ quadrangula*  
*Volgo Pacay*  
*Pois Sucrins du Perou*

N. Guillard del. Goussier sculp.



Taste, with a Mixture of that of a Hazle-Nut, eaten with Salt.

The best way of Eating it, is to pound it with Sugar and the Juice of a Lemon: That Fruit is very wholesome, and good for the Stomach; they say it is a Provocative to Love.

I saw a Tree call'd *Pacay*, whose Leaves are like those of the Walnut-tree, but of several Sizes. They are disposed by Pairs along the same Side; so that they increase as they remove further from the Stem. Its Blossoms are almost the same as those of the *Inga*, mention'd by *Pison* and *Father Plumier*; but the Fruit is different. The Cod, whose Figure that Father has given us, is Octogon; and that of the *Pacay* has only four Faces, or Sides, of which the two largest are about 16, or 18 Parts of an Inch broad, and the small seven or eight: As for the Length, it is very uncertain; some Cods are four Inches long, and others above a Foot. They are divided within into several little Cells, each containing a Grain like a flat Bean, inclosed in a white Substance, all Filaments or Threads, which a Man would take for Cotton; but, in Reality, it is only a congeal'd Oil, which is eaten to refresh the Body, and leaves in the Mouth a little Taste of Musk, very agreeable, which has given it the Name of *Pois Sucrin*, or Sugar-Pea, among the *French*.

In the same Vale, there are also some of those Trees that bear the *Cassia*, which the *Spaniards* call *Canna Fijola*. That Fruit so famous in Physick for a gentle Purge, is a round Cod, 12 or 15 Inches long, growing on a great Tree; the Leaf whereof is like that of the fine Laurel. It is full of a yellowish Substance, which contains the Grains of the Seed, which grows black, and becomes viscous as it ripens.

In  
 Plate XXIV, Reg. 173, explain'd in English.  
 The *Pacay* Plant, call'd by *European* Botanists *Inga* of *Peru*, bearing a Square Cod.

*Sugar-Pea* of *Peru*.

*Sugar Cane,  
and how  
made.*

In the same Place where the Tree was, I also saw a Sugar Cane Garden: The Canes from which they press the Juice to extract that agreeable Salt, are sufficiently known by all Men, as is the Manner of making it; but the Form of the Mill they use to bruize them, being in a Manner new to me, and the Knowledge of Machines belonging to my Profession, I thought fit to take the Proportions. This Mill is composed of three Rollers of Brass, the Middlemost of which turns the two others, by means of the cast Nuts of the same Piece, that hitch one within another. Those Rollers, which turn contrary Ways, pinch the Canes put between them, and draw them in at the same time, crushing them, so that all the Juice runs out into a Trough, which conveys it into the Cauldrons. There it is three times boil'd, taking great Care to skim it, and to put Juice of Lemon and other Ingredients to it; and when it is sufficiently boil'd, they put it into Pots of a Conical figure cut short, where it congeals into very brown Clods. To refine and whiten it, they only cover it with Earth temper'd with Water, 4 or 5 Inches thick, and kept fresh by watering it every Day. That Moisture makes the finest Juice run, which drops by Degrees, and the rest congeals into a white Loaf. They refine and whiten it in the same manner in *Brasil*, with Clay steep'd, the whitest of which is the best; but they must first scrape off a hard Film, that grows over the Pot, and would hinder the Water from penetrating through it. Lastly, the Refiners in *France* make it white and hard by the help of Lime and Alom.

*Other Prod-  
ucts.*

They also in the Vale of *Hilo* sow some little Corn and Herbs, but much more Trefoul, whereof there is a great Consumption, when any Ships are in the Road, because the Merchants, who come from several remote Parts, are forced to bring thither a great Number of Mules, to change those that are loaden, for fear lest tiring in Desert Places they should die by the way, when they are not able to keep up with the others. They divide the Gangs of Mules, which

which they call *Requas*, into several *Piaras*, or small Parcels of 7 or 8 Mules each; which are committed to the Care of two Men; and there being sometimes 30 or 40 Leagues to travel over high and steep Mountains, without either Water or Pasture, the Mules carry'd to change and relieve the others, are sometimes double the Number of the *Piaras*, or small Parcels loaded; notwithstanding all this Precaution, such great Numbers of them die, that the Roads in *Peru* are not better known by the Tract of their Feet, than by the Skeletons of those that tire out of the Vales, where they can have nothing to subsist on; for there is scarce ever any Grass or Water; for which Reason they are obliged every Year to bring 80 or 100000 Mules from *Tucuman* and *Chili*, to make good that continual Loss.

However, notwithstanding the Trouble of traveling thro' those desert Places, the Inhabitants are not afraid of a Journey of two or three hundred Leagues. The Merchants come to *Hilo*, from *Cusco*, *Puno*, *Chucuito*, *Arequipa*, and from *Moquegua*, as to the nearest Sea-Port; and if there are no Ships at *Arica*, they also come from *La Paz*, *Oruro*, *La Plata*, *Potosi* and *Lipes*; so that in short, this is the best Port in all the Coast for *European* Commodities.

The City of *Cusco* is one of the chiefest for the Consumption of those Commodities, next to *Potosi*; there are reckon'd in it above 30000 Communicants, whereof near three Quarters are *Indians*. Its Manufactures of Bays and Cotton Cloth, are some small Prejudice to the Trade of *Europe*. They there also make all Sorts of Work in Leather, as well for the Use of Men, as for the Furniture of Horses and Mules. That City is also famous for the vast Number of Pictures the *Indians* there make, and wherewith they fill all the Kingdom, as wretched as they are. It is 130 Leagues from *Hilo*, in a cold Country, where the Weather is so uncertain, that they have all Sorts of it in one and the same Day.

175

Defractions  
of Mules.

Refer to Hic  
10.

Cusco City.

175

Puno

Puno Town.

*Puno* is a little Town of about 150 Families, 70 Leagues from *Cusco*, and 76 from *Hilo*, on the same Road: It is considerable for the many Silver Mines there are about it. In the Year 1713, they supply'd three Grindstone-Mills, and three of those that pound with Hammers: The Climate is bad,

Arequipa Town.

*Arequipa* is a Town containing about 600 Spanish Families, who trade in Wine and Brandy: It is only 24 Leagues from the Sea; but the Port of *Quiles* being little resorted to, because it is bad, the Merchants repair to *Hilo* to drive on their Trade. The Town is seated at the Foot of a burning Mountain, which does not smook now, but did formerly vomit such great Quantities, that the Ashes were carried 30 Leagues about.

Moquegua Town.

*Moquegua* is a small Town of 150 Families, within the Dependences whereof there may be 4000 Men fit to bear Arms. They there drive a great Trade of Wine and Brandy, which is transported to *La Puna*, that is, to the Mountains. It is incredible, that in so small a Territory as that is said to be, they should make 100000 Jars, which amount to above 3200000 Paris Pints; and at 20 Royals the Jar is worth 400000 Pieces of Eight, that is now 1600000 Livres French Money. A Nation of friendly free Indians, call'd *Chunco's*, who inhabit the East-side of the Ridge of Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*, come every Year to trade at *Moquegua* for their own Country. In their Way through *Potosi* they sell Works made of Ostrich Feathers, as Umbrellas, Fans to drive the Flies away, &c. They also carry the Fruit call'd *Quinaquina*, which is like an Almond, and of use in several Distempers, and some other Things of the Country; with the Silver they receive for them, they buy Wine and some European Commodities fit for their Use.

Mines of S. Anthony rich.

Forty Leagues from *Moquegua*, and five from *Cailomis*, have been lately discover'd the Mines of *S. Anthony*, which promise much Wealth, and the Silver of them is the finest  
ia

in *Peru*. In the Year 1713, they were erecting Mills there, which will be still more advantageous to the Port of *Hilo*.

Tho' the Neighbourhood of many Mines, by their Con-  
Inconveni-  
 ences of *Hilo*.
 currence, make that a good Mart, it is in other respects bad enough for the Conveniencies of Life. Water, as has been said, is apt to fall short there, because very much is consumed in watering the Vineyards of *Moquegna*. Beeves are there scarce, and their Fish naught, except in Winter, because the Mists which are then frequent refresh and moisten the Top of the Mountain, which causes some little Pasture to grow: In short, other Provisions sometimes fall short for the Inhabitants. There is scarce any kind of Game, except a Sort of small Fallow Deer, found in the Breaks of the Mountains. There is no Want of Fish in the Road; but the Sea runs so high near the Shore, that there is no drawing of a Net any where.

The Vale of *Hilo*, in which there are not at present above three or four Farms, formerly maintain'd an *Indian* Town, the Remains of which are still to be seen a Leagues from the Sea. The Houses which were made of Canes, are there to be seen razed even with the Ground; a dismal Effect of the Ravages the *Spaniards* have made among the *Indians*.

There are still more moving Marks of the Misfortune  
Tombs of  
 Indians.
 of that poor Nation, near *Arica*, above the Church of *Hilo*, and all along the Shore, as far as the Point of *Coler*, being an infinite Number of Tombs, where they bury'd themselves alive with their Families and Goods; which is the Reason that when they happen to dig at this very Time, they find Bodies almost entire with their Cloaths, and very often Gold and Silver Vessels. Those I have seen are dug in the Sand the depth of a Man, and inclosed with a Wall of dry Stone: They are cover'd with Wattles of Canes, on which there is a Bed or Layer of Earth, and Sand laid over, so the end the Place where they were, might not be observ'd.

Tho' the *Spaniards* freely acknowledge the Cruelties they exercis'd on the *Indians* at the Time of the Conquest, there are some who do not ascribe the Invention of those Tombs to the Dread of the *Indians*; but tell us, that they worshipping the Sun, follow'd him in his Course, fancying they might draw nearer to him; and that at length being stopp'd by the Sea, which was their Boundary to the Westward, they bury'd themselves on the Shore that they might before they died have Sight of him till the Moment when he seems to hide himself in the Water. The Custom of the great Men, who when dying, order'd themselves to be carry'd to the Brink of the Sea, is a Proof of this Opinion; but the most receiv'd Notion is, that they were in such a Friglit, that they thought they must all die, when they were inform'd that the Conquerors had not spared even their King *Atahualpa*, who among them was look'd upon as the Offspring of the Sun. To escape out of the Hands of the *Spaniards*, they fled as far as they could Westward, but being stopp'd by the Sea, they hid themselves on the Edge of it, to implore Mercy of the Sun, whom they thought they had greatly offended, since he brought upon them such cruel and powerful Enemies, who also said they were descended from him.

We are here to observe, that there is much Difference between these Voluntary Tombs, and those they erected for Men of Note; the latter are above the Ground, built with unburnt Bricks and round, like little Pigeon Houses, 5 or 6 Foot Diameter, and 12 or 14 in Height, arch'd like the Top of an Oven, in which the Dead were placed sitting, and then they were wall'd up. In traveling through the Country, there are still many to be seen, even of those before the Conquest by the *Spaniards*.

## Removal to another Ship.

**T**HERE were two *French Ships* at *Hilo*, come from *China* six Months before; one of them of 44 Guns, commanded by *Monsieur De Ragueine Mareuil*, a Sea Lieutenant, who had purchas'd Silks at *Canton*; the other of 16 Guns, commanded by the *Sieur du Bocage* of *Havre*, who had laden with the same Commodities at *Emoi*. The first of them was in a bad Condition, as having suffer'd by Storms, and wanted to careen; but because the Port of *Hilo* is not proper for that Work, and that the Prohibition of the Trade of *China* is very severe at *Callao*, which is the best Harbour for careening, he thought fit to purchase the *S. Charles*, and to lade it with his Goods, to the end he might be in a Condition to stand the Search. That Purchase made me take the Advantage of *Monsieur de Ragueine's* Courtesy, he giving me my Passage for *Callao*.

## Departure from Hilo.

**O**N the 5th of *September* we sail'd from the Road of *Hilo*, in Company with a *Spanish Ship*, which had desired to be convoy'd by us, being apprehensive of the *English Privateer*. We had the good Fortune of a fresh Gale at E. S. E. which in four Days carry'd us as far as *Morro Quemado*, or the burnt Head-land. Before we reach'd that, we had sight of *La Mesa de Donna Maria*, or *Donna Maria's Table*, being a Mountain flat on the Top, like a Table, whence it has the Name.

Eight Leagues to the Northward of it is the Island of *Lobos*, or *Wolves*, being a League and half N. W. from *Morro Quemado*, or burnt Head-land; it is indifferent high, about three Quarters of a League long, in the greatest Extent N. W. and S. E. Between this Island and the Head-land, there are flat and very low Rocks, which stretch

*Different  
Marks for  
knowing of  
Morro Quemado  
from  
Pisco.*

out towards the Continent half way the Channel, leaving a Passage through which many Ships have gone, mistaking it for that between the Island of *St. Gallan*, and the Continent of *Paraca*; but it is easy to know them asunder, because in the latter there are no Low Rocks, as there are at the Foot of that of *Lobos*, and a Sugar-Loaf Breaker. Besides, the Land of *Paraca* is of an equal Height, that of *Morro quemado* comes down in a Descent on the North-side to a little Creek, where there is Anchorage on the Starboard side. In case a Ship happens to advance into that Passage, Care is to be taken, that in coming out to the Northward of the Island of *Lobos*, there is a Shoal about the third Part of the Channel over from the Continent. I have also been told, by those who have gone into that Channel, through a Mistake, that to the Northward of the Island there is a smooth flat Bank of Sand, which forms a Creek, where the Sea is so still, that a Ship may anchor there in 8 Fathom Water, and even, if Occasion were, careen there in Safety.

Being assured by the Sight of the Island *Lobos*, of the Distance we were at from that of *S. Gallan*, we lay by that Night; and the next Day we pass'd between that Island and the Continent of *Paraca*, coasting along it within a Quarter of a League, that is, within one third of the Channel from the Land, for fear of a Shoal, which is within half a League S. S. E. from the Island.

### The Road of Pisco.

Plate XXV.

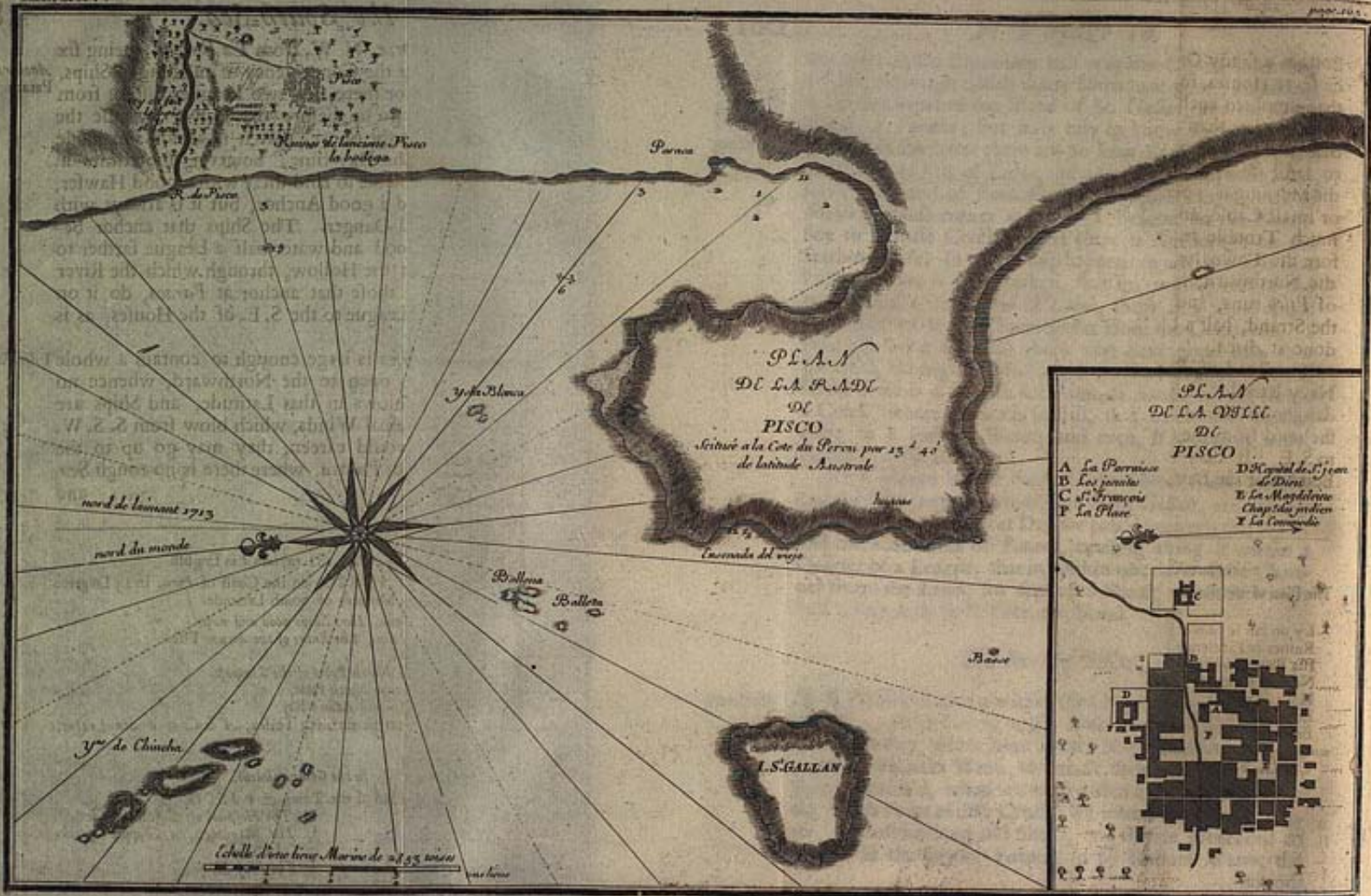
WE sailed along within the Length of two Cables of a little Creek, call'd *Ensenada del Viejo*, or the old Man's Bay, where some *French* Ships have anchor'd, in 10 or 12 Fathom Water, to unlade their Goods privately. Being becalm'd, when we were within a Cable's Length of the North Point of that Creek, we found 15 Fathom Water, the Bottom Sand and Shells, and thence proceeded to anchor in the Bay of *Paraca*, in 15 Fathom Water, the  
Bottom



out towards the Continent all way  
 a Passage through which many Ships have  
 it for that between the Head of St. Johns  
 Point of View, but it is easy to know  
 present in the fact that we no low  
 tract four of that of Labor and a sugar  
 nder, the Land of View is of an equal  
 More part are come down in a Down  
 side to a little Creek, where there is a  
 seaboard that in case a ship appear  
 Passage, it is to be seen that in coming  
 towards the Head of View, there is a  
 the third part of the Channel over from the  
 have also been told by those who have  
 Channel, through a little Creek, and  
 third part is a smooth that in case  
 Creek where the Sea is so still, that  
 there is a Fashion Water, and even if  
 there is a small  
 the Channel of the Sugar  
 we were from that of St. Johns  
 and the next Day we put a  
 the Channel of View, counting  
 of a League, there within one  
 out from the Land for ten of a  
 had a Letter, &c. from the

The River of St. Johns

W  
 this Creek called  
 and when they were some  
 main a Fashion Water, to  
 the first part of the  
 the Channel of the  
 in the



Bottom a sandy Owze, N. W. from *La Bodega*; being six or seven Houfes, for the Convenience of unlading of Ships, that choolse to anchor there, tho' two Leagues distant from *Pifco*, rather than go up before the Town, because the Sea runs fo high at the Shore, that it is almost impossible to land there in the Day-time; however, sometimes in the Morning it is possible to land there with a good Hawfer, or small Cable, and a good Anchor, but it is always with much Trouble and Danger. The Ships that anchor before the Town, wood and water half a League farther to the Northward, in the Hollow, through which the River of *Pifco* runs, and those that anchor at *Paraca*, do it on the Strand, half a League to the S. E. of the Houfes, as is done at *Arica*.

Anchorage at  
*Paraca*.

The Road of *Pifco* is large enough to contain a whole *Pifco Road*. Navy Royal. It is open to the Northward, whence no dangerous Wind blows in that Latitude, and Ships are shelter'd from the usual Winds, which blow from S. S. W. to S. E. If they would careen, they may go up to the Bottom of the Bay of *Paraca*, where there is no rough Sea, and

Plate XXV. Page 181. explain'd in English.

The Plan of the Road of *PISCO*, on the Coast of *Peru*, in 13 Degrees 40 Minutes of South Latitude.

Icy on fait le bois & l'eau, Here Ships wood and water.

Ruines de l'ancienne *Pifco*, The Ruins of the ancient *Pifco*.

*Illa Blanca*, white Island.

Nord de l'aimant, The North Point of the Compass.

Nord du monde, The true North Point.

Estenada del Viejo, The old Man's Bay.

Echelle d'une lieue marine de 2853 Toises, A Scale of a Sea League, containing 2853 Fathoms.

Une Lieue, A League.

In the Compartment.

The Plan of the Town of *PISCO*.

- A. The Parish Church.
- B. The Jesuites.
- C. S. Francis.
- F. The Square.

- D. The Hospitall of S. John of God.
- E. The Magdalen, a Chappel of the Indians.
- F. The Play-Houfe.

## A Voyage to

and there is Anchorage every where, from 5 to 11 Fathom Water. On the West-side there are several little Islands, all of them clear, and between which Ships may pass without Fear; but generally it is more convenient to pass within that of *St. Gallan*, and to coast along the Continent of *Paraca*, to gain upon the Wind. Then they come up to anchor towards the Houses, in 4 or 5 Fathom Water. Among those little Islands there is one cut quite through in two Places, so that it looks like a Bridge from the Anchoring-Place.

From the Houses of *Paraca* to the Town, the Distance is two Leagues, all a sandy barren Plain.

The Description of the Town of *Pisco*.

THIS Town, which was formerly on the Edge of the Sea, is now a quarter of a League from it. That Removal was made on the 19th of *October 1682*, by so violent an Earthquake, that the Sea drew back half a League, and then return'd with such Fury, that it overflow'd almost as much Land beyond its Bounds; so that it destroy'd the Town of *Pisco*, the Ruins whereof are still to be seen, extending from the Shore to the New Town. Several Curious Persons having follow'd the Sea, as it withdrew, were swallow'd up by it, at its Return. Since that Time the Town has been built on the Place which the Overflowing did not reach.

Plate XXV.  
Churches and  
Hospital.

It is divided into regular Quarters, as may be seen in the Plan I here present. The Parish Church of *S. Clement* is in the middle of the Town, in a Square as large as one of the Quarters. Behind this Church is that of the *Jesuites*; to the Eastward that of *S. Francis*, small but very neat. On the North-side is the Hospital of *S. John of God*, and on the South-side is the *Magdalen*, a Chappel belonging to the *Indians*, before which is a little Square.

Inhabitants  
and Govern-  
ment.

The whole Town consists of 300 Families, most of them *Mestizo's*, *Mulatto's* and Blacks; the Whites being the smallest

smallest Number. There is a *Corregidor*, or chief Magistrate, and a *Cabildo*, or Council for the Administration of Justice, and very often a Judge to hinder the Commerce with the *French*, and the Fraud of the Masses of Silver, which they bring from the Mines.

When the *French* were not permitted to go to trade at *Callao*, that was one of the best Ports for Trade; because it is naturally the Mart for the Towns of *Ica*, *Guanacavelica*, *Guamanga* and *Andagaylas*, and for all those that lie to the Northward of *Lima*.

*Ica* is a Town three times as populous as *Pisco*; they <sup>1<sup>a</sup> Town.</sup> drive a Trade there of Glass made with Saltpeter; it is green, foul, and ill wrought; there is also store of Wine and Brandy.

*Guanacavelica* is a small Town of about 100 Families, <sup>Guanacavelica Town.</sup> 60 Leagues from *Pisco*, rich and famous for the vast Quantity of Quicksilver taken there from a Mine, which is 40 *Varas*, or Spanish Yards in Front, and which alone furnishes all the Gold and Silver Mills in that Kingdom. <sup>Quick-silver Mine.</sup> Private Persons work there at their own Expence, and are obliged to deliver up to the King all they get, under Pain of Forfeiture of their Estates, Banishment, and perpetual Servitude at *Baldivia*. His Majesty pays a set rate for the same, which at present is 60 Pieces of Eight the Quintal, or Hundred Weight, upon the Spot; and he sells it for 80, at the remote Mines. When a sufficient Quantity has been taken out, the King causes the Mouth of the Mine to be stopp'd up, and no Man can have any but what comes from his Stores.

The Earth or Mineral, which contains the Quick-silver, is of a whitish Red, like ill-burnt Brick; they pound and put it into an Earthen Furnace, the Head or Top whereof is a Vault like the top of an Oven, a little Spheroid. They lay it on an Iron Grate cover'd with Earth, under which they keep a small Fire made of the Shrub they call *Icho*, which is properer for that purpose than any other combustible Matter; for which Reason there is a Prohibition

tion to cut it in 20 Leagues round. The Heat passes to it through that Earth, and so fires the pounded Mineral, that the Quick-silver flies out Volatile in Smoak, but the Cap or Covering being close stopp'd, it finds no way out, but only through a little Hole which leads to a Succession of Earthen Vessels, like Gourds, round and join'd by the Necks, one within another; there that Smoak circulates and condenses by means of a little Water there is at the bottom of each Gourd, into which the Quick-silver falls condens'd, and in well form'd Liquor. It is less form'd in the first Gourds than the last; and because they grow so hot that they break, Care is taken to cool the Out-sides of them with Water.

*Water that petrifies.*

In that Town there is another thing peculiar, which is a Spring, whose Water petrifies so easily and so quick, that most of the Houses in the Town are built with it. I saw some Stones at *Lima*, which they had carry'd thither, and they are white, with a yellowish Cast, light and hard enough.

*Guamanga City.*

*Guamanga* is a Bishop's See, 80 Leagues from *Pisco*, said to contain about 10000 Communicants. It's principal Trade consists in Leather, and Boxes of Confectionary, Pastes, Marmelade, Jellies, preserv'd Quinces, and others the most valuable in the Kingdom, where there is a considerable Consumption. They also there make Pavillions, or Field Beds, whereof there is a notable Manufacture, as there is of several sorts of printed and gilt Leather. The Town is seated at the Foot of a high Mountain, in a plain Country, very wholesome, and fruitful of all sorts of Provisions.

*Avancay and Andaguailas.*

I do not here take Notice of the Boroughs of *Avancay* and *Andaguailas*, which are small Places of 60 or 80 Families each; however, tho' they are not remarkable for the Number of Inhabitants, they are so for the great Quantity of Sugar made there, which is the best in all *Peru*.

*Apurima wonderful Bridge.*

Near to *Andaguailas* is the famous Bridge of *Apurima*, which has been represented to me as a wonderful Thing. They

They say, there is a Cleft or Opening in a Mountain, about 120 Fathoms in Length, and the Depth under it dreadful, which Nature has cut perpendicular down in the Rock, to make Way for a River; and whereas the Waters of that River run with such Violence, that they carry away very large Stones, there is no fording of it under 25 or 30 Leagues from that Place. The Width and Depth of that Breach, and the Necessity of passing that way, have occasion'd the Invention of a Bridge of Ropes, made of the Barks of Trees, being about 6 Foot broad, interwoven with cross Pieces of Wood, on which they pass over, even with loaded Mules, tho' not without Dread; for about the Middle of it is felt a Shaking, which may occasion the Head to swim; but in regard they must go 6 or 7 Days Journey about, to take another Way, all the Provisions and Commodities that circulate between *Lima* and *Cusco*, and the *Upper Peru*, passes over that Bridge. Towards the keeping of it in Repair, they pay a Toll of four Royals for each Mule's Load, which brings an immense Sum in to the King, besides what it costs in Repairs.

The Trade for *European Commodities* is not the only Trade of Thing that brings Ships to *Pisco*; they also resort thither Pisco. for their Stores of Wine and Brandy, which is there cheaper and more plentiful than in any other Port; because besides what the Territory produces, it is brought thither, as I have said before, from *Ica*, from *Chinca*, which is six Leagues North of *Pisco*, where the Temple of the Sun was, before the Conquest by the *Spaniards*; and lastly it is brought from *Lanasque*, 20 Leagues distant towards the S. E. being look'd upon as the best Wines in *Peru*; but all those Wines are extraordinary strong, and not very wholesome; which is the Reason why the *Spaniards* scarce drink any of them; the Sale being almost entirely among the Blacks, the *Indians*, the *Mulattoes*, and such-like People. Instead of Wine, many *Spaniards*, out of an extravagant Prejudice, drink Brandy.

Vineyards  
and Wine.

The Vineyards of the Country about *Pisco*, which cannot conveniently be water'd by Trenches, are planted in such a Manner as not to need it, tho' it never rains there. Every Stock is in a Hole four or five Foot deep, where there is a general Moisture, which Nature has spread through the Earth to supply the Want of River and Rain-Water; for the Country is desert, and so dry, that there are no Places habitable, but a few Plains and Vales, where that Relief is to be had; besides, the Bottom is almost pure Salt, whence proceeds that brackish Taste which is found in most of the Wines of that Country Growth.

Fruit.

There are also about *Pisco* all Sorts of Fruit, Apples, Pears, Oranges, Lemons, Guayavas, Bananas, Dates, &c. Many have fancy'd they have observ'd, that when a Date Tree is alone, it produces no Fruit, unless it be near another, which is call'd the Female: But all Men do not agree in this Particular; some of the Inhabitants represented that Observation to me as a Mistake. There is a Sort of Cucumber which Father *Feuillee* calls *Melongena lauri folia fructu turbinate variegato*, the Inhabitants *Pepo*, or *Pepino*, that is Cucumber. It is very refreshing, and has some Taste of a Melon, but sady. The *Camotes*, or *Patatas*, are not so good there as in *Brasil*; there are red, yellow, and white.

Many Fruit.

They have also a Sort of Fruit there, which grows in a Cod that does not rise out of the Earth, in which are some Grains, or Seeds, like round Lupins; which being roasted in the Oven in their Cod, have a pleasant Taste like a roasted Hazle-nut. They eat Abundance of them, tho' they are very hot, and provoking to Love: It is in all likelihood the *Araquidna* of some Botanists; the Inhabitants call it *Many*.

The Plenty of Provisions the Country affords, together with a good Trade, makes the Inhabitants easy; so that they often divert themselves with publick Shows, such as Bull-Fests, Plays, and Masquerades.



I was there, at the time when the Mulattoes kept a Festival in Honour of *Our Lady of Mount Carmel*: Those poor People, like all the other *Creolian Spaniards*, that is, the mix'd Races, are so much infatuated with a thousand Apparitions, either true or false, that they make them the principal Object of their Devotion. This Abuse is occasion'd by the Ignorance of the Friars, who having neither Literature nor Criticism, to discern between Truth and Falshood, give themselves up to a Tradition, and Customs establish'd before their Time, by those of their Order, for their private Interest. There being no *Carmelites* throughout all *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Mercenarian* Friars have taken to themselves the Direction of the Brotherhood of the \* *Scapular*; and because they have no Monastery at *Pisco*, one of them comes from *Lima* to be present at that Festival.

Fest of the  
Scapular.

On *Thursday* the 14<sup>th</sup> of *September*, the *Mulatto's* began <sup>Scandalous</sup> the Solemnity with a Play call'd *El Principe Poderoso*, or, <sup>Play.</sup> *The Powerful Prince*; written by a *Spanish* European Poet. The depraved Taste of that Nation leading them to mix in their Shows, Things Sacred with Prophane; I observ'd, that in this they had indulg'd their Natural Gennus, beyond the Bounds of good Sense and Decency: In short, nothing could be seen more ridiculous than the Decoration of the farther Part of the Stage, the Point of Perspective thereof terminating in an Altar, on which was the Image of our *Lady of Mount Carmel*, with lighted Candles about it; and all the Actors began their Prologue kneeling, with a Dedicacion

B b 2

\* See Monsieur de Larnoy's Treatise, *De Visione Simonis Stockii & Origine Scapularii*, where he makes it appear, that very long after the Death of *Simon Stock*, two *Carmelites*, whose Names were *Gregory of S. Basil*, and *Mark Anthony de Cazamate*, contrived to set up the *Scapular* upon an Apparition of the Blessed *Virgin* to *Simon*, and upon two Bulls, the one of *Pope John the XXII* quoted in their Writings after so different a Manner, not only as to the Expressions, but also as to the Inequality of the Length of the Discourse, that it plainly appears to be Counterfeit; nor to mention other Reasons which make it plain, the second of *Pope Urban V.* dated at *Rome*, where that *Pope* had died, *at Florence* had never been since his Coronation.

dication of the Play to the Blessed Virgin. One would have judg'd by this pious Invocation, that the Play would be to the Edification of the Spectators; but I was sufficiently undeceiv'd of that Notion, when I beheld on the Stage the disagreeing Medley of *Sigismund's* Piety embracing a Crucifix, to which he made his Application under an Adversity, and the Licentiousness of Buffoons in the Play; and of Interludes, or little Farces between the Acts, which consisted of gross Obscenities, but a little wrapp'd up, or disguised.

*Bull-Feast.*

The next Day there was the Show of the Bull-Feast, which was no better than that at *Valparaiso*, before spoken of; a Spectacle as unfit to honour the Blessed Virgin as such Comedies, since it is forbid by the Ecclesiastical Laws, by reason of the Danger of Death Men expose themselves to, without any Necessity, as frequently happens, and at this Time it was very near happening to a Black, the Bull leaving him on the Ground so much hurt, that it was question'd whether he could recover.

*Masquerade.*

On Saturday Night there was a Masquerade of People running about the Streets by Candle-light, as they do in *France* at the Carnival or Shrovetide: The Prime Actors were in a Cart, preceded by others on Horse-back. On that Cart I took Notice of a Man clad in the Habit of the Friars of *S. John of God*, who I was assured was really a Friar; but I could not persuade myself that it was any other than a Mask, for on the Cart he stood up and dane'd with Women such a Posture Dance as the Blacks of the Islands dance at their *Bangala*, or Instrument, which is all that can be said with Modesty. Be that as it will, the Name of *Our Lady of Mount Carmel* often resounded in the extravagant Cries, amidst the Reproaches and the most infamous Absurdities with which they accosted such as pass'd by at the very same time, when on the other hand they were making the Procession of the Rosary. As ridiculous as this Custom appear'd, it may be said as great Extravagancies have been seen in *France* on the Feast of Fools.

The

“ The Priests and Clerks went mask'd to the Church, and  
 “ at their Return from thence went about the Streets in  
 “ Carts, and mounted on Stages, performing all the most  
 “ impudent Postures and Buffoonries with which Water-  
 “ men are wont to divert the foolish Mobb.” That Festival  
 continued in France above 150 Years, from the Twelfth to  
 the Fifteenth Century. *Mess. Phil. II.*

Sunday Night they acted the Comedy of the Life of *S. Alexius*, written by the Spanish Poet *Moreto*, which I have since found in the Tenth Volume of the Collection of Spanish Plays, printed at *Madrid* with Licence, in the Year 1658, by the Name of, *Nuevo Teatro de Comedias varias de diferentes Autores*, or the New Theatre of Variety of Plays by sundry Authors. I thought it very strange in the first Act, to see *S. Alexius's* Guardian Angel, and the Devil, disputing about persuading him to leave or stay with his Wife: In the second, the Devil appears in the Shape of a poor Man; or Beggar, and in the third in that of a Sailor; and about the End of the second, a Choir of Angels shut up in an Hermitage, twice sings the first Part of the *Te Deum*, to the Musick of the Bells. The Extravagancy of those Conceits, and of the Persons the Poet brings upon the Stage, was to us Frenchmen, who happen'd to be present at that Spectacle, a Subject the more ridiculous, in regard that we were us'd to correct Pieces, and wherein the Respect that is paid to Things sacred, admits of no Mixture of what is prophane, as was in this I am speaking of, where the Licentiousness of Farce intermix'd added to the Preposterousness. I do not give this Relation as if it were a Thing extraordinary or new in *Europe*; there is no Man that has travel'd in *Spain*, but is acquainted with the Taste of their Dramatick Poems, in which the Subject of Devotion has always some Part; so that we still find among them what was us'd at the first. Rise of our French Stage, as is related by one of our Poets.

*Chez nos devots Ayeux le Theatre abhorre  
 Eut long-temps dans la France un plaisir ignore.*

De

*A Voyage to*

*De Pelerins, dit on, une troupe grossiere  
En public à Paris y monta la premiere,  
Et s'otement zelée en sa simplicité,  
Joia les Saints, la Vierge, & Dieu par pieté.  
Le savoir à la fin dissipant l'ignorance,  
Fit voir de ce projet la devote imprudence.*

Despreaux Art. Poet. Chant III.

Our pious Fathers, in their godly Age,  
As impious and prophane, abhor'd the Stage.  
A Troop of silly Pilgrims, as 'tis said,  
Foolishly Zealous, scandalously play'd  
The Angels, God, the Virgin and the Saints,  
Instead of Heroes and of Love Complaints;  
At last, right Reason did her Laws reveal,  
And shew'd the Folly of their ill-plac'd Zeal.

As for the particular Faults in that Piece, the Distance of Time and Place therein is shocking. *S. Alexius* in the first and last Act is at Rome, and during the second he is several Years visiting the Holy Land; however, that Variety is not look'd upon as a Fault among the Spaniards, as *Despreaux* has observ'd in his Art of Poetry, in these Words,

*Un Rimeur, sans péril, de là les Pyrennées,  
Sur la Scene, en un jour, renferme des années.  
Là souvent le Heroe d'un Spectacle grossier,  
Enfant au premier Acte, est barbon au dernier.  
Mais nous, que la raison à ses regler engage,  
Nous voulons qu'avec art l'action se ménage:  
Ou'en un lieu, qu'en un jour, un seul fait accompli,  
Tiensse jusque'à la fin le Spectacle rempli.*

A Spanish Poet may, with good Event,  
In one Day's Space whole Ages represent.  
There, oft the Heroe of a wandering Stage  
Begins a Child, and ends the Play at Age;

But

But we, who are by Reason's Rules confin'd,  
 Will, that with Art the Poem be design'd,  
 That Unity of Action, Time and Place  
 Keep the Stage full, and all your Labours grace.

But that which ought to be blamable in all Countries is, that *S. Alexius* is represented as not over-scrupulous, as to Lying; for the Author makes him use some mental Reservations which are much to the same Effect, when he endeavours to conceal himself from a Man sent by his Father to look after him. He says of himself, that he knows *S. Alexius*, but that he is gone very far before. The Spanish Words are these:

*Conosco esse Cavallero*  
*Porque he venido con el,*  
*E me conto su sucesso,*  
*Mas ya va muy adelante.*

That is, I know that Gentleman, because I came along with him; and he told me his Story; but he is now far before, or, according to the double Meaning of the Word, much advanced.

In other respects, in such a little Town, nothing better could be expected as to the Decorations of the Theatre, which was contracted into a small Compass, after our Manner; and it may be said, that the Actors, being of the meanest of the People, for they were all *Mulatto's*, and who did not make Acting their Profession, play'd their Parts well enough, according to the Spanish Taste. I observ'd in their Interludes, or little Farces between the Acts, an Affectation of introducing Doctors in their Robes, representing Extravagancies. I do not understand how the Church-men, who are almost the only Persons entitled Doctors, have the Complaisance to admit of those Sports; for if there be any impertinent Part, the Man in the Cap is sure to have a Share in it.

After

After the Play of *S. Alexius*, they acted *Sigismund*, and ran about in Masquerade to make up the Octave, which I could not see concluded, because the Weather was proper to fail.

We left the *Princess* in the Road, under the Command of *Martin*, which came from *Emoi* in *China*, and the *Margaret* of *S. Malo* from *France*.

Departure  
from Pisco.

Thursday September 21, we set Sail for *Callao* with a fresh Gale at S. E. The next Day we had Sight of the Island of *Asia*: Saturday the Calm kept us in Sight of *Morro Solar*, and the Island of *S. Laurence*, which appear'd to us thus to the Northward.

Plate XXVI.

Callao how  
low.

That Island is easily known, because it is indifferent high, separated from the little Island of *Callao*; and in the Opening between them there are two small Isles, or rather Rocks: There is also a third very low, half a League out at Sea S. S. E. from the N. W. Point of the Island of *S. Laurence*. We heav'd the Lead at about two Cables Distance from that Point, and found 60 Fathom Water, an owzy Bottom. At length we anchor'd a League West of *Callao*, in 14 Fathom Water, the Bottom an Olive Colour Owze.

Monsieur *de Ragueine* stay'd thus without at the Opening of the Road, till he had Leave from the Viceroy to anchor under the Cannon of the Town to careen, which was granted him without any Difficulty. Then he sail'd in, and saluted the Town with nine Guns, and receiv'd no Answer, tho' they knew that he was the King's Officer. Two French Ships of *S. Malo*, and the *Mary-Anne* of *Marseilles*, which were in the Road, paid him the Respect due to his Post, each of them saluting him with nine Guns, and Monsieur *de Ragueine* answer'd each of them apart. Besides those three Ships, there were 18 Spaniards; and among them the *Incarnation*, a Portuguese Three-Deck Prize, which the Sieur *Brignon* of *S. Malo* had just then sold to the Viceroy for 10000 Pieces of Eight, for the King's Service: His Excellency came to take Possession of it in Person on the 30th of September. Upon his Arrival at *Callao*, he was saluted

Altho' the party of 2. Men... could not be concluded... to fall

We left the Port in the East... gain of 2. Males from France

The day following 21. we set sail for... the land of 2. Kamoway... to the Northward

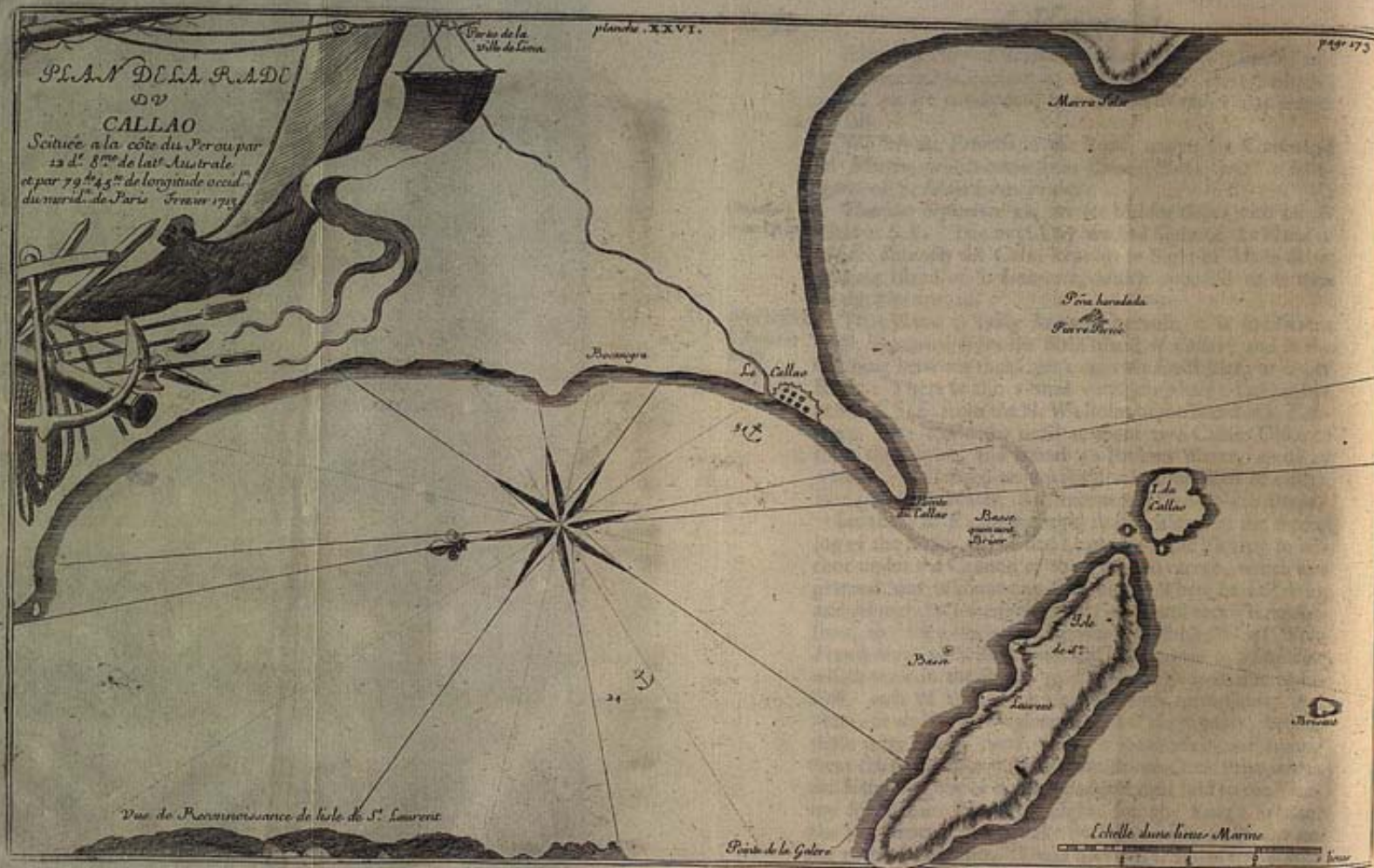
This land is easily known... high, separated from the high land of... Opening between them there are two... rocks there is this third very low...

at Sea S. E. from the N. W. Point... We bore'd the Land at about... from that Point, and found 60... bottom. At length we anchor'd...

at 4. Fathom Water, the bottom... stopp'd in the Bay... me of the Road, till he had... after under the Cannon of the... granted him without any... and named the Town with the... lower, they knew that he was... Francis Spoke of 2. Men, and the... which were in the Boat, and...

But each of the... Monsieur de... told these things, there were 12... from the... the ship... way to... The... the fort of...

Upon the 21. of... the fort of...





saluted by all the Artillery on the Ramparts of the Town; and when he went out of the Road, he was saluted with 13 Guns by each *French Ship*. It will seem amazing, that a Ship of that Magnitude, or Rate, should be sold at so low a Price in a Country where those of 400 Tons are worth four times as much: It was a Contrivance of the Viceroy, who renew'd the Prohibition to the *Spaniards* to buy any *French Ship*, to the end he might have it at his own rate.

In short, he return'd to *Lima* the same Day. At his *Viceroy's* Departure from *Callao* he was again saluted with ten Guns: His Retinue consisted of some Horse-Guards, but his Attendance had nothing resembling the Viceroyship. The Truth is, it was the Bishop of *Quito*, *Don Pedro Ladron de Guevara*, who enjoy'd that Post only during the Interim, till the Court of *Spain* sent another.

### The Description of the Road of Callao.

THE Road of *Callao* is certainly the greatest, the finest, plate XXVI: and the safest in all the South-Sea. There is Anchorage every where in as much Depth of Water as any

C c

onc

Plate XXVI. Page 193. explain'd in English.

The Plan of the Road of *CALLAO*, on the Coast of *Peru*, in 12 Degrees 8 Minutes of South Latitude, and in 79 Degrees, 45 Minutes of West Longitude from the Meridian of *Paris*.

- Partie de la Ville de Lima, Part of the City of Lima.
- Morro Solar, The Head-land Solar.
- Penna horadada, Pierre Percée, The Rock bored through.
- Pointe du Callao, The Point of Callao.
- Basse qu'on voit brüiser, A Shoal on which the Sea is seen to break.
- Basse, A Shoal.
- I. de Callao, The Island of Callao.
- Ile de S. Laurent, The Island of S. Laurence.
- Brifant, A Rock.
- Voie de Reconnoissance de l' Ile de S. Laurent, Thus appears the Island of S. Laurence.
- Pointe de la Galere, Point Galere, or of the Galley.
- Echelle d' une lieue marine, A Scale of a Sea League.

one like, on an Olive-Colour Owze, without Danger of any Rocks or Shoals, excepting one, which is three Cables Length from the Shore, about the Middle of the Island of *S. Laurence*, opposite to *La Galera*. The Sea is there always so still, that Ships careen at all Seasons, without fearing to be surpriz'd by any sudden Gusts; However, it is open from the North to the N. N. W. but those Winds hardly ever blow above a small easy Gale, which does not cause the Sea to swell to any Danger. The Island of *S. Laurence* breaks the Surges that come from the S. W. to the S. E. That Island is defenceless: In the Year 1624, it was a Receptacle to *James l. Hermite*, who fortify'd himself there, in order to take *Callao*; but being disappointed therein, he burnt above 30 Ships that were in the Road. It is also a Place of Banishment for the Blacks and Mulatto's, who are condemn'd for any Crimes, to dig Stone for the publick Structures, and indirectly for the private. This Punishment being equivalent to that of the Gallies in *Spain*, the Name of *La Galera*, or the Galley, is given to the West Point of the Island. We have said elsewhere, that *Baldovia* is instead of the Gallies for the Whites.

*S. Laurence  
Island.*

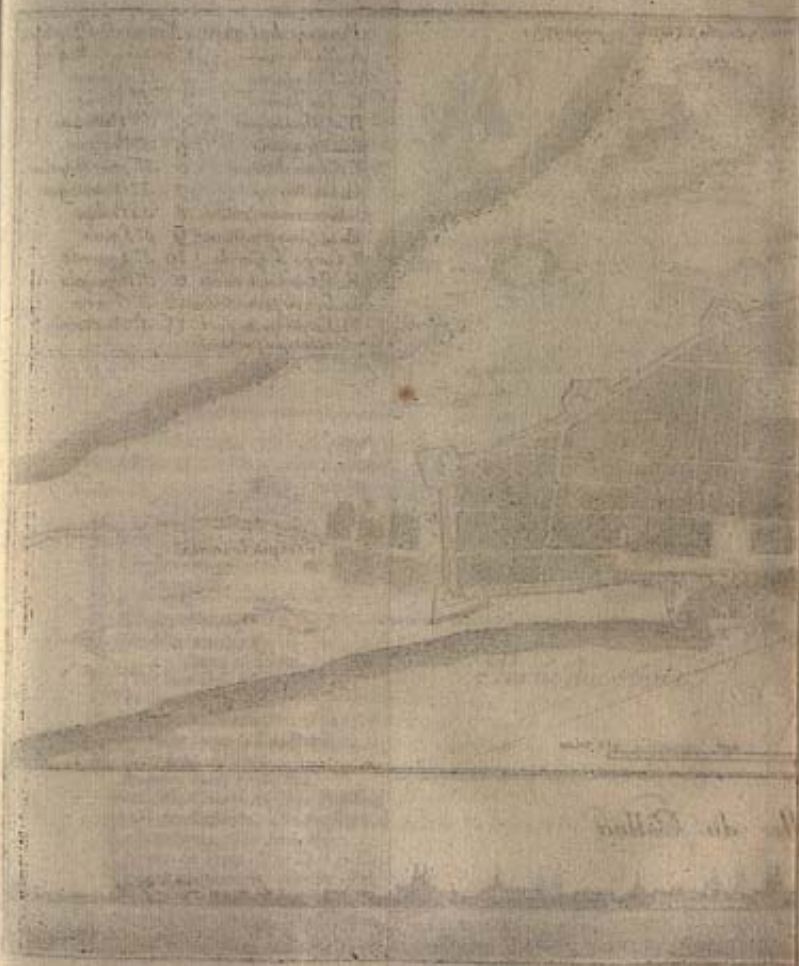
*1773*

*Anchorage.*

The general Anchoring-Place in the Road is E. and by N. of the Point *Galera*, two or three Cables Length from the Town. There Ships are also shelter'd from the South Wind by the Point of *Callao*, which is a low Strip of Land, between which and the Island of *Callao* there is a narrow Channel, and somewhat dangerous; however, Ships pass through it, coasting close along the Island in four or five Fathom Water. Next the Continent is a Bank of Sand stretching out from the Point to a Shoal, where the Sea is seen to break from far off.

In the Port of *Callao* are to be found all Conveniences and Necessaries for Navigation. The Watering is easy at the little River of *Lima*, which falls into the Sea under Walls of *Callao*. Wooding, however, costs more Trouble; being half a League to the Northward, at *Bocanegra*; they cut the Wood half a League up the Country, and pay the

*Jesuites*



Faint, illegible text, possibly bleed-through from the reverse side of the page.

Handwritten text, possibly a signature or a date, located in the lower right quadrant of the drawing area.

Faint text at the bottom of the page, likely a title or a caption.



Gesüiter 25 or 30 Pieces of Eight for each Boat-full. For the Conveniency of landing out of the Boats, there are close by the Walls three Wooden Stairs and a Stone Mole, design'd for unlading of Cannon, Anchors, and other Things of Weight, which are hoisted up with a Sort of Crane. That Mole will not last long; for the Sea daily demollishes it.

The Description of the Town of Callao.

THE Town of Callao is built on a low flat Point of Land, on the Edge of the Sea, in 12 Degrees to Minutes of South Latitude. It was fortify'd in the Reign of King Philip IV. and the Viceroyship of the Marquis de

Place  
XXVII

Cc 2

Mancera,

Plate XXVII. Page 195. explain'd in English.  
The Plan of the Town of CALLAO, on the Coast of Peru, in 12 Degrees 7 Minutes of South Latitude.

References of Churches.

- A. The Parish Church.
- B. S. Augustin.
- C. The Jesuites.
- D. S. Dominick.
- E. S. Francis.
- F. S. John of God.
- G. The Mercenariants.

Names of the Bastions.

- 1. S. Michael's Bastion.
- 2. S. Ignatius.
- 3. The Holy Cross.
- 4. S. Katharine.
- 5. S. James.
- 6. S. John Baptist.
- 7. S. Dominick.
- 8. S. Philip.
- 9. S. Lewis.
- 10. S. Laurence.
- 11. S. Francis.
- 12. S. Peter.
- 13. S. Anthony.

Places of Note.

- H. The Governor's House.
- I. The Corps de Garde.
- K. The Administration.
- L. The three Gates to Landward.
- M. Gates next the Port.

Breaches made by the Sea.

Profil des Courtines, The Profile of the Curtins.

Profil des Bastions, The Profile of the Bastions.

La Boucheie, The Shambles.

Chemin de Lima, The Road to Lima.

Petipiti le nouveau, New Petipiti.

Petipiti le vieux, Old Petipiti.

Aiguade des ravires, The Watering-Place for Ships.

Môle, The Mole.

Partie du Port, Part of the Port.

Toises, Fathoms.

Vue de la Ville de Callao, A Prospect of the Town of Callao.

*Mancera*, with an Enclosure flank'd by 10 Bastions on the Land-side, and by some Redans and plain Bastions on the Edge of the Sea, where there are four Batteries of Cannon to command the Port and Road. This Port was in a bad Condition in the Year 1713; there were five Breaches in it, and the Sea daily ruins the Wall, since there has been a Stone Key built, the Situation whereof stops the S. W. Surf, and occasions a Return of the Water, which saps the Walls of the Town.

Fortifications.  
See the Top  
of Plate  
XXVII.

The Breadth of the Rampart is of two different Extents; the Curtins are at the Top but eight Foot thick, two and a half of Earth, as much Banquette, and three of Stone, with Mortar made of Sand and Lime; the rest of the Thickness is of unburnt Bricks, with a little Stone Wall within: The Rampart of the Bastions has five Fathoms of Earth, laid with unequal Planks, to serve for a Platform for the Cannon, the whole of unsolid Masonry, because ill built.

Artillery.

Every Bastion is vaulted, and has its Magazine of Powder, Balls, and other Necessaries, for the Service of the Artillery that is mounted on it. There are generally two, three, or four Pieces of Brass Cannon always mounted on each of them; in the whole Compass there were in my Time 41, and there are to be 70 of several Sizes, from 12 to 24 Pounds, Spanish Weight, which with us makes Bastard Bores. Among those Pieces there are 10 Culverins from 17 to 18 Foot long, and 24 Pounds, whereof there are eight mounted, to fire upon the Road, which are said to carry as far as the Point de la Galera, of the Island of S. Laurence, which is almost two Leagues.

Besides the Artillery, on the Rampart, there are nine Field-Pieces mounted, and ready for Service. There are also above 120 Brass Guns of several Sizes, design'd for the King's Ships, call'd *La Almiranta*, *La Capitana*, and *El Gobierno*, which serv'd when the Galeons came to *Portobelo* to convoy the *Armada*, or little Fleet of *Panama*, and to transport to *Peru* the Commodities that came from *Europe*.

rove, and the King's Allowance to *Chili*, and the Recruits of Men they had Occasion for, before the Peace concluded with the *Indians*. At present those Ships are so much neglected, that they are unfit to put to Sea without Rehting; however, the King still maintains the Marine Troops, of which here follows a Particular, after those of the Land Service.

*A Particular of the Land Forces paid by the King of Spain, at Callao, in 1713.*

	Pieces of Eight
THE Governor General	7000
A Colonel of the Place, appointed by the King, his yearly Allowance, 3217	Pieces of Eight,
and 4 Royals.	
A Town Major, appointed also by the King	1200
A Town Adjutant yearly	600
Seven Companies of <i>Spanish Foot</i> , 100 Men each	
Every Captain yearly	1800
Seven Ensigns, each	672
Seven Serjeants, each	348
Fourteen Drums, each	240
Seven Ensign-Carriers.	240
Seven Fiels, each	240
An Adjutant	396
Six hundred Foot which compose the Garrison, each	240
Each Company has 4 Heads of Brigades, or Corporals, being generally the oldest Soldiers, two of whom march before the Colours, and two behind them: each of them has per Month	240
A Drum Major of the Place, yearly	240
All the above Officers, are appointed by the Viceroy, with the King's Approbation, excepting the 3 first, whom the King appoints.	

*Artillery*

## Artillery for the Land Service.

A Lieutenant General, yearly	1944
A Master Gunner	486
A Captain of the Artillery	666
Ten Master Gunners, each	400
Two Aids-Majors, each	396
Seventy Gunners, each	396

## Marine Troops in Pay.

The General of the Sea, or Admiralty yearly	2200
He has the same Honours and Privileges as the General of the Galeons.	
Two Chief Pilots, each	1200
Four Masters of Ships, each yearly	340
Four Masters-Mates, each	396
Four Master Gunners, each	444
Five Chaplains, one of whom serves the Chappel in the Island of Callao, each	396
Four Purfers, each	600
Four Clerks, each	396
Four Stewards, each	396
Four Master Carpenters, each	396
Four Master Talkers, each	396
Four Divers, each	396
Twenty four Gunners, each	396
A Major of the Marine	600
Two Aids-Majors, or Adjutants, each	396
Twenty four Officers-Mariners, that is Quarter-Masters, each	240
Forty Sailors, each	180
Sixteen Grummets, each	180



*Marine Troops to serve in two Small Fregates,*

Two Captains, each of them to command a	
Fregate, each	600
Four Officers Mariners, or Quarter-Masters, each	244
Eight Sailors, each	180

All the Officers and Sailors, besides their Pay, have their Allowances, each according to his Degree.

### *Militia.*

In the Town of *Callao*, there are three Companies, which receive no Pay.

The first is composed of Seamen.

The second of Inhabitants and Traders in the Town.

The third of the Masters Carpenters, Calkers, and other Workmen belonging to those Trades, to whom are added the Mulattoes and free Blacks, who work in the King's Yards.

Moreover four Companies of *Indians*, with their Officers of the same Nation; whereof one is of those in the Town, another of those in the Suburbs of *Petipiti*, and two of those of the *Magdalen*, *Miraflores*, and *Churillos*, and other neighbouring Farms. These are obliged to repair to the Town upon the Signal of a Gun, and are appointed for transporting of Ammunition and Provisions. These Companies have a Major of their own. Thus much as to the Strength of Men; let us now see that of the Situation of the Place.

The Level of the Town is not above 9 or 10 Foot above the High-water Mark, which does not rise and fall above 4 or 5 Foot. However, it sometimes exceeds, so that it floods the Out-Skirts of the Town, as happen'd in *September 1713*, so that it is to be fear'd it may some time or other destroy the same.

Tho'

Streets.

Tho' the Inside is not divided into Quarters of the usual Dimensions of the *Quadra*, or common Square used in other Towns, the Streets are all in a Line; but so troublesome for Dust, as is not tolerable but in a Village.

Square.

On the Edge of the Sea, is the Governor's House, and the Viceroy's Palace, which take up two Sides of a Square, the Parish Church making the third, and a Battery of three Pieces of Cannon the fourth. The Corps de Garde, and the Hall for the Arms are also by the Viceroy's Lodgings. In the same Street, on the North-side, are the Ware-houses for the Commodities the *Spanish* Ships bring from *Chili*, *Peru* and *Mexico*.

Trade to Cal-  
Iao.Commodities  
of *Chili*.

From *Chili*, they bring Cordage, Leather, Tallow, dry'd Flesh, and Corn; from *Chiloe*, Cedar Planks, a very light Wood, before spoken of, Woollen Manufactures, and particularly Carpets, like those of *Turky*, to spread on the *Estrados*, or Places where the Women sit on Cushions.

Of *Peru*.

From *Peru*, Sugars of *Andaguaylas*, *Guayaquil* and other Places; Wines and Brandy from *Lanasco* and *Pisco*; Malts, Cordage, Timber for Shipping, Cacao of *Guayaquil* and the Country about, Tabacco, and some little Honey of Sugar. The Cacao is afterwards transported to *Mexico*.

Of *Mexico*.

From *Mexico*, as from *Sonsonate*, *Realejo* and *Guatemala*, Pitch and Tar, which is only fit for Wood, because it burns the Cordage, Woods for dying, Sulphur, and Balsam, which bears the Name of Balsam of *Peru*; but which in reality comes most from *Guatemala*. There are two sorts of it, White and Brown; the latter is most valued, and they put it into Coco Shells, when it is of the Consistence of Tar; but generally it comes in Earthen Pots liquid, and then it is liable to be falsify'd and mix'd with Oil to increase the Quantity. From the same Places they bring fine Works, which they call of *Caray*, and Commodities of *China*, by the way of *Acapulco*, tho' contraband.

Besides these Warehouses, there is another for laying up of the *European* Commodities, which they call *la Administracion*

tion. The *French* Ships that have had leave to trade to *Callao*, have been obliged to put into it all they had aboard. They exact upon the selling Price 13 per Cent. of such as come with their whole Lading, and sometimes even 16, of those who have already sold much in other Ports along the Coast, and three in the Thousand for other Royal Duties and Consullhip, without reckoning the Presents that are to be privately made to the Viceroy and the King's Officers, who will not transgress the Laws of the Kingdom for nothing, in a Place where they have the Power in their own Hands. It is not to be wonder'd that the hungry Officers should be corrupted, they buying their Places only to enrich themselves, and consequently are little concern'd for the Publick Good, provided they find their own Account therein. It is true, there seems to be some Reason for permitting the *French* to trade, during these late Wars, considering the Scarcity of Merchandizes there was in the Country, by reason of the Stoppage of the Trade of the Galeons; but it must also be own'd, that the *Spaniards* have permitted it without any Discretion, with so much Ease, that it has been prejudicial to both; because the *French* resorting thither without Measure, have carry'd many more Goods than the Country could use; that Plenty has obliged them to sell the said Goods at very low Rates, and has ruin'd the *Spanish* Merchants, and consequently the *French* for several Years. Three Ships, with each of them Goods to the Value of a Million of Pieces of Eight, would have been sufficient for *Peru* yearly; for *Chili* cannot take off for above the Value of 400000 Pieces of Eight; the Merchants would have bought to a more certain Profit, and one *French* Ship would have made more Profit than three or four: But enough of this Reflexion, which can be of no Advantage.

Besides the publick Structures already mention'd, there are none of Note, except the Churches, which, considering they are built with Canes interwoven, and cover'd with Clay or Timber painted white, are nevertheless very neat.

There are five Monasteries of Religious Men, *Dominicans*, *Franciscans*, *Augustins*, *Mercenarians*, and *Jesuites*; besides the Hospital of *S. John of God*. The Number of the Inhabitants does not exceed 400 Families, tho' they reckon 600.

*Garrison.*

Tho' the King of *Spain* has settled a Fund of 29217*l*. Pieces of Eight a Year, for maintaining of the Garrison of *Callao*; there are scarce Soldiers enow to mount the Guard at the Place of Arms.

*Governor and Logisier.*

The Governor is generally a considerable *European*, who is reliev'd by the Court of *Spain* every five Years. His Catholic Majesty also keeps an Engineer there, who serves for all the Places in *South America*; which are *Baldivia*, *Valparaiso*, *Callao*, *Lima*, and *Truxillo*.

Since the Death of Monsieur *Rossemim*, the *French* Engineer, the Charge of the Fortifications has been committed to Signior *Peralto*, a *Creollo*, or *Mongrel Spaniard* of *Lima*, Astrologer and Astronomer of the City; but tho' the King allows 30000 Pieces of Eight assign'd upon the Excise on Fleth, for repairing the Walls of *Callao*, they let them run to ruin next the Sea; so that they will be obliged to rebuild near one Half of them.

Without the Walls of *Callao* there are two *Indian* Suburbs call'd *Pitipiti*, and distinguish'd by the Names of the Old and New; the first of them is on the South, and the other on the North Side, into which runs the River of *Rimac*, or of *Lima*.

*Road to Lima.*

On that Side is the Road that leads to *Lima*, which is only two Leagues distant, the Way good and pleasant, along a fine Plain. At the Mid-way is a Chappel of *S. John of God*, call'd *La Legua*, or the League: A Quarter of a League beyond it, the Road parts into two Branches, of which that on the Left Hand leads to the Royal Gate of *Lima*, and the other to that call'd *Juan Simon*, which answers to the Middle of the City, and is consequently more frequented than the other.

That

That Way I enter'd on the 2d of *October* 1713, in order to stay at *Lima* till a Ship sail'd for *France*. Two Days after my Arrival there, they celebrated the Feast of *S. Francis of Assisum*, which is none of the least in the Year; for the *Spaniards* being possess'd and infatuated by the Friers, especially the *Franciscans* and the *Dominicans*, look upon the Founders of those two Orders as the greatest Saints in Heaven. The Veneration they pay them extends even to the Habits of their Orders, much beyond other Monastical Habits.

Arrival at  
Lima.

They chiefly believe they gain great Indulgences by kissing that of *S. Francis*: The *Franciscans* to keep up that Notion, send some of their Friers into the most frequented Churches, to give their Sleeve to kisses to those who are hearing Mass: Even the questing Brothers presume to interrupt People at their Prayers to have that Honour done them. But in order to heighten the general Respect paid to their Order, and render its Grandeur the more observable to the Publick, they on the Festival of their Founder make magnificent Fire-works and Processions, and embellish their Cloisters within and without with the richest Things they can come at. Thus they cast Dust into the Eyes of the Carnal People, who are taken with fine Appearances, and in some Measure ease them of the truly Religious Life.

The Festival began at the Evensong of the Eve, by a Procession of the *Dominicans*, in which ten Men carry'd the Figure of *S. Dominick*, going to visit his Friend *S. Francis*. He was clad in rich Gold Stuffs, and glittering with small Stars of Silver, strew'd upon him, that he might be seen at a Distance.

*S. Francis* being inform'd of the Honour his Friend *Procession* was coming to do him, came to meet him as far as the Square, which is about half Way: Before the Palace Gate they complimented one another, by means of the Organs of their Children, for tho' they made Gestures, they had not the Advantage of speaking. The latter being more Modest than the former, came in his *Franciscan* Frier's Cloth;

Cloth; but amidst that Poverty, he was encompass'd by an Arch of Silver Rays, and hid at his Feet such a Quantity of Gold and Silver Vessels, that 18 Men bow'd under that Wealth.

They were both receiv'd at *S. Francis's* Church Door by four Giants of several Colours, a white, a black, a Mulatto, and an *Indian*, which came to the Square to dance before the Procession. They were made of Basket-work, cover'd with painted Paper, and real Scarecrows for their Figure, Masks, Hats and Perukes. In the midst of the Giants was the *Tarasca*, a chimerical Monster, known in some Provinces of *France*, bearing on its Back a Basket, from which issu'd a Puppet, or Maulkin, that danced and skipp'd to divert the People. At length they enter'd the Church amidst a great Number of Papers and little Angels two or three Foot high, set on Tables, like Puppets, among great Candlesticks six or seven Foot high.

*Fire-works.*

At the Close of the Evening there were Fire-works in the Square before the Church: They consisted of three Castles, each of them eight or nine Foot wide, and 15 or 16 in height. On the Top of one of them was a Bull, and on another a Lion. The Steeples of the Church were adorn'd with Ensigns and Streamers of all Colours, and illuminated with Lanthorns. They began the Entertainment by throwing up Sky-Rockets, small and ill made: then they play'd some running Fires, one of which separated into three long Squibs, which rested on the Middle and the two Ends of the Line, leaving two little Globes of bright Fire at the two Intervals. This was the only Fire-work that deserv'd to be taken Notice of. At last, a Man on Horseback came down from a Steeple by a Rope, and came to attack in the Air one of those Castles; they set fire to it, and successively burnt the Giants, the *Tarasca*, or Monster; and so all was reduced to Ashes.

The

How that is done, may be seen in my *Treatise of Artificial Fire-works.*

The next Day there was a long Sermon; and Musick, where they sung *Spanish* Motetts. The Monastery was open'd to the Women, and at Night another Procession carry'd *S. Dominick* home: Then, tho' it was Day, there was another Fire-work, and a Giant came down by a Rope to attack a Castle, and fight a Serpent with three Heads.

This Solemnity, tho' very expensive, was, as they say, much inferior to the former, which were sometimes so magnificent, that they were obliged to limit them; whence may be inferr'd in how great Esteem those Friars are, since by means of their Wallets they get enough not only to maintain above 1500 Persons, as well Friars as Servants, in four Monasteries, and to erect sumptuous Structures for that Country, for the Monastery of *S. Francis* is the finest and largest in *Lima*; but have enough left for Expences of meer Ostentation, which have sometimes amounted to 50000 Pieces of Eight, of what is the Right of the Poor, of whom there is no Want there, any more than elsewhere. In short, if what is superfluous in the Laity belongs to them, with much more Reason does that which those Friars have to spare, they themselves professing such rigorous Poverty, that they do not pretend to have a Right to the very Bread they are actually eating, as we are inform'd by that pleasant Piece of History so well known by a Bull of Pope *John XXII.*

We need not be surpriz'd at these Expences, if we consider the extraordinary Produce of the Quest, since the great Monastery alone has 24 Questors at *Lima*, one of whom, who died in 1708, had in 20 Years gather'd 350000 Pieces of Eight: Besides, it is very common among the *Spaniards* to wrong their nearest Relations of considerable Sums of Money, and even of their lawful Inheritance, in Favour of the Church and the Monasteries, which they there call making their Soul their Heir.

In the second place, it may be observ'd how little Taste and Genius there is among them; for in their Shows there is no Fancy, Design, nor Subject: But I have dwelt too long

long upon a Festival, which does not deserve so much. It is time to speak of what I saw worth taking notice of at *Lima*, during my Stay there.

*The Description of the City of Lima.*

*Situation.*

**T**HE City of *Lima*, Capital of *Peru*, is seated two Leagues from the Port of *Callao*, in 12 Degrees, 6 Minutes and 28 Seconds of South Latitude, and 79 Degrees 45 Minutes of Western Longitude, or Difference from the Meridian of *Paris*: *Peralta* and *Father Feuillée* say 12 Degrees, 1 Minute and 15 Seconds Latitude, and 79 Degrees, 9 Minutes and 30 Seconds Longitude. It is built in a fine Plain, at the Bottom of a Vale, formerly call'd *Rimac*, of the Name of a noted Idol of the *Indians*, which was famous for Oracles; whence, by Corruption, and through the Difficulty those People found in pronouncing the Letter *R* as harshly as the *Spaniards*, came the Name of *Lima*, which is quite different from that its first Founder gave it: For *Francis Pizarro*, who began it in the Reign of the Emperor *Charles V.* and first King of *Spain* of that Name, and of *Queen Joanna*, his Mother, both of them reigning jointly in *Castile*, call'd it, *La Ciudad de los Reyes*, that is, the City of the Kings; meaning the three Wise Men that came out of the East to worship

*Plate XXVIII. Page 206. explain'd in English.*

The Plan of the City of *LIMA*, the Capital of *Peru*, in 12 Degrees 6 Minutes 28 Seconds of South Latitude, 2 Leagues from the Port of *Callao*.

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| a. <i>S. Rose, A House of devout Women.</i>  | h. <i>S. Peter of Alcantara.</i>        |
| b. <i>The House of Divorce.</i>              | i. <i>The Congregation of Priests.</i>  |
| c. <i>The House of poor Women.</i>           | k. <i>Devotes of the Mother of God.</i> |
| d. <i>S. Ildephonus.</i>                     | l. <i>The Seminary of S. Toribius.</i>  |
| e. <i>The Hospital for Priests.</i>          | m. <i>Our Lady of Cochacaca.</i>        |
| f. <i>The College of Maidens.</i>            | n. <i>S. Philip the Royal.</i>          |
| g. <i>The Revivification of the Society.</i> | o. <i>The College.</i>                  |
|  | p. <i>A Chappel.</i>                    |

Places



PLAN  
DE LA VILLE DE  
LIMA  
Capitale du Perou

Située Par 12. 6. 38 de Latit Australe  
au lieu du Port de Callao  
Frezier 1776.

RENOIS  
Des Lieux Remarquables

- A La Place Royale
- B Palais du Roy
- C Audiencia Royale
- D Le Vésche
- E Pont de pierre
- F Place de l'Inquisition
- G Inquisition et sa Chapelle
- H Université et sa Chapelle
- I La Alameda
- K La Corniche ou l'ousterie
- L Barabille et sa chapelle Marché

FORTES

- M Forte Royale de Callao
- N P. de San Simon
- O Forte de Matamoros
- P Forte de S. Catherine
- Q Forte de S. Pisco
- R Forte de S. Gerardo
- S P. de S. Clair
- T Forte de S. Charles ou S. Louis
- V Alcaid de S. Pedro et S. Blas
- X Marabout à S. Pedro de Cuzco

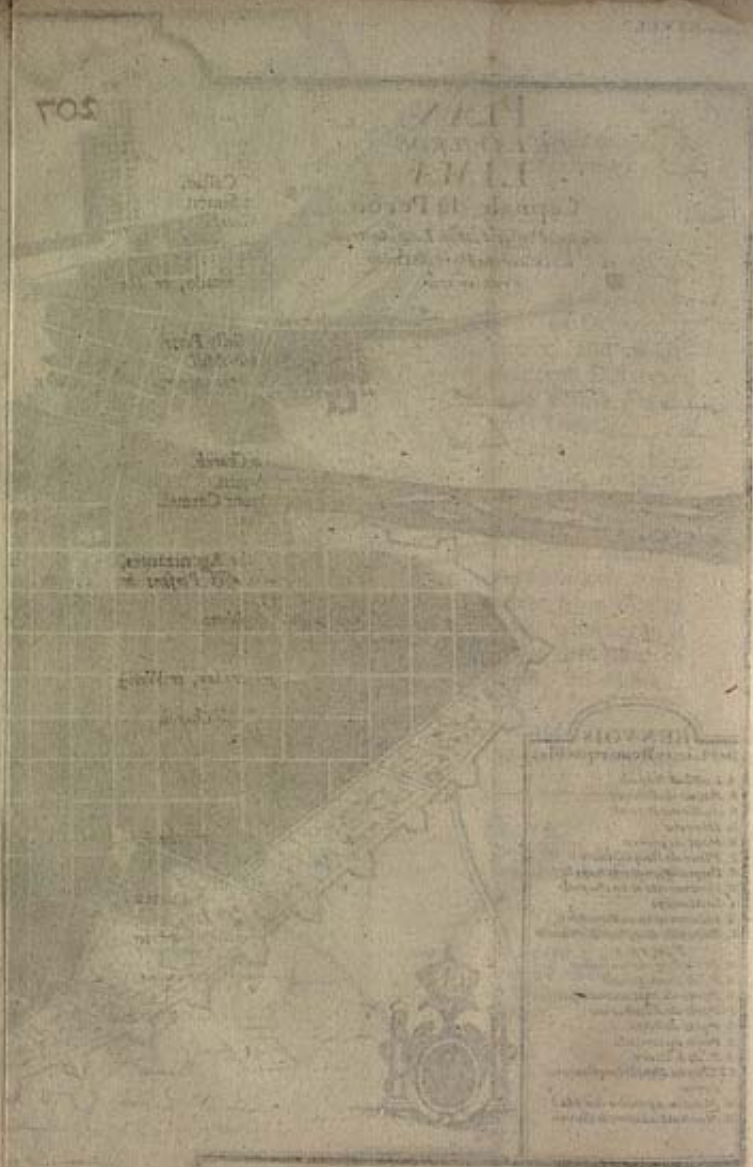


RENOIS  
DES  
Eglises et Chapelles

- 1. LA CATHEDRALE
- 2. S. Dominique
- 3. S. Augustin
- 4. S. Roch et la Vieille
- 5. L'ancien hospital de S. Martin
- 6. S. JEROME Paroisse
- 7. S. N. Dame du Carm
- 8. S. Christe de Nazareth
- 9. S. MARCE, Paroisse
- 10. S. J. Marie de S. Martin
- 11. S. La Mercy
- 12. S. Magdalena ou la Recoleta
- 13. S. N. D. de Bethlem
- 14. S. N. D. de Guadalupe
- 15. S. Nicolas de S. Martin
- 16. S. N. D. de S. Martin
- 17. S. Theres
- 18. S. Jean de Dieu hospital
- 19. S. Incurable
- 20. S. Francois
- 21. S. Martin de S. Martin
- 22. S. N. D. de S. Paul
- 23. S. Roch la neuve Las
- 24. S. la Conception
- 25. S. Pierre No la que
- 26. S. Catherine
- 27. S. Barthelemy hospital
- 28. S. Andre hospital
- 29. S. ANNE Paroisse
- 30. S. Thomas d'Aquin

Echelle  
0 100 200 300 400 Toises

Fouquet del. p. 17



Places of Note:

- A. *The Royal Square.*
- B. *The Viceray's Palace.*
- C. *The Royal Churr.*
- D. *The Archbishop's Palace.*
- E. *The Stone Bridge.*
- F. *The Square of the Inquisition.*
- G. *The Inquisition and its Chappel.*
- H. *The University and its Chappel.*
- I. *The Mint.*
- K. *The Flesh Market.*
- L. *The Market for small Wares, and its Chappel.*

The Gates.

- M. *The Royal Gate of Callao;*
- N. *The Gate of John Simon.*
- O. *Matamendings Gate.*
- P. *S. Katharine's Gate.*
- Q. *Pisco Gate.*
- R. *The Gate of the Cercado, or the Enclosure.*
- S. *S. Clare's Gate.*
- T. *T. T. Wickets, or Sally Ports.*
- V. *A Powder and Corn-Mill.*
- X. *A Water-Mill to beat Copper.*

Churches and Chappels.

- 1. *The Cathedral.*
- 2. *S. Dominick.*
- 3. *S. Augustin.*
- 4. *Old S. Rose.*
- 5. *The Holy Ghost, an Hospital for Sailors.*
- 6. *S. Sebastian, a Parish.*
- 7. *Our Lady of Monserrat, Benedictins.*
- 8. *The Holy CHRIST of Nazareth.*
- 9. *S. Marcellus Parish Church.*
- 10. *JESUS Mary, Capucins.*
- 11. *The Mercenarians.*
- 12. *S. Mary Magdalen, or the Recolletins.*
- 13. *Our Lady of Bethlethem.*
- 14. *Our Lady of Guadalupe.*
- 15. *The Noviciate of the Jesuites.*
- 16. *Our Lady of the Orphans.*
- 17. *S. Teresa.*
- 18. *S. John of God, an Hospital.*
- 19. *The Immaculation.*
- 20. *The Trinity.*
- 21. *S. Martin, Jesuites.*
- 22. *S. Paul, Jesuites.*
- 23. *New S. Rose, Retired Women.*
- 24. *The Conception.*
- 25. *S. Peter Nolasco.*
- 26. *S. Katharine.*
- 27. *S. Bartholomew's Hospital for Blacks.*
- 28. *S. Andrew's Hospital.*
- 29. *S. Anne's Parish Church.*
- 30. *S. Thomas of Aquin.*
- 31. *Our Lady of Mount Carmel.*
- 32. *The Barefoot Nuns.*
- 33. *S. Clare.*
- 34. *The Chappel of the Agonizantes, or Priests, who assist Persons in the last Agony.*
- 35. *The Trinitarian Nuns.*
- 36. *S. Peter.*
- 37. *S. Rose of Viterbo.*
- 38. *The Prado, or Meadow, or Walking-Place.*
- 39. *The Enclosure Parish Church.*
- 40. *The Bethlehemites.*
- 41. *The Incurable.*
- 42. *S. Savioirs Parish Church.*
- 43. *The Hospital.*
- 44. *S. Francis.*
- 45. *Los Desamparados, or the For-saken, Jesuites.*
- 46. *Our Lady of Caveca.*
- 47. *Our Lady of Succour, Minimae.*
- 48. *S. Lazarus Parish Church.*
- 49. *Los Descalcos, the Barefoot Friars.*
- 50. *Copacavana.*
- 51. *The Chappel of the Poplar Grove.*
- 52. *Guiza, the Guide.*
- 53. *The ancient Chappel of S. Francis of Paula.*
- 54. *S. Christopher's Chappel.*

Arms of  
Lima.

See Plate  
XXVIII.

CHRIST new born; perhaps because the Spaniards conquer'd that Vale on the Day of the Epiphany, as many pretend. The Arms of the City seem to favour both Opinions, the Escutcheon is charged with three Crowns Or, two and one, in a Field Azure, in chief a Star darting Beams, some add, in the Escutcheon, *Hercules's Pillars*, but in several Places they only stand without as Supporters, with these two Words, *Plus ultra*, and the two Letters J and K, to denote the Names of *Joanna* and *Charles*, being their Initials. Be that as it will, it is certain that Name was not given it on Account of its having been founded on the Day of the Epiphany, as Father *Féuillee* says, after *Garcilasso de la Vega*, and in the Year 1534; but on the 18th of January 1535, the Festival of *S. Peter's Chair*, as *Francisco Antonio de Montalvo* relates, in the Life of the Blessed *Toribio*, Bishop of *Lima*, printed by the Title of *El Sol del Nuevo Mundo*, or the Sun of the New World, by the Procurement of *D. J. Fr. de Valladolid*, School Master of the Metropolitan Church of that City, and Procurator General at *Rome*, for the Canonization of that Prelate. This Circumstance, and the Particular of the Names of the Commissioners appointed to choose a Place for the Situation of the City, and of the first Inhabitants, are strong Presumptions against *Garcilasso*. It is true, that *Herrera* concurs with him as to the Day of the Foundation; but he agrees with *Montalvo* as to the Year 1535.

This Epocha is also determin'd by the Reasons *Pizarro* had for building a City in the Place where *Lima* now stands; for the same *Herrera* tells us, that the *Adelantado*, or Lord Lieutenant *Don Pedro de Alvarado*, coming from *Guatemala* to *Pern*, with an Army, with a Design to make himself Master there, *Pizarro* came to make a Settlement in the Vale of *Lima*, near the Port of *Callao*, which is the best on the Coast, to obstruct his coming by Sea, whilst *Don Diego de Almagro* march'd to oppose him in the Province of *Quito*.

The *Spaniards*, who out of a commendable Emulation, are always attentive to the exterior Duties of Religion, before they erected any Structure, laid the Foundations of the Church, much about the midst of the City; then *Pizarro* laid down the Streets, distributed the Spaces for the Houses, by Quarters of 150 *Varas* or Spanish Yards, that is, 64 Fathoms square, as has been said of *Santiago*. Twelve *Spaniards*, who were the first Citizens under his Direction, began to build for themselves there; afterwards 30 Men from *San Galan*, and some others that were at *Xauxa*, came and join'd them, and made up, in all, the Number of 70 Inhabitants, who are considerably increas'd, for it is now the largest City in all *South America*.

The Distribution of the Plan is very beautiful, the Streets Plan of the City. are in a direct Line, and of a convenient Breadth. In the midst of the City is the *Plaza Real*, or Royal Square, in Great Square. which are to be found together all Things for the Publick Service. The East-side is taken up by the Cathedral, and the Archbishop's Palace; the North-side by the Viceroy's Palace; the West by the Council House, the Court of Justice, the Prison, and the Guard Chamber, with a Row of uniform Portico's: Lastly, the South-side is like the latter, adorn'd with Portico's and Shops.

In the midst of the Square is a Brass Fountain, adorn'd Fountain. with a Statue of Fame, and eight Lions of the same Metal, which are to spout Water all about. This Fountain is also encompass'd by four other little Basons at the Angles, very rich in Metal.

One Quarter from the Royal Square, on the North-side, River and Trenches. runs the River of *Lima*, which is almost always fordable, except in Summer, when the Rains fall on the Mountains, and the Snow thaws. There are Trenches drawn from it in several Places, to water the Fields, and the Streets and Gardens in the City, where they convey it much in the same manner as is done at *Santiago*, but in cover'd Passages.

- Bridge.* The Part of this River, which is cut off on the North-side, has a Communication with the main Body of the City, by means of a Stone-Bridge composed of five Arches, well enough built, in the Viccroyskip of *Montesclaros*. The Street it runs through leads directly to the Church of *S. Lazarus*, the Parish-Church of a Suburb call'd *Malambo*, and terminates near the *Alameda*, being a Walk of five Rows of Orange Trees, about 200 Fathoms long, the broadest of the Walks between them being adorn'd with three Stone Basons for Fountains. The Beauty of those Trees always green, the sweet Odor of the Flowers lasting almost all the Year, and the Concourse of the Caleshes daily resorting thither at the time of taking the Air, make that Walk a most delicious Place about Five in the Evening.
- Chappel.* About the middle of it is a Chappel, of the Invocation of *S. Liberata*, built in the Year 1711, in a Place where the Hosts of the Holy *Ciborium* of the Cathedral, which had been stolen and bury'd under a Tree, were found. That little Walk terminates at the Foot of the Mountain, where is a Monastery of the Observants reform'd by *S. Francis Solano*, a Native of *Paraguay*. Farther to the Eastward is another Mountain, contiguous with the former, on which is the Hermitage of *S. Christopher*, whose Name it bears, at the Foot whereof runs a Branch of the River, whose Pool drives several Corn-Mills, and one Powder-Mill, and is the common Bathing Place.
- Earthquakes.* The Earthquakes, which are very frequent in *Peru*, have much damaged this City, and daily make the Inhabitants uneasy. There was one in the Year 1678, on the 17th of *June*, which ruin'd a great Part of it, and particularly the Churches dedicated to the Blessed Virgin. *Montalvo*, who has made this Remark, in the Life of *S. Toribio*, says, it was as if God the Son had risen for his Mother: But that in the Year 1682, was so violent, that it almost entirely demolish'd the Place, insomuch that it was debated, whether they should not remove it to some better Situation. The Memory of that dreadful Earthquake is yearly

yearly revived there, on the 19th of *October*, by publick Prayers. If we may believe the publick Report, it was foretold by a Religious Man of the Order of the *Mercenarians*, who several Days before it, ran along the Streets like another *Jonah*, crying, *Do Penance*. In short, the Day came when it quaked after so extraordinary a manner, that every half Quarter of an Hour, it gave horrid Shocks, so that they reckoned above 200 in less than 24 Hours.

As dreadful as that Earthquake appears, there happen'd *Another.* one still more unparallel'd in the Year 1692, in the Province of *Quito*, at the Towns of *Ambata*, *Latacunga* and *Riobamba*. This shook the Earth in such manner, that it tore off great Pieces of it, which were seen to run entire three or four Leagues from the Place where they had been before, and thus to remove whole Fields, with the Trees and Houses standing; which occasion'd the most extraordinary Law-Suits that were ever heard of, brought to *Lima*, to decide to whom those Estates belong'd; he on one side alledging, they are within my Jurisdiction or Lordship; and the other pleading, I am upon my own Land.

The like had happen'd in the Year 1581, near *Chuquiago*, *Again.* or *La Paz*, as *Acosta* l. 3. c. 27. reports. The Borough called *Angoango*, inhabited by *Indians*, on a sudden fell to Ruin, and the Earth ran and spread over the Country, for the Space of a League and a half, as if it had been Water, or melted Wax, in such manner that it stopp'd and fill'd up a Lake, and so continued spread over that Country, *Psalms* 97. *The Hills melted like Wax at the Presence of the Lord.*

A much more amazing Earthquake happen'd in *Canada* *Another.* which began on the 5th of *February* 1663, and continued till *July* the same Year, occasioning incredible Alterations on the Surface of the Earth for above 400 Leagues through the Country. See the *Life of the Venerable Mother Mary of the Incarnation, an Ursuline Nun in New France, printed at Paris* 1677.

Conjectures  
concerning  
Earthquakes.

There is no reflecting upon such extraordinary Phenomenons, without being led by natural Curiosity to enquire into the Cause of them. That which Philosophers generally assign for Earthquakes, does not always appear satisfactory. They are ascribed to subterraneous Winds and Fires; but it is likely they ought rather to be look'd upon as an Effect of the Waters the Earth is inwardly moisten'd with, as living Bodies are by the Veins. There needs only digging, and the Truth of this Supposition almost every where appears; now the Waters may occasion Earthquakes after several Manners, either by dissolving the Salts scatter'd through the Earth, or by penetrating through porous Lands, mix'd with Stones, which they insensibly loosen, the Fall or Removal whereof must cause a Stroke or Shock, such as is felt in Earthquakes. Lastly, the Water penetrating some Sulphureous Bodies, must there cause a Fermentation, and then the Heat produces Winds and foul Exhalations, which infect the Air when they open the Earth, whence it is, that after great Earthquakes abundance of People die, as has been related at *Santiago* and *Lima*. The Facility of this Fermentation is proved by the Example of Lime, and by a curious Experiment of Monsieur *Lemery*, particulariz'd in the Memoirs of the Academy of Sciences, for the Year 1700.

Philosophical  
Experiment.

If after having temper'd equal Parts of Filings of Iron, and of Sulphur to a certain Quantity, as of 30 or 40 Pounds, with Water; that Amalgama, or Paste, be bury'd in the Ground a Foot deep, it will open and cast forth hot Vapours, and then Flames.

Why more  
Earthquakes  
near the Coast  
than up the  
Islands.

Now in *Peru* and *Chili* the Earth is all full of Mines of Salt, of Sulphur and of Metals; add to this, that there are burning Mountains, which calcine the Stones, and dilate the Sulphurs; Earthquakes must therefore be there very frequent, and particularly along the Sea Coasts, which are more water'd than towards the Top of the Ridge of Mountains call'd *la Cordillera*, which is very agreeable to Experience, for there are some Places where the said Earthquakes are very rare.



rare, as at *Cusco*, *Guamanga*, and elsewhere; for the same Reason that they are more frequent in *Italy* than about the *Alps*. In fine, it cannot but be own'd that the Water has a great Share in Earthquakes, when we see Fields run like melted Wax, and Lakes form'd on a sudden in Places that sink, because the Earth subsiding in the Water, obliges it to rise above it, if the Quantity be considerable, or else to glide like Sand, when the Base is dissolv'd and on an inclining Plan.

The Dread of Earthquakes has not obstructed their *Churches and Houses* building many fine Churches, and high Steeples at *Lima*. It is true, that most of the Arches are only of Timber, whitish, or else of Cane Work, but so well order'd, that unless told it, no Man can discern it. The Walls of the great Structures are of burnt Bricks, and those of the lesser of unburnt Bricks. The Houses have only a Ground Floor, in which there is sometimes one upper Story made of Canes, that it may be light; and lastly, they are all without Roofs, because it never rains there.

A Phenomenon so contrary to what we see in our Climates, immediately occasions two Questions.

The first, how the Earth can produce, without Rain?

The second, how comes it, that it never rains along the Coast, tho' it rains 15 or 20 Leagues from the Sea, up the Country?

To answer the first, I must declare, that this Want of Rain renders almost all the Country fruitless in the High-lands; there are only some Vales, through which Rivulets glide, coming down from the Mountains, where it rains and snows, which afford any Product, and which can consequently be inhabited; but in these Places the Earth is so fruitful, and on the other hand the Country is so thin peopled, that those Vales are sufficient, and supply all Things plentifully for the Subsistence of the Inhabitants. The ancient *Indians* were extraordinary industrious in conveying the Water of the Rivers to their Dwellings; there are still to be seen in many Places Aqueducts of Earth, and

Indian *Agua-  
dulce.*

and of dry Stones carry'd on and turn'd off very ingeniously along the Sides of Hills, with an infinite Number of Windings; which shews that those People, as unpolish'd as they were, very well understood the Art of leveling. As for what relates to the Hills along the Coast, there is Grass to be found on them in some Places, which are least expos'd to the Heat of the Sun, because the Clouds stoop down to their Tops in Winter, and sufficiently moisten them to furnish the necessary Juice for Plants.

*Why it never  
rains there.*

As to the second Question, *Zarate*, in his Conquest of *Peru*, has endeavour'd to give a Reason for the Perpetual Drought that is observ'd on that Coast: "Those, *says he*, who have carefully examin'd the Thing, pretend that the natural Cause of that Effect is a South-West Wind which prevails throughout the Year along that Coast, and in the Plain, and which blows so violently, that it carries away the Vapors which rise from the Earth, or from the Sea, before they can rise high enough in the Air to unite and form Drops of Water, which fall again in Rain. In short, *adds he*, it often happens, that looking from the Tops of the High Mountains, these Vapours are seen much below those that are on the said Tops, and make the Air in the Plain look thick and cloudy, tho' it be very clear and serene on the Mountains.

This way of Reasoning is nothing likely, for it is not true that the S. W. Winds obstruct the Rising of the Vapors, since there are Clouds agitated by that Wind seen at a very great Height. And tho' that should be granted, those Winds would not nevertheless hinder the Vapors forming themselves into Rain, since Experience manifestly shews us, in the *Alps*, that the low Clouds afford Rain, as well as the highest; the Sky often appears serene on the Top of the Mountain, when it rains most violently at the Foot thereof. So far from it, that they ought more naturally to yield it, because being lower they are heavier, and consequently compos'd of more bulky Drops of Rain than the highest Clouds.

I fancy I discern a better Reason, grounded on the different Degrees of Heat on the Coast, and in the Inland. It is known by Experience, that the Heat the Sun imparts to the Earth, dissolves into Rain, and attracts the Clouds the more, by how much it is more violently heated. I will explain how that Attraction is made: It is observ'd in *France*, that it rains as much, that is, that there falls as much Water, and even more, during the Months of *July* and *August*, as during the other Months of the Year, tho' it rains but very seldom, because the Drops of Water are then much larger than in Winter. This Observation is supported by the great Store of Rain that falls in the Torrid Zone, during some Months in the Year, after the Earth has been heated by the less oblique Rays. Now, it is known that the inner Part of *Peru*, which is almost all of it in that Zone, is very hot in the Valleys, which receive during the whole Day almost perpendicular Rays, whose Force is still increas'd by the many dry Rocks which encompass them, and reflect those Rays every way; and lastly, that the said Heat is not temper'd by the Winds. It is farther known, that the high Mountains call'd *La Cordillera* and *Lor Ander*, which are almost continually cover'd with Snow, make the Country extremely cold in some Places, so that in a very small Distance the two contrary Extremes are to be found.

The Sun therefore, by his Presence, causes a violent Dilatation and a scorching Heat in the Valleys, during the Day, that is, one half of the Time; and during the Night, or the other Half, the neighbouring Snows suddenly cool the Air, which condenses a new. To this Vicissitude of Condensation and Rarefaction is certainly to be assign'd, as to the first Principle, the Inequality of Weather that is observ'd at *Cusco*, at *Puna*, *La Paz*, and other Places, where they almost daily are sensible of the Changeableness of the Weather, of Thunder, Rain, Lightning; of Fair and Cloudy Weathers; of Heat and Cold; but in other Places it is hot for a long

Time,

Time, without any Interruption, and then the Rains take their Turn.

It is not so along the Coast, where the S. W. and S. S. W. Winds blow regularly, which coming from the cold Climates of the South Pole, continually refresh the Air, and constantly keep it almost in the same Degree of Condensation. Much more must they bring thither Salt Particles, which they gather from the Sea Fogs, wherewith the Air must be fill'd and thicken'd much, as we conceive Brine is by the Salt it contains. That Air therefore has more Strength to support the Clouds, and is not hot enough, nor in sufficient Motion to agitate the Particles, and consequently to gather the little Drops of Water, and form some greater than the Bulk of the Air to which they answer; and tho' those Clouds draw very near the Earth during the Season when they are least attracted by the Sun, yet they do not dissolve into Rain; thus at *Lima* the Weather is almost continually close, and it never rains.

If it were now requisite to shew why the hottest Countries attract the Rain, I could make use of the Conjectures of some modern Philosophers, \* who are of Opinion, that the Clouds are frozen Vapours, or a Sort of very loose Ice, like Snow. According to that Notion, it is evident, that when the Heat of the Earth sufficiently heats the Air, to rise to the Height of the Clouds, they must then thaw and fall in Rain; but that way of Reasoning, which I often think very true, is not so always, as I can affirm upon my own Experience, having been upon high Mountains, where at the same time that I saw Clouds flying both above and below me, I was myself encompass'd with others between them, which in Truth I thought very cold, but in other respects to differ in nothing from the Fogs we see sweep along the Earth. It is therefore upon no solid Ground that they distinguish those Clouds from the Fogs.

Be that as it will, Heat may also attract Rain, by giving the Particles of the Air a Spiral Motion, which may gather many little Drops of Water into one larger Drop. This Motion

\* Regis.

Motion is easy to conceive, by that which is observ'd in the Current of Rivers, or, if you please, by that of a Mathematical Spindle; if the Sun attracts Vapours after that Manner, it is not to be admired that the Earth heated should attract the Clouds.

In fine, I could farther ground this Attraction on a Piece of Experience, which shews us, that Fire to subsist requires a Flux of Air. If a burning Coal be put into a Bottle, and it be close stopp'd, it is immediately quench'd. Thus reasoning from the greater to the lesser, a Body much heated may be compared to a Coal, and it may be concluded that the said Heat cannot subsist without a Flux, or Passage of the Air about it, which being more condens'd, pulhes on and draws towards the Fire, as we see the outward Air enter into a Chamber through little Holes, with more Rapidity when it is heated, than when there is no Fire in it.

I leave it to Philosophers to give more convincing Reasons for that Drought; it is enough for a Traveler, in declaring of Facts, slightly to explain them, to credit what he relates, and prepare the Reader for what he says that is extraordinary. Thus because it never rains at *Lima*, the Houses are only Houses cover'd with a single Mat laid flat, with the Thickness of a ver'd with Mat. Finger of Ashes on it, to suck up the Moisture of the Fogs; and the beautifullest are built only with unburnt Bricks, that are made of Clay, work'd up with a little Grass, and dry'd in the Sun, which nevertheless lasts Ages, because the Rain never washes it away.

The Walls of the City, which ought to be an everlasting Work, are no otherwise built; they are between 18 and 25 Foot high, and nine in Thickness at the Gordon; so that, in all the Compass of the Town, there is no one Place broad enough to mount a Cannon, which makes me believe, that they were built only to oppose any Attempts of the *Indians*. The Wall is flank'd with Bastions, whose Flank is of about 15 Fathoms perpendicular with the Curtin, and the Face of about 30 Fathoms, which make the Angle of the Epaulé of 130 Degrees, which

occasions such a schanz Defence, that two Thirds of the Curtin are upon a second Flank; and the flank'd Angles are often too acute. Those Curtins being about 80 Fathoms in Length, the great Line of Defence is of about 110: Besides this, there is neither Ditch nor Outworks. These Fortifications were made about the Year 1685, in the Viceroyship of the Duke *de la Palata*, by a *Flemish* Priest, whose Name was *Dón John Ramond*.

The Number of *Spanish* Families in *Lima* may make up about 8 or 9000 Whites; the rest are only *Mestizo's*, *Mulatto's*, Blacks, and some *Indians*; tho' in the whole, there are about 25, or 30000 Souls, including the Friers and Nuns, who take up at least a Quarter of the City.

As in the Cities of *Europe* we reckon the Coaches to denote their Magnificence, so at *Lima* they reckon 4000 Calashes, the common Carriage for Gentry in that Country, drawn by Mules. But to give some Idea of the Wealth of that City, it will suffice to relate what Treasure the Merchants there expos'd about the Year 1682, when the Duke *de la Palata* made his Entry: Coming to take Possession of the Place, they caus'd the Streets, call'd *de la Merced*, or of the *Mercenarians*, and *de los Mercaderes*, or of the Merchants, extending through two of the Quarters, and through which he was to pass to the Royal Square, where the Palace is, to be paved with Ingots of Silver, that had paid the Fifth to the King, and generally weigh about 200 Marks, of eight Ounces each, between 12 and 15 Inches long, four or five in Breadth, and two or three in Thickness, which might amount to the Sum of 80 Millions of Crowns, and 320 Millions of Livres *French* Money, as it was in the Year 1715. It is true, that *Lima* is in some Sort the Repository of the Treasures of *Peru*, whose Capital it is. It was computed some Years ago, that above six Millions of Crowns were expended there. Much must be abated at present, since the *French* Trade has carry'd thither the Commodities of *Europe* at an easy rate, and since the Trade they have drove at *Arica*, *Hilo* and *Pisco*, has

Immense  
Wealth.

has diverted the Plate that came formerly to *Lima*; which is the Reason that the City is now poor, to what it formerly was.

Both Men and Women are equally inclined to be costly *Costly Habits* in their Dress; the Women not satisfy'd with the Expence of the richest Silks, adorn them, after their Manner, with a prodigious Quantity of Lace, and are insatiable as to Pearls and Jewels, for Bracelets, Pendants and other Ornaments; the Fashion whereof, which amounts to very much, ruins the Husbands and the Gallants. We saw Ladies, who had about them above the Value of 60000 Pieces of Eight in Jewels: They are generally beautiful enough, of a sprightly Mien, and more engaging than in other Places; and perhaps one part of their Beauty is owing to the Toils of the *Mulattar*, *Blacks*, *Indians*, and other hideous Faces, which are the most numerous throughout the Country.

The City of *Lima* is the usual Residence of the Viceroy *Viceroy* of *Peru*, who is as absolute as the King himself in the Courts of *Lima*, *Chuquisaca*, *Quito*, *Panama*, *Chili*, and *Tierra Firme*, as Governor and Captain-General of all the Kingdoms and Provinces of that Part of the new World, as is express'd in his Titles. His Allowance is 40000 Pieces of Eight yearly, without taking Notice of his extraordinary Perquisites; as when he goes a Progress into any Provinces, he is allow'd 10000 Pieces of Eight, and 3000 for going only to *Callao*, which is but two Leagues from *Lima*. He has the Nomination of above a hundred *Corregidores*, or supreme Magistrates of considerable Places; and, in short, he has the Disposal of all Triennial Employments, both Civil and Military.

It is to be observ'd, that most Employments are given, or sold only for a limited Time.

F. f. 2 The

The same Person has those two Titles, which are distinguish'd in the pretended Manuscript of Oaxmelin. See the History of the Buccaneers.

## A Voyage to

The Viceroy's and Presidents generally hold theirs seven Years; some *Corregidores* and Governors have theirs for five, and the greater Number but for three. It is easy to see into the Design of that Regulation, which is, doubtless, to prevent their having Time to gain Creatures, and form Parties against a King, who is so remote from them, that it requires Years to receive his Orders; but it must also be granted, that this Policy is attended with many inevitable Inconveniences, which, in my Opinion, are the main Cause of the ill Government of the Colony, and of the little Profit it affords the King of *Spain*; for the Officers look upon the Time their Employments last as a Jubilee, which is to come but once in their Lives; at the End whereof they will be laugh'd at, if they have not made their Fortune: And as it is hard not to be overcome by the Temptation of privately conniving for Money at certain Abuses, which by long Use are become Customs, the honestest Persons follow the Steps of their Predecessors, being possess'd of the Opinion, that howsoever they behave themselves, they shall not perhaps miss of being charged with Mal Administration; the only Means to clear themselves of which, is to appease their Judges with Presents, giving them Part of what they have wrong'd the King and the Subjects of. I bring this Reflexion from its Original, and do not lay it down here as a Conjecture. *Munera, crede mihi, placant hominesque Deosque.* Believe me, Gifts appease both Men and Gods.

Bribery.

Hence it is that so many Masses of Silver are convey'd from the Mines cross long Countries, and are at last convey'd aboard the Ships trading along the Coast, without paying the Fifth to the King, because the Merchants pay the Governor so much *per Cent.* the *Corregidor*, or supreme Magistrate, pays the *Juez de Descamino*, or Judge of Concealments or Confiscations, and he perhaps the Viceroy's Officers.

For this Reason scarce any one of them takes to Heart the publick Good, being convinced, that he shall soon be out of Place, and out of Power to continue the good Order



der he shall establish, and which his Successor will perhaps overthrow as soon as he is in the Post.

In short, this is the Cause why the Orders from the Court of Spain are not at all, or very ill put in Execution: They are satisfy'd with only publishing them for Formality; \* the Fear of losing an Employment for Life is no Motive to them; they are sure to lose it in a short Time; and besides, they come off at an easy rate with the Viceroy, who reasons exactly as they do, tho' he has a Sovereign Authority and Power in his Hands.

\* Se obedencia orden,  
y no se cumple.  
The Order is obey'd, but not executed.

His usual Guard is compos'd of three Parcels; being a Company of 100 Halbardiers, a Troop of 100 Horse, and a Company of 100 Foot; the two last are paid by the King, and the Halbardiers are maintain'd out of a Fund left by a Lady of Lima, who was extraordinary rich. There is another Company of 50 select Persons, all Men of Distinction, who walk by his Side when he makes his Entry.

There is a Royal Chappel in his Palace, serv'd by six Chaplains, a Sacristan, and a Choir of Musick, pay'd by the King.

The Garrison of Lima consists only of the Militia of the Inhabitants, who have no Pay from the King, except the General Officers, and the Sergeants of the Foot-Companies: Whereof these are the Particulars.

Fourteen Companies of Spanish Infantry of the Inhabitants.

Seven Companies of the Corporation of the Commerce; who have more than the former; a Major, and two Aids de Camp.

Eight Companies of Indians, Natives of Lima, who besides the usual Officers, have a Colonel, a Major, and an Adjutant.

Six Companies of Mulatto's and free Blacks, who have a Major, two Adjutants, and a Lieutenant-General.

Each of the above-mention'd Companies consists of 100 Men, and has no other Officers, but a Captain, an Ensign, and a Sergeant.

Ten

Horse.

Ten Troops of Spanish Horse, of 50 Men each; six whereof are of the City, and four of the Neighbouring Country-Houses, and adjacent Farms.

Each Troop has a Captain, a Lieutenant, and a Cornet.

*General Officers in the King's Pay.*

The Captain-General and Viceroy, Pieces of Eight per Annum. 40000

The Governor General 7000

The Lieutenant General of the Horse 1500

The Commissary General of the Horse 1500

The Lieutenant to the Lieutenant General 1200

The Lieutenant to the Captain General 1200

*Other Officers appointed by the Viceroy.*

The Captain of the Guard Chamber 1200

A Lieutenant of the Artillery 1200

Two Adjutants of the Artillery, each 300

Four Master Gunners, each 340

A chief Armourer 500

Four Armourers, each 600

A Master Carpenter 1000

It is reported, that in case of need, the Viceroy can raise 100000 Foot and 20000 Horse; throughout the whole Extent of the Kingdom; but it is certain he could not arm the 5th Part of them, as I have been inform'd by Men who have travelled some of the Inland Parts of Peru.

Under the Viceroy's Authority, the Government of the Kingdom depends on that of the Royal Court, where he presides for matters of Moment. That Court, which may in some Measure be compared to a French Parliament, is composed of 16 *Oidores*, that is, Judges or Assessors; four *Alcaldes de Corte*, or Justices of the King's Household, two *Fiscales*, or Attorneys General, an *Alquazil Major*, or chief Serjeant, and a General Protector of the *Indians*. Each of those

those Persons in the said Employments has 3000 Pieces of Eight, and 13 Royals Salary; but the *Oidores*, or Judges, have moreover other Allowances belonging to the peculiar Courts where they are employ'd. That Body has also titular Officers, as Advocates, Solicitors, Notaries, Sergeants, &c.

The Royal Court is subdivided into a Court of Justice, <sup>Several</sup> a Criminal Court, a Court of Accounts, and two Courts <sup>Courts.</sup> of the Treasury, or Exchequer, one of which is entrusted with the Revenues which rich *Indians* have left at their Death to relieve the Wants of the Poor of their Nation. Lastly, it includes the Chancery, which is composed of only one *Oidor*, and one Chancellor, who has that Title given him with a very small Salary, because the Great Chancellor is always in Spain.

The *Cabildo*, or Council of the City, is next to the <sup>City Council,</sup> Royal Court. There are more Regidores, or Aldermen, belonging to it, than in other Towns.

There is also an *Alguazil Mayor*, or chief Sergeant of the City, for Military Affairs, and a great Provost, call'd *Alcalde de la Hermandad*, who has Power of Life and Death in the open Country.

The Court of the Royal Treasury is establish'd for the <sup>Treasury,</sup> King's Revenues, as the Fifth of the Silver taken out of the Mines; the Duty of *Alcavala*, being 4 per Cent. on all Sorts of Commodities and Grain, and other Impositions, which are but few in that Colony. It has Judges, Tellers, Secretaries, &c.

There is also a Court of the Mint, which has its <sup>Mint,</sup> Treasurers, Comptrollers, Directors, Keepers, Clerks, &c. as also an *Oidor*, or Judge, who has a Salary independent of that of the Royal Court.

The Court of the Commerce is the Consularship, where <sup>Consularship,</sup> a Prior and two Consuls preside, who are chosen from among the Merchants, who best understand Trade.

And, to the end that nothing may be wanting to that <sup>Spiritual</sup> City, which may contribute towards preserving of good <sup>Courts.</sup> Order,

Order, and making it flourish, several Courts of Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction have been erected in it.

The Arch-  
Bishop's.

The first is the Archbishop's Court, composed of the Chapter of the Cathedral, and the Officiality; its Officers are, a Fiscal, or Attorney, a Solicitor, a Sergeant, and Notaries.

Inquisition.

The second, and most dreadful of all Courts, is that of the Inquisition, whose Name alone gives a Terror every where, because, 1<sup>st</sup>, The Informer is reckon'd as a Witness: 2<sup>dly</sup>, The Accused have no Knowledge given them of their Accusers: 3<sup>dly</sup>, There is no Confronting of Witnesses; so that innocent Persons are daily taken up, whose only Crime is, that there are Persons, whose Interest it is to ruin them. However, they say at *Lima*, that there is no Cause to complain of the Inquisition, perhaps because the Viceroy and the Archbishops are at the Head of that Body.

The Inquisition was settled at *Lima* in the Year 1569; with all the Ministers, Counsellors, Qualificators, *Familiars*, Secretaries, and chief Sergeants, as it is in *Spain*. It has three superiour Judges, who have each 3000 Pieces of Eight Salary: Their Jurisdiction extends throughout all the *Spanish South America*.

Crossade.

The third Spiritual Court is that of the Crossade, which is in some Manner a Part of the Royal Court, because there belongs to it an *Oidor*, or Judge of the Court of Justice. It was erected at *Lima*, in the Year 1603, under the Direction of a Commissary-General, who keeps his Court in his own House, where he judges, with the Assistance of a Judge Conservator, a Secretary, a Comptroller, a Treasurer, and other Officers, requisite for the Distribution of the Bulls, and Examination of the Jubilee and Indulgences. His Salary is only 1000 Pieces of Eight, which is too much for so useles an Employment.

Court for  
Wills.

Lastly, There is a fourth Court for the last Wills and Testaments of the Dead, which calls to account Executors and

and Administrators, and takes Care of Chappelanies and their Foundations, for which it has several Officers.

In order to furnish so many Courts with proper Persons, *University* the Emperor *Charles V.* in the Year 1545, founded an University at *Lima*, under the Title of *S. Mark*, and granted it several Privileges, which were confirm'd by Pope *Paul III.* and *Pius V.* who in 1572 incorporated it into that of *Salamanca*; that it might enjoy the same Privileges and Immunities: It is govern'd by a Rector, who is chosen yearly; they reckon in it about 180 Doctors of Divinity, Civil and Canon Law, Physick and Philosophy, and generally near 2000 Scholars. Some proceed thence able enough in the Scholastick and Tricking Part, but very few in the Positive.

There are in the University three Royal Colleges, with *Colleges* 20 Professorships, which have good Revenues. The first was founded by *Don Francisco de Toledo*, Viceroy of *Peru*, under the Invocation of *S. Philip* and *S. Mark*. The second by the Viceroy *Don Martin Henriquez*, for the Entertainment of 80 Collegians, or Students in Humanity, Civil Law and Divinity, the Jesuites are Rectors and Professors in it; and it is call'd *S. Martin*. The third by the Archbishop *Don Toribio Alphonso Mongrovejo*, under the Title of *S. Toribio*, Bishop, for the Maintenance of 80 Collegians, who serve in the Choir of the Cathedral. Their Habit is gray, with a Purple Welt double behind; they study Ecclesiastical Literature under a Priest, who is their Rector. The College also maintains six Boys for the Choir, under the Direction of the Master of the Chappel, and of the Vicar or SubDeacon, who resides there. The College has a Revenue of ab ove 14000 Pieces of Eight.

The Chapter of the Cathedral is composed of a Dean, *Chapter* an Archdeacon, a Chanter, a School-master, a Treasurer, and 10 Canons; one of which Number has been retrench'd, to give his Revenue to the Inquisition. Each of those Dignitaries has 7000, the Canons 5000, the six *Racioneros*, or Prebendaries, 3000; and the 30 Chaplains each 600 Pieces

of Eight a Year, without reckoning the Musicians and Singing-Boys.

*Cathedral.*

This Church, which was the first Structure in *Lima*, was by *Francis Pizarro* put under the Invocation of the *Assumption*; but *Pope Paul III.* having made it a Cathedral in the Year 1541, alter'd it to that of *S. John the Evangelist*, to distinguish it from that of *Cuzco*, which had that Name before. It was Suffragan to *Sevil* till the Year 1546, when the same Pope made it Metropolitan; and the Suffragans to it are the Bishopricks of *Panama*, *Quito*, *Truxillo*, *Guamanga*, *Arequipa*, *Cusco*, *Santiago*, and *La Conception of Chili*.

*Archbishop.*

The first Archbishop was *Don Fray Jeronimo de Loaysa*, a Dominican. He assembled two Provincial Synods; the first on the 4th of *October* 1551, at which never a Suffragan was present, but only the Deputies of the Bishops of *Panama*, *Quito*, and *Cusco*: The second was open'd the 2d of *March* 1567; the Bishops of *La Plata*, *Quito*, and *La Imperial*, were present at it, with the Deputies of the other Chapters. He rebuilt the Church then ruin'd, and cover'd it with Mangrove Timber.

The 3d Archbishop, *Don Toribio*, is reckon'd a Saint.

The 9th, *Don Melchor de Linnan y Cisneros*, upon the Death of the Marquis de *Malagon*, was appointed Viceroy, Governor, and Captain General of the Provinces of *Peru*: He was the first in whom those two Dignities were united, which indeed do not seem compatible in the same Person.

*Eight Parishes.*

The City of *Lima* contains eight Parishes. The first is the Cathedral, which has four Curates and two Vicars, which is contrary to the Canon Law, whereby only one Curate is assign'd to a Church, because one Body is to have but one Head. The Church is handsome enough, well built, and has three equal Isles. In it is preserv'd a Piece of the Cross of *CHRIST*.

The second is that of *S. Anne*, which has two Curates and one Vicar.

The

The third *S. Sebastian*, which has also two.  
 The fourth *S. Marcellus*, one Curate.  
 The fifth *S. Lazarus*, one Curate, Vicar of the Cathedral.

The sixth *Our Lady of Atocha*, annex'd to, and dependent on the Cathedral; they call it *Los Huérfanos*, or the Orphans.

The seventh is *El Cercado*, or the Inclosure, which was the Parish Church to an *Indian* Suburb that has been brought into the City since it was wall'd in; the *Jesuites* are its Curates.

The eighth has been added of late Years, and is call'd *San Salvador*, or *S. Saviour*.

There are several Hospitals for the Sick and Poor of the City. The first, call'd *S. Andrew*, is a Royal Foundation for the *Spaniards*, that is, the Whites: It is serv'd by the Merchants and four Priests.

That of *San Diego*, or *S. James*, is founded for those who are Convalescents, or upon Recovery, after having been in that of *S. Andrew*; they are serv'd by the Brothers of *S. John of God*.

That of *S. Peter* was founded only for Priests by the Archbishop *Toribio* above-mention'd.

That of the Holy Ghost, for Seafaring Men, is maintain'd by the Alms and Contributions collect'd of Trading Vessels.

That of *S. Bartholomew* was founded for the Blacks by Father *Bartholomew de Vadillo*.

In that of *S. Lazarus* they take Care of Lepers, and such as have the Venereal Distemper. It is a Royal Foundation, and serves also for the Falling Sickness and Mad Folks.

There is a House for Foundlings, adjoining to *Our Lady of Atocha*, call'd *Los Huérfanos*, or the Orphans.

The Hospital of *S. Cosmas* and *S. Damianus*, was founded by the Inhabitants of *Lima*, for *Spanish* Women.

That of *S. Anne* was founded by *Don Jeronymo de Loaysa*, the first Archbishop for the *Indians*; the King now de-frays the Charge of it,

There is one for the *Incurable*, serv'd by the *Bethlebe-mites*.

Another for the *Convalescent*, or recovering *Indians*, without the City, where those who come from *S. Anne* and other Hospitals are receiv'd.

There are also Officers to dispose of the Foundations made by the richest *Indians*, for the Poor of their Nation, as has been said.

Lastly, there is one founded by a Priest, for convalescent, or recovering Priests.

Charity.

Besides the Hospitals for the Sick, there is a House of *Charity*, in the Square of the Inquisition, for poor Women. There young Maids are marry'd or made Nuns.

Portions for Maids.

In the College of *Santa Cruz, de las Ninas*, or the Holy Cross of the Girls, they bring up a Number of Foundling Girls, to whom the Inquisitors give Portions, when they marry.

A Priest has also left a Foundation of above 600000 Pieces of Eight, under the Direction of the Dean of the Cathedral, and the Prior of *S. Dominick*, to marry 20 Maids, and give them 500 Pieces of Eight each.

The Brotherhood of *Conception* marries 40, after the Rate of 450 Pieces of Eight each.

There is a Foundation under the Title of *Our Lady of Cocharcas*, for the Poor Daughters of *Caciques*, and a College for breeding their Sons, where they have all sorts of Masters.

Monasteries.

The Monastical State, which has overspread all *Europe*, has also extended beyond the vast Seas into the remotest Colonies, where it fills the farthest Corners inhabited by Christians; but at *Lima* particularly there are Legions of Friers, whose Monasteries have taken up the finest and greatest Part of the City.

The



The *Dominicans* have four Monasteries there; the chief Dominicans is that of the *Rosary*; next the *Recollection of the Magdalen*; *S. Thomas of Aquin*, where their Schools are, and *S. Rose of Lima*.

The *Franciscans* have four, *viz.* that of *JESUS*, or Franciscans the Great Monastery, call'd also *S. Francis*, contains 700 Men, as well Friars, as Servants, and takes up the Space of four Quarters, being the finest in the City. The second is the *Recollection of S. Mary of the Angels*, or *Guadalupe*; the third is the College of *S. Bonaventure*; and the fourth the Barefoot Friars of *S. James*.

The *Augustines* have also four, which contain above 500 Augustines Friars, and are, *S. Augustin*, *Our Lady of Capacavana*, the College of *S. Ildesonsus*, and the Noviciate, which is without the City, or the Reform of *Our Lady of Guindance*.

The Order of the *Mercenarians* has three, *viz.* the *Mer-* Mercenarians *Recollection of our Lady of Bethlehem*; and the College of *S. Peter Nolascus*.

The *Jesuites* have five, *viz.* *S. Paul*, *S. Martin*, the *No-* Jesuites *viciate*, or *S. Anthony*; the *Cercado*, or Inclosure, by the Name of *S. James*, where they are Curates; and *Los Desamparados*, that is, the Forsaken, or *Our Lady of Sorrow*, which is their profess'd House.

The *Benedictines* have that of *Our Lady of Mont-* Benedictines *ferrat*.

The *Minims* have lately been in Possession of the Church Minims of *Our Lady of Succour*, which also bears the Name of *S. Francis of Paula*, and a Chappel of *Our Lady of Victory*, where the great Monastery was, which is call'd by the Name of their *Patriarch*.

The *Brothers of S. John of God*, have the Direction of *S. John of* S. John of God *God* the Hospital of *S. James*.

The *Bethlehemites* have two, that of the *Incurable*, and Bethlehemites *Our Lady of Mountcarmel*, which is without the City. These Friars came lately from the Town of *Guatemala*, in the Kingdom of *Mexico*, where the Venerable Brother *Peter*

*Peter Joseph, de Betancourt* \* founded them to serve the Poor. Pope Innocent XI. approved of the Institution, in the Year 1697. They have already Nine Monasteries in Peru. Those Friars, tho' to outward Appearance very simple, are reckoned refined Politicians, as may be judg'd by the Name of the Quintessence of Carmelites and Jesuites, given them by the People. They are Brothers. They choose for their Chaplain a Secular Priest, whom they keep in their House at a certain Allowance; but he has no Vote among them. They are clad like the Capucins, excepting that under their Beard they have a Bib, a quarter of a Yard long, ending in a Point. Their Founder, as those good Friars give out, had, during Eleven Years, the Company of our Saviour visibly carrying his Cross. The other Apparitions and Revelations they place to his Account, and which they publish by Word of Mouth, and by Pictures, are of the same Reputation.

Nuns,

There are somewhat fewer Nuns at Lima, than Friars; there are only twelve Monasteries of them. 1. That of the Incarnation of Regular Canonesses of S. Augustin. 2. The Conception of the same Order. 3. The Trinity of the Order of S. Bernard. 4. S. Joseph of the Conception, more austere than the other, contains the Barefoot Nuns of the Order of S. Augustin. 5. S. Clare, founded by the Archbishop Toribio, preserves the Heart of its Founder, and contains above 300 Franciscan Nuns. 6. S. Katharine of Siena, of the Order of S. Dominick. 7. S. Rose of S. Mary, of the same Order. 8. That they call *del Prado*, or of the Meadow, of Recolet Augustins. 9. S. Teresa, of Carmelites. 10. S. Rose of Viterbo. 11. The Trinitarians. 12. The JESUS-Mary of Capuchins, erected in 1713, by four Nuns that came from Spain, by the way of Buenos Ayres, whom

\* Perhaps he was a Descendant of a French Gentleman named Betancourt, who having sate a young Woman, fled to the Island of Madera, where he first planted a Christian Colony. F. du Tertre, p. 59. 1691. He in the Year 1642, saw a Franciscan in that Island, who said he was of that Family.

whom we mention'd before. In short, they reckon there are above 4000 Nuns, among which there are four or five Monasteries of very regular Religious Women.

We might here add a House founded by the Archbishop *This is all a Toribio*, for Women divorced. It is incredible to what an *gross Abuse, Excess* that Abuse has been carry'd; there are People daily *for such* unmarried, with as much Ease as if Matrimony were nothing but a civil Contract, upon bare Complaints of *Abuse, in Spain and the Indies, or only to separate from Bed and Board, such as cannot live together in Peace.* Understanding, Want of Health or Satisfaction, and what is still more amazing, they afterwards marry others.

This Abuse was brought them from *Spain*. at the very Time of the Settling of this Colony. The Intercourse they had long had with the *Moors* had made it so common, that Cardinal *Ximenes* thought himself obliged to apply some Remedy to it; and because the Pretence of Spiritual Affinity very often authorized Divorees, the Council of *Toledo*, which he assembled in the Year 1497, ordain'd, that at Christenings Care should be taken to write down the Names of the Godfathers and Godmothers, that the Truth might be known.

The Penitent Women have also a Place of Retreat, *Penitent Women.* which I do not think is very full, because of the little Scruple they make in that Country of Libertinism, and the little Care that is taken to curb it. They call them *las Amparadas de la Concepcion*, or the Protected of the Conception.

It may seem that by the great Number of Monasteries and Religious Houses of both Sexes, we may imagine *Lima* to be a Place much addicted to Devotion; but that Outside is far from being made good by those who live in them; for most of the Friars lead such a licentious Life there, that even the Superiors and Provincials draw from the Monasteries considerable Sums of Money to defray the Expences of a worldly Life, and sometimes of such open Lewdness, that they make no Difficulty to own the Children that are got, and to keep about them those undeniable Proofs of their disorderly Life, to whom they often leave

as an Inheritance the Habit they are clad in, which sometimes extends beyond one Generation: If I may believe what has been told me on the Spot.

The Nuns, except three or four Monasteries, have also but an Appearance of Regularity, which they only owe to the Inclosure; for instead of living in Community and Poverty according to their Vow, they live each apart at their own Cost, with a great Retinue of Black and Mulatta Women Slaves and Servants, whom they make subservient to the Gallantries they have at the Grates.

We cannot speak of the Lives of both Sexes without applying to them the Words of S. Paul, 1 Cor. vi. 15. *Shall I then take the Members of Christ, and make them the Members of an Harlot?*

By the Example of those People, who by their Example ought to edify the Laity, it is easy to guess at the prevailing Passion of that Country. Its Fruitfulness, the Plenty of all Things, and the sedate Tranquillity they perpetually enjoy there, do not a little contribute to the amorous Temper which reigns there. They are never sensible of any intemperate Air, which always preserves a just Mean, between the Cold of the Night and the Heat of the Day. The Clouds there generally cover the Sky to preserve that happy Climate from the Rays the Sun would dart down perpendicularly; and those Clouds never dissolve into Rain to obstruct taking the Air, or the Pleasures of Life; they only sometimes stoop down in Fogs, to cool the Surface of the Earth, so that they are always there sure what Weather it will be the next Day; and if the Pleasure of living continually in an Air of an equal Temper, were not interrupted by the frequent Earthquakes, I do not think there is a fitter Place to give us an Idea of the Terrestrial Paradise; for the Soil is also Fertile in all sorts of Fruits.

Various  
Fruits.

Besides those which have been transported thither from Europe, as Pears, Apples, Figs, Grapes, Olives, &c. there are those of the Caribbee Islands, as *Ananas, Guayavas, Patatas,*

*Yatai*, *Bananas*, Melons and Watermelons, besides others peculiar to *Pera*. The most valu'd of the last Sort are the *Chirimoyas*, resembling in small the *Ananas* and Pine Apples, being full of a white solid Substance, mix'd with Seeds as big as Kidney Beans; the Leaf is somewhat like that of the Mulberry Tree, and the Wood resembles that of the Hazle.

The *Granadillas* are a Sort of Pomgranates, full of black-<sup>Granadillas.</sup>ish Kernels, swimming in a Viscous Substance, of the Colour of the White of an Egg, very cooling, and of an agreeable Taste. The Leaves are somewhat like those of the Lime Tree, and the Imagination of the *Spaniards* forms in the Flowers all the Instruments of the Passion. Father *Peuillée*, who has drawn this Fruit, calls it *Granadilla Pomifera Tillie folio*.

Those they call *Higas de Tuna*, or *Tuna Figs*, are the <sup>Higas de Tuna.</sup> Fruit of the Raquette, or Euphorbium, as big as a green Walnut, cover'd with Points, almost as sharp as those of the outward Rind of the Chestnut; they are good and wholesome. The *Lucumas*, *Pacayas*, *Pepinos*, *Ciruelas*, Plums like *Fujubs*, are there very plentiful.

There is this Conveniency at *Lima*, that there is Fruit <sup>Odd Seasons.</sup> all the Year long, because as soon as they begin to fall in the Plain, they are ripe on the neighbouring Hills. This is also to be observ'd, that the Seasons should be so different in the same Latitude, that those which agree to the Southern Latitudes, should be there at the time of those of the Northern Latitude.

Several Persons have ask'd me, how that could come to pass, and why that Torrid Zone, which ancient Philosophers, and even such great Men as *S. Augustin* and *S. Thomas*, thought to be uninhabitable by reason of the excessive Heat, should be so in several Places, thro' intolerable Cold, tho' directly under the Sun.

It is not to be required of a Traveler to shew Reasons for <sup>Reasons for the same.</sup> the Phanonemons he speaks of; and I would have refer'd the Readers who are not vers'd in Natural Philosophy, to Fa-

ther *du Tertre's* History of the *Caribbee* Islands; if the three Reasons he assigns for the Temperature of that Zone, could be apply'd to the Country I am speaking of; but there are two of them which do not suit it; for the Regular or Trade Winds do not prevail throughout all the Zone, and the Inlands of South *America* are not cool'd by the Neighbourhood of the Sea.

There is therefore no general Reason, but what is grounded on the Equality of Time, the Presence and the Absence of the Sun, and the Obliquity of his Rays for some Hours, at his Rising and Setting; but tho' it may prove much, it will not hold for *Lima*, if we compare the little Heat there is there, with that which is felt at *Bahia de todos os Santos*, which is almost under the same Parallel, and on the Sea Shore. It must therefore be added, that the Neighbourhood of the Mountains which cross *Peru*, contributes much towards tempering of the Air that is there breath'd.

But it is farther urged, why those Mountains are as cold as these in our Climates. To that I answer, that besides the general Reasons which may be assign'd, the Situation of the Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*, or the *Andes*, is another Cause; for they generally run North and South, whence it follows:

*See Plate XX.*

1. That if there are Rocks R, standing perpendicular like a Wall, it is evident that their Faces exposed to the East, or West, would not receive the Sun for above six Hours, even tho' they were in the Middle of a Plain; and if any Mountain happens to stand before them, they will receive much less, that is, less than half the Rays the Plain receives, and about only the fourth Part of the natural Day.

2. But to make a Supposition on which to ground a general Argument, we will allow the Inclination, or Bent of our Mountains an Angle of 45 Degrees, which may be look'd upon as an exact Mean between those which are steeper and those that have an easter Ascent. It will then appear, that those which are not blinded by other Mountains,

rains, as A C may be, must be lighted three Quarters of the Day; but we know, that from Sun-rising till Nine of the Clock, the Obliquity of his Rays on the general Face, and the Opposition of an Air condens'd by the Cold of sixteen Hours Absence, on which they must have an Effect to put it into Motion, render his Action but little sensible till he is got up to a certain Height; for according to some able Philosophers, Cold consists in a ceasing from Motion.

3. If one Mountain is contiguous to another, it is evident that the same will be cover'd till the Sun has attain'd the Height of the Angle T D C, which the Horizon forms with the Line drawn from the Foot of one Mountain to the Top of the other; then the Sun will not operate on all the Face E D above six Hours; and tho' he operates a long time on the Top, it will be never the more heated, because the Rays reflect upwards, as SA to N, where their Operation is interrupted by the continual Flux of the Air, whose violent Agitation in a strait Line is opposite to the Heat, as Experience shews by the Wind, or if you please by a strong Blast, closing the Lips, which cools the Hand that receives it.

In fine, when the Sun, being in the Zenith, violently heats the Plain, it only half heats the Mountains, as is plain to those who understand a little of Geometry; for supposing the Rays of the Sun Parallel, the Surface E D receives no more than the Perpendicular E Y, equal to X D, which may be look'd upon as in the Plain, tho' the Line E Y be much longer, but the Triangle being rectangular, and *Isoceles*, the Squares of those Lines which express like Surfaces, being to one another as 25 to 49, that is, almost as 1 is to 2, it will appear, that the Mountain receives half the Rays less than the Plain, which answers to a Quarter of the natural Day, as in the first Case; the Sun there will require half as much more Time to render the Earth capable of producing on the Mountain, than it will need on the Plain; therefore the Harvest will be long after, and it is not to be wonder'd that this Difference should extend to six Months.

I shall not regard the Objections that may be made, nor go about to apply this Discourse to Valleys and Mountains that lie East and West; it is not proper for me to say any more: I will proceed to another Remark, concerning the Vale of *Lima*.

Since the Earthquake in 1678, the Earth has not produced Corn as it did before, for which Reason they find it cheaper to have it brought from *Chili*, from whence enough is every Year exported to maintain 50 or 60000 Men, as I have elsewhere computed. The Mountain and the rest of the Country is sufficient to maintain the Inhabitants.

Flowers.

As for Garden Flowers, I have not seen any peculiar to that Country, except the *Niarbor*, which somewhat resemble the Orange Flower; their Scent is not so strong, but more pleasant.

Carapullo  
Plant.

I must not here omit the Singularities of some Plants I have heard Persons of Credit speak of. There is an Herb call'd *Carapullo*, which grows like a Tuft of Grass, and yields an Ear, the Decoction of which makes such as drink it delirious for some Days: The *Indians* make use of it to discover the natural Disposition of their Children. At the Time when it has its Operation, they place by them the Tools of all such Trades as they may follow; as by a Maiden a Spindle, Wool, Scissors, Cloth, Kitchen Furniture, &c. And by a Youth Accoutrements for a Horse, Awls, Hammers, &c. and that Tool they take most Fancy to in their Delirium, is a certain Indication of the Trade they are fittest for, as I was assured by a *French Surgeon*, who was an Eye Witness of this Rarity.

Paradise  
Flower.

In the Plains of *Truxillo* there is a Sort of Tree, which bears 20 or 30 Flowers, all of them different, and of divers Colours, hanging together like a Bunch of Grapes; it is call'd *Flor del Paraiso*, or the Flower of Paradise.

About *Caxatambo* and *San Matheo*, a Village in the Territory of *Lima*, at the Foot of the Mountains, there are certain Shrubs bearing blue Blossoms, each of which as it changes



changes into Fruit, produces a Cross so exactly form'd, *Cross Flower.* that it could not be better done by Art.

In the Province *de los Charcas*, on the Banks of the great River *Misque*, there grow large Trees, whose Leaf is like that of the Myrtle, and the Fruit is a Cluster of green Hearts, somewhat less than the Palm of the Hand, which being open'd there appear several little white Films, like the Leaves of a Book, and on each Leaf is a Heart, in the midst of which is a Cross, with three Nails at the Foot of it. I do not question, but that the *Spanish* Imagination forms some Part of these Representations.

In the same Province is the Plant call'd *Pito real*, which *Pito Real Plant.* being reduc'd to Powder, dissolves Iron and Steel: It is so call'd from the Name of a Bird, that uses it as a Purge, and is green and small like a Parrot, excepting that it has a Copple Crown and a long Beak. They say, that in the Kingdom of *Mexico*, to get some of this Herb, they stop the Entrance into the Nests of those Birds on the Trees with Iron Wire, and that the Bird breaks those Wires by means of the said Herb, whose Leaves it brings, which are found there. It is farther added, that Prisoners have made their Escape, getting off their Fetters with it. This looks somewhat suspicious.

There is also *Magney*, from which they get Honey, *Vi-Magney:* negar and Drink. The Stalks and Leaves are good to eat: They may also be wrought like Hemp; and from them they draw the Thread call'd *Pita*. The Wood of it serves to cover Houses; its Prickles, or Thorns, for Needles; and the *Indians* use the Fruit instead of Soap.

*Salsaparilla*, *Quinquina*, whose Tree is like the Almond-Tree; *Quesnoa* or *Quinna*, a little white Seed, like that of Mustard, but not smooth, which is good against Falls, and a Distemper they call *Pasmor*, whose Fits are Convulsions: *Dragons Blood*, some *Rhubarb*, *Tamarind*, *Camina Oil*, and *Alamaaca*, are also to be found in *Peru*. The Balsam, which bears the Name, comes thither but in a small Quantity;

Quantity; it is brought from *Mexico*, as I have said before.

*Pico Insect.*

It remains to say something of a very troublesome little Insect, call'd *Pico*. It gets insensibly into the Feet, betwixt the Flesh and the Skin, where it feeds and grows as big as a Pea, and then gnaws the Part, if Care be not taken to get it out; and being full of little Eggs, like Nits, if it be broken in taking out, those Nits which scatter about the Sore, produce as many new Insects; but, to kill them, they apply Tobacco, or Tallow.

### Customs and Manners of the Spaniards of Peru.

BEFORE we leave *Peru*, it will be proper, in this Place, to say something of what I could observe of the Manners of the *Creolian Spaniards*, that is, those born in that Country. To begin with Religion, I must observe, that, like those in *Europe*, they value themselves upon being the best Christians of all Nations; they even pretend to distinguish betwixt themselves and us by that Qualification; so that among them it is a very usual Way of speaking, to say a Christian and a *French Man* to signify a *Spaniard* and a *French Man*: But, without diving into the Interior of either, they have nothing of the outward Practice of the Church Discipline, by which they may merit that Pre-eminence. The Abstinence from Flesh is among them much changed by the Use of that they call *Grossura*, that is, *Of-fal Meat*, which consists in Heads, Tongues, Entrails, Feet, and the extreme Parts of Beasts, which they eat on Fasting Days, not to mention the Use of what they call *Manteca*, being Hogs-Lard and Beef-Suet, which they use instead of Butter: (Note, (tho' the Author takes no Notice of it) that these Things are only permitted on Saturdays, but not in Lent, or on Fridays, or other Fasting Days.) Excepting the Mass, it is not usual to assist at any other Divine Service. Those who are above three Leagues from the Parish Church and the *Christian Indians*, who are but a League distant, are exempted

exempted from hearing of Mass on Days of Obligation: At *Lima* they dispense with themselves for going to the Parish Church, because there are few good Houses but what have Oratories, that is Chappels, where Mass is said, for the Conveniency of the Inhabitants, which cherishes their Sloth, and keeps them from the Parish Duty.

In short, if their particular Devotion be strictly examin'd, it seems to be all reduced to that of the Rosary. It is said in all Towns and Villages twice or thrice a Week, at the Processions which are made in the Night, in private Families, or else every Person apart, at least every Evening, at the falling of the Night. Religious Men wear their Beads about their Necks, and the Laity under their Cloaths. The Confidence they repose in that pious Invention of *S. Dominick Guzman*, which they believe was brought down from Heaven, is so great, that they ground their Salvation upon it, and expect nothing less than Miracles from it, being amused with the fabulous Accounts daily given them, and by the Notion of the good Success every one applies to that Devotion in the Course of his Affairs. But, what will hardly be believ'd, I have often observ'd, that they also depend upon it for the Success of their amorous Intrigues.

Next to the Rosary follows the Devotion of Mount Carmel, which is no less beneficial to the *Mercenarians*, than the former is to the *Dominicans*.

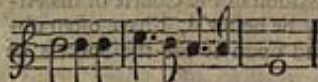
That of the immaculate Conception is next; the *Franciscans* and the *Jesuites* have gain'd it such Reputation, that they mention it at commencing all Actions, even the most indifferent. Praised be, say they, when a Sermon begins, at Grace, and at Candle-lighting, in every House, praised be the most Holy Sacrament of the Altar, and the Virgin *Mary*, our Lady, conceiv'd without Blemish or original Sin, from the first Instant of her natural Being. They add to the Litanies, *Absque labe concepta, Thou who art conceiv'd without Blemish*. In short, this Sentence is foisted in at all Times, when it can neither serve for the Instruction, nor the

the Edification of the Faithful; and the Expressions in the Hymns they sing, in Honour of that Opinion, are so singular, that it will not be ungrateful to see some Staves of them here with the Notes.

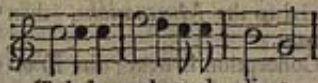
In them may be observ'd an Application of the 6th Verse of the 18th Psalm, according to the Vulgate, *In sole posuit tabernaculum suum*, He placed his Tabernacle in the Sun; by which it appears, that the Author of that Hymn was not well vers'd in the Language of Holy Writ, which the Spaniards seldom learn; for if he had consulted the Hebrew, he would certainly have perceiv'd, that the Meaning of that Passage is, that God has placed the Throne of the Sun in the Heavens, *Soli posuit solium suum in eis*, He placed the Throne for the Sun in them, that is, in the Heavens, which does not suit with their Subject.



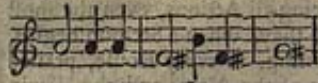
Ma-ri-a, todo es Ma-ri-a, Mary, all is Mary,



Ma-ri-a, to-do es à vos: Mary, all is yours:



Toda la noche y el di-a All the Day and Night



Se me vai enpenfar en vos. I think on nothing but you.

2.  
Toda vos resplandecis  
Con soberano arrebol,  
Y vuestra casa en el Sol  
Dice David que teneis.

2.  
You are all glittering  
With Sovereign Light,  
And David says  
Your House is in the Sun.

3. Vuestro

3.  
 Vuestro calçado es la Luna,  
 Vuestra vestidura el Sol,  
 Manto bordado de Estrellas,  
 Por corona el mismo Dios.

3.  
*The Moon is your Footstool,  
 The Sun your Garment,  
 Your Veil embroider'd with Stars  
 God himself your Crown.*

4.  
 Aunque le pese al Demonio,  
 Y reviente Satanás,  
 Alabemos à Maria  
 Sin pecado original.

4.  
*Tho' it fret the Devil,  
 And Satan burst for Rage,  
 Let us praise Mary  
 Conceiv'd without original Sin.*

5.  
 El Demonio esta muy mal,  
 Y no tiene mejoria,  
 Porque no puede estorbar  
 La devocion de Maria.

5.  
*The Devil is very ill,  
 And not likely to mend,  
 Because he cannot obstruct  
 The Devotion to Mary.*

This Fragment of Poetry may also serve to shew the Taste of the *Spanish* Nation, which is only fond of Metaphors and extravagant Comparisons, taken from the Sun, the Moon and the Stars, or from precious Stones, which often carries them into a Sort of Ridicule, and an out-of-the-way Flight, which they take for Sublime. Thus, in this Hymn, the Poet assigns the Virgin the Moon for her Footstool, the Stars for the Embroidery of her Veil, at the same time that he places her House in the Sun; which, of Consequence, must include them all: But if he has wanted Judgment in his Poetical Enthusiasm, it may be said he is much mistaken, when he says that the Devil is bursting with Rage to see the Devotion to the Virgin in Repute in *Peru*. That Devotion is certainly too much intermix'd with Vices and Sensuality, to make us believe it can be very meritorious to them. I know they are very careful to say the Rosary often daily; but it may be said they are therein true *Pharisees*, and think that Prayer consists in much Talking, tho' meerly with the Lips, and with so little Attention,

rention, that they often mutter over their Beads, whilst they are talking of Things that are no way compatible with pious Exercises. Besides, they all live in a State of Presumption of their Salvation, grounded on the Protection of the Virgin and the Saints, which they believe they merit by some Brotherhood Exercises, in which the Friars have associated them, without making them sensible that the prime Devotion consists in the Reformation of the Heart, and the Practice of good Manners. It rather looks as if, by means of Revelations, and the ill-grounded Miracles they affect continually to tell them in the Pulpit at their Sermons, they would impose upon the amazing Facility with which those People believe Things most ridiculous and contrary to good Morality, which is certainly most pernicious to the Purity of Religion, and strictly prohibited by a Constitution of Pope *Leo X.* dated 1516. I could quote some Examples; if the Grossness of those Fictions would not render the Credit suspected. Thence it proceeds, that those People scarce know what it is to pray to God; but they only address themselves to the Virgin and the Saints. Thus the Accessory of Religion almost extinguishes the Principal.

Those People are not only credulous to excess, but also superstitious. They add to the Beads they wear about their Necks some *Habillar*, being a Sort of Sea Chestnuts, and another Sort of Fruit of the like Nature, resembling the Shape of a Pear, call'd *Chonta*, with Nutmegs, and other such Things, to preserve themselves against Witchcraft and infectious Air. The Ladies wear Amulets about their Necks, being Medals without any Impression, and a little Jeat Hand, a Quarter of an Inch long, or else made of Fig-tree Wood, and call'd *Higa*, the Fingers closed, but the Thumb standing out. The Notion they have of the Vertue of those Amulets, or Counter-Charms, is to preserve themselves from the Harm that might be done by such as admire their Beauty, which they call, as in *English*, an evil Eye. These Preservatives are made larger for Children.

deen. This Superstition is common among the Ladies and the meaner People; but there is another which is almost general, and of great Moment for avoiding the Pains of the other World, which is, to take care in this to provide a religious Habit, which they buy, to die and be bury'd in; being persuaded, that when clad in a Livery so much respected here below, they shall, without any Difficulty, be admitted into Heaven, and cannot be drove into the utter Darknes, as the Friars give them to understand. This is not to be wonder'd at: It is known, that this Devotion, which began in France, in the 12th Century, being advantageous to the Communities, made the Franciscans advance, that S. Francis once a Year regularly came down into Purgatory, and took out all those who had died in the Holy Habit of his Order, with some other Follies which were condemn'd by the Council of Basl in the 15th Century, which those Friars in Peru have little regarded, as also in the Portugueze Colonies I have seen; for their Churches are still full of Pictures, representing this yearly Descent of S. Francis into Purgatory; the other Orders say no less of their Patriarch.

They have also form'd another Method, by abusing the Credulity of the Rich, to draw to themselves some Part of their Wealth; which is, to persuade them, that the nearer the Altar they are bury'd, the more they partake of the Benefit of the Prayers of the Faithful; and there are some Cullies foolish enough to believe them, and tacitly to flatter themselves, that God will make Exception of Persons. Of this Sort were two Persons some Days before I came away from Lima, who had each of them given 6000 Pieces of Eight, to be bury'd in the Charnel House of the *Augustins* of this City.

Experience making it appear, that these Honours and Advantages are at an End with the Solemnity of the Funeral; notwithstanding the great Sums they have cost, Recourse is had to pious Legacies, under the Denomination of Foundations for Masses or other Prayers. There is no dying

Person to whom the Necessity of making some such Foundation to avoid the Pains of the other Life, is not inculcated; the Merit of these Donations is so highly extoll'd, that all Men are for redeeming their Sins, to the Prejudice of what Charity and natural Inclination require, with respect to the nearest Relations, Creditors and the Poor, through whose Hands we are to redeem them, according to the Scripture Rule; but in regard that the Good which is done to either, is soon bury'd in Oblivion, Self-love, which still leaves in the Heart a Desire of Eternizing one's self, when going to be cut off from the Number of Men, makes us prefer Foundations above other good Works, because they are more proper for that End, and perhaps because they are thought more Efficacious. In a word, whether it be through the Fear of Pains, which touches us most to the Quick, or for the Love of God and one's self, the Custom is become so universal, and has so much enrich'd the Monasteries of *Lima*, and of some other Cities, within a Hundred Years, that the Laity have scarce any real Estates left; their Wealth is reduced to Moveables, and there are few that do not pay Rent to the Church, either for their Houses or Farms. It would be for the Good of those Colonies, to make such a Regulation as the *Venetians* made in the Year 1605, which prohibits the Alienation of real Estates in Favour of the Church, or in Mortmain, without the Consent of the Republick, in Imitation of those of the Emperors *Valentinian*, *Charlemagne*, and *Charles V.* and of several Kings of *France* from *S. Lewis* down to *Henry III.* But the Court of *Rome* taking the Alarm, caus'd that Decree to be for some time suspended, in a Country where it has less Power than in *Spain*; thus this Abuse, in all Likelihood, will continue there; and in a short Time the Laity will find themselves under a greater Dependency on Communities for Temporals, than they are for Spiritualls.

I will say nothing here of the Honour they pay to Images; considering the Care they take to adorn them in their



their Houses, and to burn Frankincense before them, I know not whether they might not be suspected of carrying that Worship very near to Idolatry. The Questers, a sort of People who never fail to make their Advantage of the Prepossession of the People, in order to draw Alms from them, carry Pictures along the Streets, on Foot and on Horseback, in great Frames, and with Glasses over them, which they give to be kiss'd for what they receive. It is true, that we see the best Things frequently misused in *Europe*, as well as in *America*, which obliged the Bishops of *France* to desire of the Council of *Trent* some Reformation as to that Article.

Either through Interest or Ignorance, the Clergy and the Friars take little Care to undeceive them, and to teach them to adore God in Spirit and Truth, to fear his Judgments, and not to lay any more Stress on the Protection of the Virgin and the Saints, than as they imitate their Vertues. On the contrary, if they make their Panegyricks, they extoll them without Discretion, never intermixing Points of Morality; so that those Sermons, which are the most frequent throughout the Year, become of no Use to them, and feed them in their usual Presumptions.

To conclude, tho' such Persons should with their Mouths preach up Christian Vertues, what Fruit could they produce whilst they give such ill Example? If it were upon Modesty and Meekness, they are impudent in the highest Degree; may I presume to say it, most of them are generally arm'd with a Dagger; it is not to be thought that is to murder, but at least to oppose any that should oppose their Pleasures, or offend them. Should the Subject be Poverty, and the Contempt of Riches; the most Regular of them trade and have their Slaves of both Sexes; and several Churchmen appear in colour'd Cloaths adorn'd with Gold, under their usual Habit. Should it be Humility; they are insufferably Proud, a true Copy of the Phisees, who would take Place every where, and be saluted in publick Places. In short, not satisfy'd with the  
low

low Bows made them, they offer their Sleeves to be kiss'd in the open Streets and in the Churches, whither they go on Purpose to disturb the Faithful, who are attentive to the Sacrifice, to have Homage done to their pretended Dignity; differing very much therein from the Sentiments of the first of the Western Monks, *S. Benedict*, who chose for his Religious Men the Habit of the Poor in his Time, and *S. Francis*, a ridiculous Habit, to render himself contemptible in the Eyes of Men. In short, it is well known that to prevent their meddling with worldly Affairs, the King of Spain has been formerly obliged to make use of his Authority, and yet he has not prevail'd. *Herrera, Anno 1551*, writes thus: *The King charged Don Lewis de Velasco, the Viceroy, to take Care that the Prelates and Religious Men should keep within the Bounds of their own Employments, without interfering with those of others, as they had sometimes done, because that belong'd to the King and his Lieutenants.* To conclude, shall they preach up the Example of Continnence? this is the general Vice, which scarce allows of any Exception among those whom Age has not disabled. Neither are they very reserv'd as to this Point, but excuse themselves with the Necessity of having a She-Friend to take Care of them, because the Monasteries allow them nothing but Diet; so that they are obliged to intrigue to keep in with them, dealing in Merchandize, and sometimes in Slight of Hand, which have often warn'd the *French* trading along the Coast to mistrust them as Sharpers. The Captain of the *Mary Anne*, in which I went thither, had severe Experience of it, one of them taking a Bag of 800 Pieces of Eight out of his Round-house.

This Dissipation is also the Reason why they scarce apply themselves to Study; out of the great Towns there are some, who can scarce read *Latin*, to say Mass. Nay, I knew a Professor of Divinity in a Monastery, who perform'd it very imperfectly. In short, it is manifest, that most of them only make themselves Friars in order to lead a more easy and more honourable Life. It is said, that the

the King of Spain is sensible of this Evil, and will regulate the Number of Communities.

I owe this Testimony to Truth, that these Remarks do not concern the *Jesuites*, who Study, Preach, Catechize, even in Publick Places, with much Zeal; and I believe, that were it not for them, the Faithful would scarce be instructed in the Principal Articles of Faith.

I must also here honour the Probity and good Behaviour of the Bishops, who are not altogether to be charged with the Disorders of their Flock, who by ancient Custom are in a manner entituled to live a little more Licentious, especially the Friars, who are Masters, and own no other Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, but that of their Superiors, pretending they only depend on them, and on the Pope, as Supreme. A Monstrous Independence, according to the ingenious Opinion of *S. Bernard*, as if a Finger were taken from the Hand, to affix it directly to the Head.

I have happen'd to compare the Friars to the *Pharisees*, whereas according to their Institute of Life, I should have set them in the same Rank with the *Essenians*; but instead of shewing that their Righteousness abounded more than that of those *Jews*, I should have expos'd Vertues that would confound the pretended Perfection of some Christian Communities. *Eusebius*, lib. 8. *Præp. Evang.* speaking of the *Essenians*, says, *There are no Boys or raw Youths among them, because of the Unsettledness of that Age. They do not live in Cities, believing that as an infectious Air is hurtful to the Body, so the Conversation of the Multitude is to the Mind. No one of them makes Instruments of War; nor do they follow those Professions, which cause Men easily to fall into Wickedness. There is no Merchandizing, no Vintualling, no Navigation known among them; there is no Slave among them, but being all Free, they serve one another, for Nature like a Mother, say they, brought forth all; wherefore, tho' not call'd so, we are all really Brothers.*

In short, I do not, by what I have said, pretend to exclude the worthy and learned People of *Peru* and *Chili*. I know,

know there are such among all Conditions; there have been some of eminent Piety, whom the Church has admitted into the Catalogue of Saints. *Lima* has produced within its Territory *S. Rose of S. Mary* of the third Order of *S. Dominick*. The Bishop of that City *Toribius*, an *European*, sanctify'd himself there; and they there honour the Blessed *Francis Solano*, a Native of *Paraguay*. But after all, I differ very much from the Opinion of the Author of the Life of the Holy *Toribius*, who says, that in all Likelihood Peru will afford Heaven more Saints, than it has given Silver to the Earth. Vertue seems to me to be more common among the Laity, than among the Friars and the Clergy; I make no scruple to say so, it would be a false Nicety to spare Men who dishonour their Profession without Controul, under Pretence that they are consecrated to God by solemn Vows.

All Vices, says *Juvenal*, are the more criminal, by as much as he is the greater who is guilty of them.

This is what I have to object, as a Traveler, who observe what is done in the Countries where I happen to be, and who deduce as a Consequence from the Behaviour of such People, that they have little Religion in their Hearts, notwithstanding their Gravity and outward Affectation.

Creolians or  
Spaniards  
born in Peru.

If we next examine the Character and Inclinations of the Secular *Creolians*, we shall find among them, as among other Nations, a Mixture of Good and Evil. It is said, that the Inhabitants of *la Puna*, that is, the Mountain Country of *Peru*, are well enough to deal with, and that there are very worthy People among them, generous and ready to do a good Turn, especially if it can feed their Vanity, and shew the Greatness of their Souls, which they there call *Punto*, that is, Point of Honour, which most of them value themselves upon, as a Qualification that raises them above other Nations, and is a Proof of the Purity of the *Spanish* Blood, and of the Nobility all the Whites boast of. The most beggarly and meanest of the *Europeans* become Gentlemen as soon as they find themselves transplanted among

among the *Indians*, *Black*, *Mulattoes*, *Mestizo's*, and others of mixt Blood. That imaginary Nobility causes them to perform most of their good Actions. I found in *Cbili*, that they practis'd much Hospitality, especially abroad in the Country, where they entertain Strangers very generously, and keep them long enough in their Houses without any Interest. Thus the little Merchants of *Biscay*, and other *European Spaniards*, travel much, with small Expence.

In the great Towns, and along the Coast, we now find that the *Creolians* are fallen off from those good Qualities our first *French* Men had found among them, and which all Men applauded; perhaps the Natural Antipathy they have for our Nation, is increas'd by the ill Success of the Trade they have drove with us. This Antipathy extends so far as to lessen the Affection they ought to have for their King, because he is a *Frenchman*. *Lima* was at first divided into two Parties; and so on the Mountains; and the Clergy and Friars impudently pray'd for his Competitor; but the *Biscainers* scatter'd about the Country, and most of the *European Spaniards*, being inform'd of the Valour and Vertue of *Philip V.* always exerted their Fidelity to him; so that the *Creolians* being convinced of their ill-grounded Prejudice, began to have an Affection for the *Holy King*, for so they call him; and tho' there should still remain any obstinate Spirits, they will become more cautious, seeing his Crown fix'd by the unanimous Consent of all Nations. They are timorous and easy to be govern'd, tho' dispers'd and remote from their Superiors, and have a Thousand Retreats of Desarts and Plains to escape Punishment; and besides, there is no Country where Justice is less severe; for scarce any Body is punish'd with Death. Nevertheless, they stand in awe of the King's Officers; four Troopers, who are no better than Messengers, coming from the Viceroy, make all Men quake at the Distance of 400 Leagues from him.

As for Wit in general, the *Creolians* of *Lima* do not want it, they have a Vivacity and Disposition to Sciences; those

of the Mountains somewhat less; but both Sorts of them fancy they much exceed the *European Spaniards*, whom among themselves they call *Cavallor*, that is *Horses*, or *Brutes*; perhaps this is an Effect of the Antipathy there is between them, tho' they are Subjects of the same Monarch. I believe one of the principal Reasons of that Aversion is, because they always see those Strangers in Possession of the Prime Places in the State, and driving the best of their Trade, which is the only Employment of the Whites, who scorn to apply themselves to Arts, for which they have no Relish.

In other Points, they are little addicted to War; the easy Tranquillity they live in, makes them apprehensive of disturbing their Repose; however they undergo the Fatigue of long Journeys by Land, with much Satisfaction; 4 or 500 Leagues traveling through Desarts, and over uncouth Mountains, does not fright them any more than the ill Fare they meet with by the Way; whence may be concluded, that they are good for the Country they live in.

In relation to Commerce, they are as Sharp and Understanding as the *Europeans*; but being dainty and slothful, and not vouchsafing to deal without there be considerable Profit, the *Biscainers*, and other *European Spaniards*, who are more Laborious, grow Rich sooner. The very Workmen, who live barely on the Labour of their Hands, are so indulgent to themselves, as not to spare taking the *Siesta*, that is, a Nap after Dinner; whence it follows, that losing the best Part of the Day, they do not half the Work they might, and by that Means make all Workmanship excessively dear.

Delicacy and Slothfulness seem to be peculiar to the Country, perhaps because it is too good; for it is observ'd, that those who have been bred to Labour in *Spain*, grow idle there in a short Time, like the *Cretians*. In short, Men are more Robust and Laborious in a poor Country than in a Fruitful. For this Reason *Cyrus* would never suffer the *Persians* to quit the uncouth Mountains and Barren Country they inhabited, to seek a better; alledging, that

that the Manners of Men are relax'd and corrupted by the Goodness of the Place they live in. In short, the Strength is kept up by the Exercise of the Body; whereas Ease softens it, through too much Want of Action, and enervates it with Pleasures.

The *Creolians* are generally outwardly composed, and do not depart from that Gravity which is natural to them. They are sober as to Wine; but they eat greedily, and after an indecent Manner, sometimes all in the same Dish, commonly a Portion, like the Friars. At any considerable Entertainment, they set before the Guests several Plates of different Sorts of Food successively; and then each of them gives the same to his Servants, and to those that stand by, and are not at the Table, to the end, say they, that all may partake of the good Cheer. When the *Creolians* came to eat Aboard our Ships, where they were serv'd after the *French* Fashion in great Dishes, placed according to Art and Symmetry, they boldly took them off to give to their Slaves, sometimes before they had been touch'd; but when the Captains durst not make them sensible of that Indecency, our Cooks, who were jealous of their own Labour, did not spare to let them understand that they discomposed the Beauty of the Entertainment. Not having the Use of Forks, they are obliged to wash after eating, which they all do in the same Basin, and with that general and disagreeable Washing-Water they do not stick to wash their Lips. The Meat they eat is season'd with *Axi*, or *Pimiento*, that sort of Spice we have before spoken of, which is so hot, that Strangers cannot possibly endure it; but that which makes it still worse, is a greasy Taste the Lard gives to all their Cookery. Besides, they have nor the Art of roasting great Joints, because they do not turn them continually, as we do, which they admired the most of all our Dishes. They make two Meals, one at 10 in the Morning, the other at four in the Evening, which is instead of a Dinner at *Lima*, and a Collation at Midnight. In other Places they eat as we do in *France*.

Herb of Pa-  
raguay.

During the Day, they make much Use of the Herb of *Paraguay*, which some call *S. Bartolomew's* Herb, who they pretend came into those Provinces, where he made it wholesome and beneficial, whereas before it was venomous: Being only brought dry, and almost in Powder, I cannot describe it. Instead of drinking the Tincture, or Infusion, apart, as we drink Tea, they put the Herb into a Cup, or Bowl, made of a Calabash, or Gourd, tipp'd with Silver, which they call *Mate*; they add Sugar, and pour on it the hot Water, which they drink immediately, without giving it Time to infuse, because it turns as black as Ink. To avoid drinking the Herb which swims at the Top, they make use of a Silver Pipe, at the End whereof is a Bowl, full of little Holes; so that the Liquor suck'd in at the other End is clear from the Herb. They drink round with the same Pipe, pouring hot Water on the same Herb, as it is drank off. Instead of a Pipe, which they call *Bombilla*, some part the Herb with a Silver Separation, call'd *Apartador*, full of little Holes. The Reluctancy the *French* have shewn to drink after all Sorts of People, in a Country where many are pox'd, has occasion'd the inventing of the Use of little Glafs-Pipes, which they begin to use at *Lima*. That Liquor, in my Opinion, is better than Tea; it has a Flavour of the Herb, which is agreeable enough; the People of the Country are so used to it, that even the Poorest use it once a Day, when they rise in the Morning.

Trade of Pa-  
raguay Herb.

The Trade for the Herb of *Paraguay* is carry'd on at *Santa Fe*, whither it is brought up the River of *Plate*, and in Carts. There are two Sorts of it; the one call'd *Yerba de Palor*; the other, which is finer, and of more Vertue, *Yerba de Camini*: This last is brought from the Lands belonging to the *Jesuites*. The great Consumption of it is between *La Paz* and *Cuzco*, where it is worth half as much more as the other, which is spent from *Potosi* to *La Paz*. There comes yearly from *Paraguay* into *Peru* above 50000 *Arrovas*, being 12000 Hundred Weight of both Sorts; whereof



whereof, at least, one Third is of the *Camini*, without reckoning 25000 *Arrovas*, of that of *Palos* for *Cbili*. They pay for each Parcel, containing six or seven *Arrovas*, four Royals for the Duty call'd *Alcavala*, being a Rate upon all Goods sold; which, with the Charge of Carriage, being above 600 Leagues, double the first Price, which is about two Pieces of Eight; so that at *Potosi* it comes to about five Pieces of Eight the *Arrova*. The Carriage is commonly by Carts, which carry 150 *Arrovas* from *Santa Fe* to *Ju-juj*, the last Town of the Province of *Tucuman*; and from thence to *Potosi*, which is 100 Leagues farther, it is carry'd on Mules.

I have elsewhere observ'd, that the Use of this Herb is necessary where there are Mines, and on the Mountains of *Peru*, where the Whites think the Use of Wine pernicious; they rather choose to drink Brandy, and leave the Wine to the *Indians*, and Blacks, which they like very well.

If the *Spaniards* are sober as to Wine, they are not very reserv'd as to Continency. In Matters of Love they yield to no Nation: They freely sacrifice most of what they have to that Passion; and tho' covetous enough upon all other Occasions, they are generous beyond Measure to Women. To add the Pleasure of Liberty to the rest, they seldom marry in the Face of the Church; but, to use their own Way of Expression, they all generally marry behind the Church, that is, they are all engaged in a decent Sort of Concubinage, which among them is nothing scandalous; so far from it, that it is a Disgrace not to keep a Mistress, upon Condition she be true to them; but they are as apt to observe that Fidelity, as Wives do to their Husbands in *Europe*. It is even frequent enough to see marry'd Men forsake their Wives to adhere to *Mulatta's* and Blacks, which often occasions Disorders in Families. Thus the two ancient Ways of Marrying still subsist in that Country; that of keeping a Mistress is very answerable to that which was call'd by *Use*, and there is some Remainder of the other in the Ceremony of Marriage. The Bridegroom puts into the Bride's Hand 13 Pieces of Money, which she then

then drops into the Curate's Hand; so in the Marriage *per Coemptionem*, the Bride and Bridegroom gave one another a Piece of Money, which is call'd *Conuenire in manum*.

The Priests and Friars, as I have said before, make no Scruple of it; and the Publick is no farther scandalized, than as Jealousy concurs, because they often keep their Mistresses finer than others, by which the *Mulatta* Women are often known. Several Bishops, to put a Stop to that Abuse, every Year, at *Easter*, excommunicate all that are engaged to Concubines; but as the Evil is universal, and the Confessors are Parties concern'd, they are not severe in that Particular; whence it follows, that those People, who are otherwise easily frighted by the Church Thunderbolts, do not much fear these. The Friars evade those Strokes, on account that they, not being free, are not look'd upon as Concubinaries in the utmost Forms; and that, besides, they have not the Intention to be so. A pleasant Solution, the Invention whereof must doubtless be assign'd to some cunning Casuist, grounded on *Justinian's Code*, which declares Conventions invalid which are made among Persons that are not free, and on the wise Maxim expounded by those Casuists so much cry'd down in *France*, *That the Intention regulates the Quality of the Action*. In fine, this Custom is so settled, so commodious, and so generally receiv'd, that I question whether it can be ever abolish'd. The Laws of the Kingdom seem to authorize it; for Bastards inherit almost like the lawfully begotten, when they are own'd by the Father; and there is no Disgrace inherent to that Birth, as is among us, where the Crime is wrongfully imputed to the innocent Person, wherein we should perhaps be more favourable, if every Man were well acquainted with his Original.

Women.

Tho' the Women are not shut up like the *Spanish* Women in *Europe*, yet it is not usual for them to go abroad by Day; but about Night Fall they have Liberty to make their Visits, for the most part where it is not expected; for the modestest in open Day are the boldest at Nights, their Faces being then cover'd with their Veils, so that they can-

not





A. Espagnole envelopée de Sa mantille ayant le visage a moitié Couvert  
 B. autre en Revois borde de dentelles  
 C. Creole du Perou en habit de Voyage

not be known, they perform the Part which the Men do <sup>Women.</sup> in France.

The Method they use at home, is to sit on Cushions along the Wall, with their Legs a-croſs on an *Eſtrado*, or Part of the Room raised a Step above the rest, with a Carpet on it, after the *Turkish* Fashion. They spend almost whole Days in this Manner, without altering their Posture, even to eat; for they are serv'd apart, on little Chests, which they always have before them to put up the Work they do: This makes them have a heavy Gate, without the Grace of our *French* Women. See Plate XXIX.

That which they call *Eſtrado*, as was hinted above, is, as used in *Spain*, all one End or Side of a Visiting-Room, rais'd six or seven Inches above the Floor, of the Breadth of five or six Foot. The Men, on the contrary, sit on Chairs, and only some very great Familiarity admits them to the *Eſtrado*. In other respects, the Women there have as much Liberty at home as in *France*; they there receive Company with a very good Grace, and take Pleasure to entertain their Guests with playing on the Harp, or the Guitarre, to which they sing; and if they are desired to dance, they do it with much Complaisance and Politeness.

Their Manner of Dancing is almost quite different from <sup>Dancing.</sup> where we value the Motion of the Arms, and sometimes that of the Head. In most of their Dances, their Arms hang down, or else are wrapp'd up in a Cloak they wear; so that nothing is seen but the Bending of the Body, and the Activity of the Feet. They have many Figure Dances, in which they lay by their Cloaks, or Mantles; but the Graces they add are rather Actions than Gestures.

The Men dance almost after the same Manner, without laying aside their long Swords, the Point whereof they keep before them, that it may not hinder them in rising or coupeeing, which is sometimes to such a Degree, that it looks

Plate XXIX. Page 255. explain'd in English.

- A. A Spanish Woman wrapp'd up in her *Mante*, with her Face half cover'd.  
 B. Another with a Veil laced about.  
 C. A Creolian, or *Mongrel* of Peru, in a Traveling Habit.

looks like kneeling. I could wish I had been skill'd in Choreography, to represent some of their Dances. I will, nevertheless, here insert the Tune of one of those that are common with them, as the Minuet is in *France*; they call it *Zapateo*, because, in Dancing, they alternatively strike with the Heel and the Toes, taking some Steps, and couceping, without moving far from one Place. By this Piece of Musick may be discern'd what a barren Taste they have in touching the Harp, the Guitarre, and the *Bandola*, which are almost the only Instruments used in that Country. The two last are of the Species of Guitarrs, but the *Bandola* has a much sharper and louder Sound. It is to be observ'd, that the *Bals* is made in *France*, to the Humour of the Harp.

Zapateo, a  
Dance in Pe-  
ru and Chili.

These

These agreeable Accomplishments, which Spanish Women have from their Education, are the more moving, because they are generally attended with a graceful Air: They are for the most part sprightly enough; their Complexion is good, but not lasting, by reason of their using so much Sublimate, which is contrary to what Oexmelian says in his History of the *Buccaniers*; Sublimate, says he, is also form'd, or metamorphos'd, tho' not used in America, because the Women there do not paint: They have sparkling Eyes, their Discourse pleasant, approving of a free Gallantry, to which they answer wittily, and often with such a Turn as has a Taste of Libertinism, according to our Customs. Those Proposals, which a Lover would not dare to make in France, without incurring the Indignation of a modest Woman, are so far from scandalizing, that they are pleas'd with them, tho' they be, at the same time, far from consenting; being persuaded that it is the greatest Token of Love that can be shewn them, they return Thanks as for an Honour done them, instead of taking Offence as of an ill Opinion conceiv'd of their Vertue. By these simple and natural Ways we perceive the secret Pleasure and Satisfaction we receive when we find ourselves courted. This Effect of Self-love, which is the Source of reciprocal Affection, is afterwards the Occasion of Disorder, when Decency and Religion do not put a Stop to it; but, without regarding essential Duties, humane Prudence alone ought to suffice to hinder a Man of Sense from being taken in the Snares of the Coquets of that Country; for their obliging Behaviour is generally the Effect of their Avarice, rather than a Token of their Inclination. They are perfectly skill'd in the Art of imposing on the Frailty a Man shews for them, and engaging him in continual Expences, without Discretion; they seem to take a Pride in ruining many Lovers, as a Warrior does in having vanquish'd many Enemies. *And I found more bitter than Death, the Woman whose Heart is Snares and Nets, and her Hands as Bands; whose pleaseth God, shall escape from her, but*

the Sinner shall be taken by her, Eccles. vii. 26. That Misfortune is not the only Punishment of those who suffer themselves to be taken; they there often lose the inestimable Treasure of Health, which they seldom recover, not only because in those temperate Climates they make little Account of the Venereal Diseases, notwithstanding which they attain to the longest old Age, but also because the Scarcity of Physicians, who are only to be found in three or four great Cities, does not afford them the Opportunity of being cured. Some Women only patch up their Distempers with Sarsaparilla, Peisans of Mallows, and other Herbs of the Country, and especially the Use of Cauteries, which are look'd upon as Specificks, and whereof both Sexes alike make Provision, which the Women so little endeavour to conceal, that, in their serious Visits, they enquire after their Issues, and dress them for one another; so that we may apply to them that Text of Scripture, *James v. 2, 3. Your Riches are corrupted, --- your Gold and Silver is canker'd, and the Rust of them --- shall eat your Flesh as it were Fire,* for they ruin themselves in debauching with the Women; and they themselves observe, that whether it is that God punishes them for those criminal Expences, or, as others think, that the Estates they have are unjustly usurp'd from the *Indians*, they are scarce ever seen to descend to the third Generation. What the Father rakes together with much Trouble, and often with much Injustice in the Administration of Governments, the Sons do not fail to squander; so that the Grandsons of the greatest Men are often the poorest. They are themselves so far convinced of this Truth, that it is become a Proverb in *Spain*, where they say, *No se logra mas que baxianda de las Indias*: It thrives no better than an *Indian* Estate.

The Women, as I have said, are the principal Cause; Vanity and Sensuality render them insatiable as to Ornaments and good Feeding. Tho' the Make of their Habit be of itself plain enough, and not very susceptible of Changes in Fashions, they love to be richly dress'd, whatsoever



soever it costs, even in the most private Places: Even their very Smocks, and Fustian Wastecoats they wear over them, are full of Lace; and their Prodigality extends to put it upon Socks and Sheets. The upper Petticoat they commonly wear, call'd *Faldellin*, is open before, and has three Rows of Lace, the Middlemost of Gold and Silver, extraordinary wide, sew'd on Silk Galoons, which terminate at the Edges. The Women, in the Days of *K. Henry IV.* also wore open Petticoats in *France*, which lipp'd over before: Their upper Wastecoat, which they call *Fuson*, is either of rich Cloth of Gold, or, in hot Weather, of fine Linnen, cover'd with abundance of Lace, confusedly put on; the Sleeves are large, and have a Pouch hanging down to the Knees, like those of the *Minims*; they are sometimes open like long Engageants, almost like those that were also worn in the Days of King *Henry IV.* But in *Chili* they begin to put down the Pouch, and cut them more even, after the Manner of Boots. If they have a little Apron, it is made of two or three Strips of Silk flower'd with Gold or Silver, sew'd together with Laces. In the cold Countries they are always wrapp'd up in a Mantle, being no other than a mishapen Piece of Bays, one Third longer than it is broad, one Point whereof hangs upon their Heels. See Plate XXIX. The best are of rich Stuffs, cover'd with four or five Rows of broad Lace, and extraordinary fine. In other respects, their formal Dress is the same as that of the *Spanish* Women in *Europe*, viz. the Black Taffety Veil, which covers them from the Head to the Feet. They use that they call *Mantilla* for an Undress, to appear the more modest; and it is a Sort of Cloak, or Mantle, round at the Bottom, of a dark Colour, edg'd with Black Taffety. Their Dress in the Black Taffety Veil, a wide upper Petticoat, of a Musk Colour, with little Flowers, under which is another close Coat of colour'd Silk, call'd *Pollera*. In this Dress they go to the Churches, walking gravely, their Faces so veil'd, that generally only one Eye is to be seen. By this Outside a Man would take them for Vestal Virgins, but

would be commonly very much deceiv'd, like those Courtisans in *Terence*, Eun. 5. Sc. 4.

*Quæ dum foris sunt nihil videtur mundius,  
Nec magis compositum quidquam, nec magis elegans, &c.*

Who whilst they are Abroad nothing appears more clean, nothing more composed, or more neat. They have no Ornament on the Head, their Hair hangs behind in Tresses; sometimes they tye Ribbons about their Head with Gold or Silver, which in *Peru* they call *Valaca*, in *Chili Hagne*; when the Ribbon is broad, adorn'd with Lace, and goes twice about the Forehead, it is call'd *Vineba*. The Breasts and Shoulders are half naked, unless they wear a large Handkerchief, which hangs down behind to the Mid-Leg, and in *Peru* serves instead of a little Cloak, or Mantle call'd *Gregorillo*: They commit not any Offence against Modesty, when they shew their Breasts, which the *Spaniards* look upon with Indifference, but out of a ridiculous Extravagancy they are much in Love with little Feet, of which they take great Notice; and therefore they take extraordinary care to hide them, so that it is a Favour to shew them, which they do with Dexterity.

I do not speak of extraordinary Ornaments of Pearls and Jewels; there must be many Pendants, Bracelets, Necklaces and Rings, to reach the Height of the Fashion, which is much the same as the ancient Mode of *France*.

*Men's Habit.*

As for the Men, they are now clad after the *French* Fashion, but for the most part in Silk Cloaths, with an extravagant Mixture of light Colours. Out of a sort of Vanity peculiar to their Nation, they will not own that they have borrow'd that Mode from us, tho' it has not been used among them any longer than since the Reign of King *Philip V.* They rather choose to call it a Warlike Habit.

*Gown-Men.*

The Gown Men wear the *Golilla*, being a little Band, not hanging, but sticking out forward under the Chin, and

and a Sword as they do in *Spain*, excepting the Judges and Presidents.

The Traveling Habit in *Peru* is a Coat slash'd on both Sides under the Arms, and the Sleeves open above and below, with Button-Holes; it is call'd *Capotillo de dor faldas*.

The Dwellings of the *Spaniards* in *Peru*, are no way answerable to the Magnificence of their Garb. Without *Lima*, in which Place the Buildings are handsome enough, nothing is poorer than the Houses; they consist in only a Ground Floor, 14 or 15 Foot high. The Contrivance of the stateliest of them, is to have a Court at the Entrance, adorn'd with Porticos of Timber Work, the Length of the Building which is always single in *Chili*, because of the Largeness the Top would require; but on the Coast of *Peru*, they make them as deep as they please, because when they cannot have Lights from the Walls, they make them in the Roof, there being no Rain to apprehend. The first Room is a large Hall, about 19 Foot Broad, and between 30 and 40 in Length, which leads into two other Chambers one within another. The first is that where the *Estrado* is to receive Company, and the Bed in a Nook, in the Nature of an Alcove, spacious within, and whose chief Conveniency is, a false Door, to receive or dismiss Company, without being perceiv'd coming in, tho' upon Surprise. There are few of those Beds in the Houses, because the Servants lie on Sheep-Skins upon the Ground.

The Height and Largeness of the Rooms would nevertheless give them some Air of Grandeur, did they know how to make their Lights regularly; but they make so few Windows, that they have always a Dusk and Melancholy Air, and having no Use of Glass, they are latticed with Grates of turn'd Wood, which still lessens the Light. The Household Stuff does not make amends for the ill Contrivance of the Building, only the *Estrado* is cover'd with Carpets, and Velvet Cushions for the Women to sit on. The Chairs for the Men are cover'd with Leather,

printed in Half Relief. There are no Hangings, but abundance of scurvy Pictures made by the *Indians* of *Cuzco*. In fine, there are neither Boarded nor Stone Floors, which makes the Houses damp, especially in *Chili*, where it rains much in Winter.

The common Materials for private Buildings are those they call *Adobes*, that is, large Bricks, about two Foot long, one in breadth, and 4 Inches thick, in *Chili*, and somewhat smaller in *Peru*, because it never rains there; or else the Walls are of Clay ramm'd between two Planks, which they call *Tapias*. That manner of Building was used among the *Romans*, as may be seen in *Vitruvius*; it is not expensive, because the Soil is every where fit for making of those Bricks, and yet it lasts Ages, as appears by the Remains of Structures and Forts, built by the *Indians*, which have stood at least 200 Years. It is true, it is not so in regard to Rain, for they are obliged to cover them in Winter, on the North-side with Thatch, or Planks. Thus they preserve them in *Chili*. The publick Structures are for the most part made of burnt Bricks, and Stone. At *La Conception* they have a greenish sort of a soft Nature; at *Santiago* they have a Stone of a good Grain, dug half a League North-West from the City; at *Coquimbo* they have a white Stone as light as a Pumice Stone; at *Callao* and *Lima* they have a Stone of good Grain brought 12 Leagues by Land, full of Saltpetre, which makes it moulder, tho' otherwise very hard; the Mole of the Port made in 1694, is built with it. There are in the Mountains Quarries of the fine Lime-Stone, whereof *Plaster of Paris* is made; they only use it to make Soap, and to stop Earthen Vessels. All their Lime is made of Shells, whence it is that the same is only fit to whiten the Walls.

*Architecture.* As for their Taste in Architecture, it must be own'd that the Churches in *Lima* are well built, as to the Case only, which is well proportion'd, lined with Pilasters, adorn'd with Mouldings, and without carv'd Capitals, over which are beautiful Cornishes, and fine Vaults full center'd

center'd and contracted; but in the Décoration of the Altars all are confus'd, crowded and bad, so that a Man cannot but lament the immense Sums they spend on those gilt Disorders.

Of the INDIANS of PERU.

HAVING spoken of the *Creolian Spaniards* of *Peru*, it will be proper here to say something of the Natives of the Country, distinguish'd by the Name of *Indians*, whose Customs are very distinct from those of *Chili*, of whom we discours'd before; what they have in common with them, is, that they are no less Drunkards and addicted to Women, and that they are as little covetous of Wealth; but they are quite different from them in relation to Bravery and Boldness; they are Fearful and Heartless, and in other respects Malicious, Dissemblers and Designing. They have a Genius for Arts, and are good at imitating what they see, but very poor at Invention.

The Christian Religion, which they have been oblig'd to embrace, has not yet taken deep Root in the Hearts of most of them, they retain a great Inclination towards their ancient Idolatry; some are often discover'd, who still adore the Deity of their Forefathers; I mean the Sun. However they are naturally docible and capable of receiving good Impressions as to Manners and Religion, if they had good Examples before their Eyes; but being ill instructed, and on the other hand seeing that those who teach them, by their Actions give the Lye to what their Mouths utter, they know not what to believe. In short, when they are forbid having to do with Women, and see the Curate has two or three, they must deduce this natural Consequence, that either he does not believe what he says, or that it is a matter of small Consequence to-transgress the Law.

Besides, the Curate is to them, not a Pastor to take Care of, and endeavour to ease them; but a Tyrant, who goes Hand in Hand with the *Spanish* Governors, to squeeze and draw from them all he is able; who makes them work for him, without any Reward for their Pains; but instead  
of

of it, upon the least Disgust cudgels them severely. There are certain Days in the Week, on which the *Indians*, pursuant to an Ordinance of the King of *Spain*, are obliged to come to be catechized; if they happen to come somewhat late, the Curate's brotherly Correction is a good Thrashing bestow'd without Ceremony, even in the Church; so that to gain the Curate's Favour, every one of them brings his Present, either of *Maiz*, that is *Indian* Wheat, for his Mules, or of Fruit, Grain or Wood for his House.

If they are to bury the Dead, or administer the Sacraments, they have several Methods to enhance their Dues, as making of Stations, or certain Ceremonies, to which they affix a certain Price. They have even preserv'd the Remains of the ancient Idolatry; such is their Custom of carrying Meat and Drink to the Graves of the Dead; so that their Superstition has only changed its Aspect, by becoming a Ceremony advantageous to the Curates.

If the Friars go into the Country, a questing for their Monastery, they do it like the Strollers of an Army; they first take Possession of what is for their turn, and if the *Indian* Owner will not freely part with that extorted Alms, they change their Form of Intreaty into Reproaches, attended with Blows, to oblige the *Indian* to part with it.

The *Jesuites* in their Missions behave themselves more discreetly and dexterously; they have found the Art of gaining the Ascendant over the *Indians*, and by their obliging Behaviour, have the Method of Subjecting them so entirely, that they do what they will with them; and as they give a good Example, those People are fond of the Yoak, and many of them become Christians. Those Missioners would be really praise-worthy, were they not accused of labouring only for their own Advantage, as they have done near *La Paz*, among the *Yongos*, and the *Moxos*, among whom they convert some to the Faith, and make many Subjects to the Society; so that they permit no other *Spaniard* to be among them, as they have done in *Paraguay*; but their Reasons may be seen in the 8th Volume of the *Lettres edifiantes & curieuses*.

As it has been found by long Experience, that the Commerce of the *Spaniards* is very prejudicial to the *Indians*, either in regard that they treat them very severely, putting them to hard Labour, or that they scandalize them by their licentious and disorderly Life; a Decree has been obtain'd from his Catholick Majesty, forbidding all *Spaniards* to enter that Mission of the *Moxos*, or to have any Communication with the *Indians* it is composed of; so that, if through Necessity, or by Accident, any *Spaniard* comes into that Country, the Father Missioners, after having charitably received him, and exercised the Rights of Christian Hospitality, send him afterwards into the Countries belonging to the *Spaniards*. This is a specious Pretence; but the Example of *Paraguay* seems to discover another End; for it is known that the said Society have made themselves Masters of a great Kingdom, lying between *Brazil* and the River of *Plate*, where they have settled so good a Government, that the *Spaniards* have never been able to penetrate into it, tho' the Governors of *Buenos Ayres* have made several Attempts, by Order of the Court of *Spain*. In short, besides their good Discipline, they have got among them *Europeans* to make Arms, and all other Trades necessary in a Commonwealth, who have taught others of the Natives. They breed up the Youth as is done in *Europe*, teaching them Latin, Musick, Dancing, and other proper Exercises, as I have been told from good Hands. I do not descend to the Particulars of that Government, of which I can only speak by Hear-say, and must avoid deviating from my Subject.

The Curates are but one half of the Misfortune of the *Indians* of *Peru*, the *Corregidores* or Governors treat them in the harshest manner, as they have always done, notwithstanding the Prohibitions of the King of *Spain*. *Herrera*, An. 1551, says, *The King commanded, that no Viceroy, or other Minister should make use of the Service of Indians, without paying them their Wages.* The same Author

again, Dec. 4. lib. 4. And that no Man passing through Indian Dwellings, or Towns, should receive Provisions from them, unless freely given, or paying the Value thereof. Nevertheless they oblige the *Indians* to work for them, and serve them in the Trade they drive, without giving them any thing, not even a Subsistence; thus they cause prodigious Numbers of Mules to be brought from *Tucuman* and *Chili*, which they do so arrogate to themselves the Right of selling, that no Man dares procure them any other way, tho' they sell them at an excessive Rate to the *Indians* of their Precinct, whom they force to buy their own Labour. The Authority the King allows them, that they only may sell such *European* Commodities as the *Indians* have occasion for, within their own Jurisdiction, supplies them with another Means of being Vexatious; thus, when they have not ready Money, they get Goods of their Friends upon Trust, which are sold to them at three times their real Value; for this Reason, that in Case of Death, they run a Hazard of losing the Debt, as happens almost Daily in that Country. It is easy to judge how much they afterwards raise them upon the *Indians*; and because they are by Way of Lots, or Species, the poor *Indian* must take a Piece of Cloth, or such other Commodity as he has no Occasion for; for by fair or foul Means he must buy what is allotted him.

The Governors are not the only Persons that take upon them to pillage the *Indians*; the Merchants and other *Spaniards* who travel, boldly take from them, and generally without paying for it, whatsoever they have Occasion for, without the Owners daring to speak one Word, unless he will run the Hazard of being pay'd in Blows; this is an ancient Custom, which is never the less used for having been prohibited, as has been said above; so that in many Places, those People being worn out with so many Vexations, keep nothing in their Houses, not even to eat; they sow no more *Maiz*, or *Indian* Corn, than is requisite for their Family, and hide in some Caves the Quantity they know by Experience



perience they have occasion for throughout the Year. They divide it into 52 Parts, for every Week in the Year, and the Father and Mother, who alone know the Secret, go every Week to bring out a Week's Allowance. There is no doubt but these People, being drove to despair by the Hardness of the Spanish Domination, only wish for an Opportunity to shake it off. *Do not imagine*, said the Scythians to Alexander the Great, *that those you conquer can love you; there is never any Affection between the Master and the Slave, the Right of making War ever continues in the midst of Peace.* Nay, from Time to Time they make some Attempts at *Cusco*, where they are the main Part of the City, but it being expressly forbidden them to carry Arms, without a particular Licence, and being besides nothing courageous, the Spaniards know how to appease them with Threats, and to amuse them with fair Promises. *Herrera*, to this Purpose, *Ann. 1551.* says thus, *It was ordain'd that no Indian should wear Arms, and that if any prime Man wore them, it should be with Leave; and this was understood of Sword and Dagger; because being much addicted to Drunkenness, many were kill'd and wounded, without any Check, to their own great Detriment.*

Besides, the Spanish Party is somewhat reinforced, by the great Number of Black Slaves they yearly have brought them from *Guinea* and *Angola*, by the way of *Portobelo* and *Panama*, where are the Factories of the Contractors. The Reason is, that not being permitted to keep the *Indians* as Slaves, they have less Regard for them than for the Blacks, who cost them much Money, and whose Number is the greatest Part of their Wealth and Grandeur. Those Blacks being sensible of the Affection of their Masters, imitate their Behaviour in respect of the *Indians*, and take upon them an Ascendant over them, which occasions an implacable Hatred betwixt the two Nations. The Laws of the Kingdom have also provided, that there should be no Alliances between them, for the Black Men and Women are expressly forbid having any Carnal Communication with

the *Indian* Men and Women, upon Penalty to the Black Males to have their Genitals cut off, and the Females to be severely bastinado'd; thus the Black Slaves, who in other Colonies are Enemies to the Whites, here take Part with their Masters: However, they are not permitted to wear any Weapons; because they might make an ill Use thereof, as has been sometimes seen.

The implacable Hatred this barbarous Behaviour has drawn upon the *Spaniards* from the *Indians*, is the Reason why the hidden Treasures and the rich Mines, the Knowledge whereof they communicate to one another, remain unknown and useles to both of them; for the *Indians* use them not for themselves, being satisfy'd to live poorly by their Labour, and in extreme Misery. The *Spaniards* fancy they enchant them, and tell several Tales of surprising Deaths befallen those who would have discover'd some of them; as that they had been on a sudden found dead and strangled, to have been lost in Fogs, and taken away in Thunder and Lightning; but no great Account is to be made of the Wonders they tell, for in Point of Credulity they are meer Children. It is certain, that the *Indians* know several rich Mines which they will not discover, for fear of being made to work in them, and to the end the *Spaniards* may not make their Advantage of them. This has appear'd several times, but more particularly in the famous Mine of *Salcedo*, a quarter of a League from *Puno*, on the Mountain of *Hijacota*, where they cut the Massy Silver in a Body, with Chisels; for it was discover'd to him by an *Indian* Mistress, who was desperately in love with him. The Malice and the Avarice of the *Spaniards* have produced Accusations against *Salcedo*, which caus'd him to be condemn'd to Death, upon a false Suspicion of revolting, because he grew too great, which occasion'd Civil Wars, about 50 Years since, about inheriting his immense Treasures; but during those Debates, the Mine was so fill'd with Water, that it could never since be drain'd, which the *Spaniards* look upon as a Judgment

from

from Heaven. The King of *Spain* having been convinced of *Salcedo's* Innocence, restored the Mine to his Son, with some Employments.

It is not to be thought strange, that the *Indians* should be so exact in keeping the Secret as to the Mines they know, since they are at the Trouble of fetching out the Ore, and have no Advantage by it. It must be own'd, that they alone are fit for that Work, where the Blacks cannot be employ'd, because they all die.

These are robust, and infinitely more hardy for Labour, than the *Spaniards*, who look upon Bodily Labour as scandalous to a White Man. To be a Man of a white Face, is a Dignity which exempts *Europeans* from working; but, on the other hand, they may, without any Disgrace, be Pedlars, and carry Packs in the Streets. The Author of *Bleau's* Geography was mistaken, when he said, Vol. X. that the *Spaniards* in the Mines must make use of *African* Blacks, or other Slaves, from the *East-Indies*, which they carry thither. Nothing is more remote from Truth, than this Trade of Slaves from the *East-Indies*.

It is pretended, that the Use of the *Coca*, that Herb so famous in the Histories of *Peru*, adds much to the Strength of the *Indians*. Others affirm, that they use Charms; when, for Instance, the Mine of Ore is too hard, they throw upon it a Handful of that Herb chew'd, and immediately get out the said Ore with more Ease, and in a greater Quantity. Fishermen also put some of that Herb chew'd to their Hook when they can take no Fish, and they are said to have better Success thereupon. In short, they apply it to so many several Uses, most of them bad, that the *Spaniards* generally believe it has none of those Effects, but by virtue of a Compact the *Indians* have with the Devil. For this Reason, the Use of it is prohibited in the Northern Part of *Peru*; and in the South it is allow'd in regard to those who work in the Mines, and cannot subsist without it. Those pretended Charms, or perhaps, with more Reason, the Vertue of that Leaf, are the Cause why the  
Inquisition

Inquisition punishes those who transgress against the Prohibition.

This Leaf is a little smoother, and less nervous, than that of the Pear-Tree; but in other respects very like it. Others compare it to that of the Strawberry, but much thinner; the Shrub that bears it, does not grow above four or five Foot high: The greatest Quantity of it grows 30 Leagues from *Cicacica*, among the *Tunnas*, on the Frontiers of the *Tungbos*: The Taste of it is so harsh, that it fleas the Tongues of such as are not used to it, occasions the spitting of a loathsome Froth, and makes the *Indians*, who chew it continually, stink abominably. It is said to supply the Want of Food, and that by the Help of it a Man may live several Days without eating, and not be sensibly weakened. Nevertheless, they are slothful and lazy at their Work, perhaps because that Herb, taking away their Stomach, they do not receive other Nourishment sufficient: It is thought to fasten the Teeth, and to ease their Distempers. Others say it is good for Sores. Be that as it will, it serves the *Indians* no otherwise than Tobacco does such as are used to chew it without swallowing.

Habit of  
Peru.

See Plate  
XXXI.

The Habit of the Natives of *Peru* differs little from that of the *Chilinians*, bating that the Women wear more than the others, a Piece of the Country Cloth of several lively Colours, which they sometimes fold on their Heads, and sometimes on their Shoulders, like an Amice; but along the Coast generally on their Arms, as the *Canons* carry their Aumusses. The Men, instead of the *Ponebo* before described, have a Surtout, made like a Sack, the Sleeves whereof come not down to the Elbow: Those have been added but of late. Formerly there were only Holes to put the Arms through, as may be seen in a Figure of the ancient *Ingas*, which I drew after a Picture painted by the *Indians* of *Cusco*. This was the first of a Succession of 12 others as big as the Life, representing the 12 Emperors they had since *Manco Capac* reduced into one Kingdom all *Taguantin Suyu*, so *Peru* was call'd before the Conquest by



1777  
The first of the month of June 1777  
The first of the month of June 1777  
The first of the month of June 1777  
The first of the month of June 1777



A Inca, ou Roy du Perou. B Coia ou Reine. ces deux figures ont été dessinées  
 d'après un tableau fait par les indiens du Cusco  
 C indien du Perou D indienne portant la manilla E leurs maisons  
 F moitié du plan de la Bicharra ou fourneau abruter de l'herbe Ichu G profil de Bicharra  
 H différentes formes de vases trouvés dans les tombeaux des anciens indiens

by the Spaniards, and gave them Laws, establishing among them the Adoration of the Sun, whom he made his Father. Whereupon I will here make a Remark, which is, that the Tradition of the Indians does not agree with what *Garcilasso de la Vega* has writ. According to his History, and that of *Montalvo*, only eight *Ingas* ought to be reckon'd; and, according to the Tradition of the Pictures, they reckon twelve; whose Names I here subjoin, with those of their Wives.

<i>Names of the Ingas.</i>	<i>Names of their Wives.</i>
1. Manco Capac.	Mama Oella Vaco.
2. Sinchi Roca.	Cora.
3. Llogue Yupangui.	Anavarqui.
4. Maita Capac.	Yachi.
5. Capac Yupangui.	Clava.
6. Inga Roca.	Micay.
7. Yavarvac.	Chicia.
8. Viracocha Inga.	Runtu.
9. Pachacuti.	Anavarqui.
10. Inga Yupangui.	Chinipa Oello.
11. Tupac Inga Yupangui.	Mama Oello.
12. Guaina Capac.	Coia Pilico Vaco.

*The Names of the Ingas according to the Historians.*

1. Mango Capac.	5. Pachacuti Inga Yupangui.
2. Inga Roca.	6. Topa Inga Yupangui.
3. Yaguarguaque.	7. Guaina Capac.
4. Vira Cocha.	8. Guascar y Atahualpa.

The

*Plate XXXI. Page 271. explain'd in English.*

- A. An Inga, or Sovereign of Peru.  
 B. The Coia, or Queen: These two Figures were taken from a Picture drawn by the Indians of Culco.  
 C. A Native of Peru.  
 D. An Indian Woman wearing a Mantle.  
 E. Their Houses.  
 F. Half the Plan of the Bicharra, or Furnace for burning the Plant call'd Icho.  
 G. The Profile of the same.  
 H. Several Sorts of Vessels found in the Tombs of the ancient Indians.

See Plate  
XXXI.

The Ensign of Royalty was a Tossel, or Piece of Fringe, of red Wool, hanging on the Middle of their Forehead. On the Day of putting that on, there was great Rejoicing among them, as it is with us in *Europe* at the Coronation of Kings, and many Sacrifices were offer'd, an infinite Number of Vessels of Gold and Silver being then expos'd to publick View, with little Figures of Flowers, and several Creatures, especially of those Sheep of the Country before spoken of. There are still some found in the *Huacac*, or Tombs, which now and then are accidentally discover'd.

*Race of Ingas.* Notwithstanding the Wars and the Destruction of the *Indians*, there is still a Family of the Race of the *Ingas* living at *Lima*, whose Chief, call'd *Ampuero*, is acknowledg'd by the King of *Spain* as a Descendent of the Emperors of *Peru*: As such, his Catholick Majesty gives him the Title of Cousin, and orders the Viceroy, at his entering into *Lima*, to pay him a Sort of publick Homage. *Ampuero* sits in a Balcony, under a Canopy, with his Wife; and the Viceroy, mounted on a Horse managed for that Ceremony, causes him to bow his Knees three times, as paying him Obedysance so often. Thus, at every Change of a Viceroy, they still, in Show, honour the Memory of the Sovereignty of that Emperor, whom they have unjustly deprived of his Dominions; and that of the Memory of the Death of *Atabualpa*, whom *Francis Pizarro* caused to be cruelly murder'd, as is well known. The *Indians* have not forgot him: The Love they bore their native Kings makes them still sigh for those Times, of which they know nothing, but what they have been told by their Ancestors. In most of the great Towns up the Country, they revive the Memory of that Death by a Sort of Tragedy they act in the Streets on the Day of the Nativity of the Virgin. They cloathe themselves after the ancient Manner, and still carry the Images of the Sun their Deity, of the Moon, and of the other Symbols of their Idolatry; as for instance, Caps in the Shape of the Heads of Eagles, of the Birds they



they call *Condors*, or Garments of Feathers with Wings, so well fitted, that at a Distance they look like Birds. On those Days they drink much, and have in a manner all Sorts of Liberty. Being very dextrous at throwing Stones, either with their Hands, or Slings, Wo be to them that light of their Strokes on those Festivals, and during their Drunkenness; the *Spaniards*, so much dreaded among them, are not then safe: The Discreetest of them shut themselves up in their Houses, because the Conclusion of those Festivals is always fatal to some of them. Endeavours are constantly used to suppress those Festivals; and they have of late Years debarr'd them the Use of the Stage, on which they represented the Death of the *Inga*.

The Manner of the *Indians* Dwellings in the Mountain Country is singular. They build their Houses round, like a Cone, or rather like our *Glass-Houses*, with such a low Door, that there is no going in at it, without bowing quite down, for the more Warmth. Wood being very scarce there, they burn nothing but the Dung of Mules, Guanacos and Llamas, when their Flocks are sufficient to furnish them: It is easily gather'd, because those Creatures, by natural Instinct, go all to empty themselves in one Place, near that where they graze. For want of this Dung, they burn *Icho*, above spoken of; but that Plant not being lasting, they have Earthen Furnaces, call'd *Bicharrat*, so contrived, that putting in some Handfuls now and then, they make several Pots boil at once, as may be seen by the Plans and Profile I here give, after the Manner of the Province of *Tarama*; where it appears, that when they would have only the third boil, they must fill the first and second with Water, to the end that the Flame, finding the nearest Passages stopp'd, may be forced to extend to the third Pot.

They generally use Earthen Ware, according to their ancient Custom, as appears by that which is found in the Tombs of the Ancients. I lighted on several of their Vessels, which may be seen in Plate XXXI. and among them one that is in the Collection of Rarities of Monsieur de La

*Falaise*, Chaplain of *S. Malo*, who has gather'd all the Earthen and Silver Vessels, *Indian Pictures*, and other Curiosities he could, of that Country, where he has been: That Vessel consists of two Bottles join'd together, each about six Inches high, having a Hole of Communication at the Bottom: The one of them is open, and the other has on its Orifice a little Animal, like a Monkey, eating a Cod of some Sort; under which is a Hole, which makes a whistling when Water is pour'd out at the Mouth of the other Bottle, or when that within it is but shaken, because the Air, being press'd along the Surface of both Bottles, is forced out at that little Hole in a violent Manner; whence I have concluded, that it might be one of their Instruments, since the Smalness and Shape of that Vessel did not make it commodious, or large enough to contain Liquors to drink. That Animal may be a Sort of Monkey they call *Corachupa*, whose Tail is naked, the Teeth all of a Piece, without any Division, and two Skins covering its Stomach and Belly, like a Vest, into which they put their young when they run away. There are none of them at the Coast; they are common along the River *Mississipi*, where they are call'd Wild Rats.

*Inhabitants.* The Number of the Inhabitants of that great Empire of *Peru*, which Historians represent by Millions, is considerably diminish'd since the Conquest by the *Spaniards*: The Work at the Mines has contributed much towards it, especially those of *Guanacavelica*, because, when they have been there a while, the Quicksilver does so penetrate into them, that most of them have a Quaking, and die stupid.

The Cruelties of the *Corregidores* and Curates have also obliged many to go and join the Neighbouring *Indian Nations* that are not conquer'd, not being any longer able to endure the Tyrannical Dominion of the *Spaniards*.

## Removal to another Ship.

**I**T being my Duty to endeavour to return to France as soon as possible, because the Time of my Leave drew near to an End, I contriv'd to get aboard the Ship that was to sail first, which was the *Mary Anne* of *Marseilles*, before spoken of, commanded by Monsieur *Pisson*, of the State of *Savoy*, who was willing to take me aboard, and of whom I receiv'd so many Civilities, during the Voyage, that I can never sufficiently commend that gallant Man, as well as Monsieur *Roux*, the Merchant of the same Ship.

## Departure from Callao.

**I** Embarked on *Monday* the 9th of *October*, and the next Day, being the 10th, about Noon we sail'd for *La Conception*, to take in the necessary Provisions and Stores for our Voyage, because they are there better and cheaper than at *Callao*.

The 14th of the same Month one of our Sailors died of an Impostume in his Stomach, which choak'd him. The 15th, after having sail'd four Days without an Observation, we found ourselves One, and according to some, Two Degrees farther to the Southward, than our Reckoning, in about 17; whence we concluded, that it was the Effect of the Currents. The three Ships which came out after us, found much about the same Error.

The Reason of these Currents is easily conceiv'd, when a Man is inform'd, that along the Coast of *Peru* the Sea always sets to the Northward; that continual Flux the same Way cannot be supported but by an Eddy Motion; the Waters therefore out at Sea must needs flow to the South, to succeed those that run along the Coast to the North. *Zarate*, in his History of the Conquest of *Peru*, ascribes that Current Northward to the S. W. Winds, which prevail along the Coast all the Year; and he adds,

N n 2

that

*Why Currents out at Sea are contrary to those on the Coast.*

that the Waters of the North Sea passing through the Streights of *Magellan* in a violent Manner, drive those of the Coast of *Peru* to the Northward, following the Bearing of the same. This last Argument, form'd at a Time when it had not been yet discover'd that there was a larger Passage beyond *Tierra del Fuego*, might have had some Resemblance of Truth, if the same Current had been observ'd along the South Part of *Chili*; but Time, which discovers all Things, has shewn, that instead of the North Sea's running into the South Sea, there is Reason to believe that the South Sea runs into the North Sea, since at *Cape Horn* the Currents generally set East, which several Ships have evidently perceiv'd, not only by their Reck'ning and by the Charts, on which there is no relying, but upon Sight of Land, according to the best Journals.

The common Winds, which prevail from E. S. E. to S. E. attended us to 37 Degrees of Latitude, blowing fresh, and oblig'd us to run upon a Stretch 200 Leagues out to Sea, and then they fell to South, S. S. W. and W. S. W. Making towards the Land in that Latitude, we perceiv'd an Alteration in the Waters, being still above 60 Leagues out at Sea. The Observation is generally made in those Parts, even at 80 Leagues Distance from the Land.

The Regularity of the Winds at E. S. E. and S. E. and the Breezes at S. W. along the Coast of *Peru*, made the Navigation so tedious, before the Method was found of running out to Sea, that Ships were six or seven Months sailing from *Limna* to *La Concepcion*, because they only advanced by the Help of some small Northern Blasts and the Land-Breezes, during the Night, and some Part of the Morning. This shews, that the Want of understanding Natural Philosophy among Sailors, is a greater Evil than is imagined; for, in short, I fancy that this Discovery, which is owing only to Chance, may be made by downright Reasoning.

The continual Flux of Air being from the East in the Torrid Zone at Sea, and not on the Land, where those Winds are not regular, must be made good by another Air coming

Token of being near Land.

Why the Winds are opposite beyond the Torrid Zone.

coming also from the Sea; consequently, beyond the Torrid Zone, the Flux of the Air must be quite contrary: Therefore, about the Tropicks the Winds must be much upon the West and South, as we draw near the Land, which lies almost North and South from the Streights of Magellan to Arica, in about 18 Degrees of South Latitude.

The Winds blowing always from the East in the great Ocean, along the Torrid Zone, is a Consequence of the daily Motion of the Earth from West to East, because that Zone containing the greatest Circles of the Sphere, is hurried away with more Rapidity, than the others which are nearer the Poles; and the Land having a grosser Bulk, it is also swifter than the Atmosphere of the Air which encompasses it: We must therefore consider the Resistance, as if the Air slow'd on an immoveable Body; and this Resistance the Wind makes on the Sea, and not on the Land, because the Inequality of the Surface, mix'd with the Cavities shut up between Mountains, carries off the lower Part which we breathe.

*Why the Wind is always the same in the Torrid Zone.*

*Why those Winds are regular at Sea, and not on the Land.*

Experience proves all the Circumstances of this Argument, because, as the South-Sea is the vastest, so there those Winds are most regular. In running from the Coast of Peru to China, the Winds are always East. In the Indian Sea they are the same, having on each Side opposite Winds, that is West Winds inclining more or less to the North or South, according as the Disposition of the Lands drives them back, and according to the Season; a Particularity, which it is needless to relate in this Place.

In short, it is also evident, that between the opposite Winds there must be Calms and Irregularities, occasion'd by the Eddies of the Air, which jostle one another, which we also had Experience of in 30 Degrees of South Latitude.

After a short Calm, we made Land at the Point of Lavapie precisely, and exactly according to my Reck'ning, making use of the Manuscript Chart I have spoken of, without

without regarding its Longitude, but only the Difference of the Meridian of *Lima*, transporting in like manner all the Coast to the Westward, according to the Observation of *Don Pedro Peralta*, one Degree 45 Minutes more to the West, than it was laid down in *la Connoissance des Temps*; at *Paris*, in 1712. The *Sieur Alexander*, a Frenchman, living at *Lima*, who has taken Observations apart and with *Peralta*, by the Eclipses of *Jupiter's* Satellites, placed it still 30 Minutes more to the Westward, that is, it is 80 Degrees 15 Minutes, or 5 Hours 21 Minutes Difference from the Meridian of *Paris*, according to *Monfieur Cassini's* Tables; but *Father Feuillée*, upon an Observation taken by the *Sieur Alexander Durand*, places it in 79 Degrees, 9 Minutes, and 30 Seconds.

Errors of  
Charts.

Those who had made use of the printed Charts of *Peter Goos*, *Van Keulen*, and *Edmund Halley*, counted themselves 70, 80, and even above 110 Leagues within the Land, according to the last, which are the worst of them for the *South Sea*, tho' the newest and corrected on the Coast of *Brazil* by Astronomical Observations. All the *French Ships* which return from *Callao* to *La Conception*, find the same Errors; whence it must be concluded, that it is about five Degrees more to the Eastward than *Lima*, and consequently I judged that it must within a very small matter be 75 Degrees 15 Minutes, or 5 Hours 1 Minute of Western Difference from the Meridian of *Paris*, which amounts to the 303 Degrees 51 Minutes from *Teneriff*. This Computation is also confirm'd by the Position of the Coast, very well known in many Places, which would be needless and very tedious to particularize; but in short, I found it rectify'd by the  
Obfer-

\* This Author, for Reasons unknown, seeks all Occasions to cavil at the Performance of *Mr. Halley*, in his Chart of the *Variations*. He might know that that Chart pretends to describe the *South Sea* no otherwise than by borrowing from former Maps, he having no Experience there, as himself acknowledges. But if *M. Frezier's* Sailors could be mistaken a Degree or two in Latitude, in five Days Sailing, as he owns, p. 275, what hinders but in this five Weeks Voyage, they might err three times as much in Longitude. A further Answer to this, and some other such like Exceptions, shall follow at the End of the Book.

Observation of Father Feuillée, who places *La Conception* in 75 Degrees 32 Minutes.

The Day after we had made Land, being the 13th of *Arrival at* *November*, 1713, we anchor'd at *Irequin*, in the Bay of *La Conception*, where we found 3 *French* Ships, the *S. John Baptist*, the *Francis*, and the *Peter*, laden with Goods, and commanded by *S. Mulo* Men. Fifteen Days after our Arrival, we careen'd at *Talcaguana*, upon a *Spanish* Ship: *Monday* the 25th of *November*, the *S. Michael*, a *Spanish* Ship, which came from *Callao* to load Corn, brought us the News of the Peace concluded between all the crown'd Heads in *Europe*, except the Emperor, which was like to be in a few Days. That Advice was confirm'd by *le Berger*, who arriv'd some Days after from the same Port.

The 8th of *December*, being the Feast of the *Conception*, *Feast of the* we saw it solemnized, as being the Patronage of the City, *Conception.* by an Assembly of Horsemen, composing 4 Troops of Pikemen a Horseback, and one of Foot, who by the ill Condition of their old Muskets with Rests, and some Firelocks they had, shew'd the Scarcity of Arms there is in the Country.

I will not here speak of the Ceremony of the Reception of a new Ensign; there was nothing in it remarkable, besides the manner how the Horsemen made their Horses trip it gently along; and the pleasant Trappings of his Horse, that cover'd him down to the Ground with Ribbons of all Sorts of Colours; to complete that State, he was preceded by two Pair of Wooden Kettle-Drums, and two Kettle-Drummers in Liveries, with naked Legs.

The next Day the President set forth an Order for all the *French* to depart the Kingdom, and be obliged to embark within two Days, with a Prohibition to allow them Provisions or Lodgings in the Town, or hire them Horses, under the Penalty of 500 Pieces of Eight; but those Prohibitions were still more strict, in regard of 7 Ships which had been fitted out at *Marseilles* by the *Genoese*, and were

*Order to dis-*  
*miss all the*  
*French.*

to come thither to trade, as was mention'd in the King's Order.

Nevertheless, after this Publication, there arriv'd in December and January, 7. French Ships, almost all of them commanded by Men of S. Malo. The first was the *Martial* of 50 Guns; the *Chancellor*, the *Mary Anne*, the *Fly-boat* under the Direction of the *Chancellor*, the *Well-beloved*, which had been detain'd at *Buenos Ayres*, with the Captain and the Supercargo; but the former having found Means to make his Escape, came by Land to his Ship at *La Conception*. The *Flying-Fish*, after having stay'd 8 Days in the Road, went away to *Valparaiso*, where he was refused the Port, so that he was oblig'd to proceed to *Quintero*, to join the *Assumption*, which was under the same Circumstances.

Besides those Ships arriv'd from *Europe*, several others of those that were upon the Coast came together; the *Holy Ghost*, and the *Prince of Asturias* arriv'd from *Callao*; the *Margaret* from *Pisco*; the *S. Barbara* Tartane, from *Valparaiso*; and the *Concord* from the same Place, bringing their Plate to be sent to *France*. So that there assembled at *La Conception* 15 Sail of French, great and small, and about 2600 Men.

Tho' the *Corregidor*, or Governor, a mortal Enemy to the Nation, sought all means to do Harm to the French, yet he could not have the Orders publish'd against the French put in Execution, either because he was hindred by his own Interest, endeavouring to extort some Contributions from them, or because that Multitude impos'd a little on him; or lastly, because the Inhabitants privately dissuaded him, that they might make the better Market of their Provisions. He was satisfy'd with offering all the Affronts he could to the Officers and Ships Crews, as hamstringing their Horses, when they went out of Town to take the Air; imprisoning them upon the least Pretence of Misbehaviour, and talking to them in publick in the vilest Language, and most provoking Expressions. That wicked Man,



Man, who was a small Merchant disguised, was always boasting, that he had hang'd up a *Frenchman* by the Heels, when he was only Lieutenant-General, and impudently added in the Street, that he should not die with Satisfaction till he had hang'd up another by those Parts which Modesty does not allow to name. Chance, which had furnish'd his wicked Inclination with an Opportunity to put to that Shame, upon the slight Pretence of an Insult, the Nephew of a Captain of a Ship belonging to the *East-India* Company, who happen'd to be in the Road, in the Year 1712, presented him another to execute his base Design in Part.

The Armourer of the Ship call'd the *Holy Ghost*, quarrelling with a *Spaniard*, ran him through, and kill'd him; he immediately clapp'd him in Gaol, and condemn'd him to Death; whatsoever Offers were made, he would not be mollify'd, nor brought to abate of that extraordinary Severity, in a Country where the most heinous of Crimes are not punish'd after that Manner; but we being upon the Point of Sailing, *Grout*, the Captain of the Ship, left that Man expos'd to the Malice of the *Corregidor*, either through Caution or Timorousness, whereas he might have demanded him to have him punish'd in *France*. Be that as it will, we were afterwards inform'd, that he had been rescued by disguised Friars, who for Money forced the Guards.

The same Day, being the 17th of *February*, the *Cesar* of *Marsailles* arriv'd from *France*, to trade along the Coast.

In fine, after having lain there 3 Months, we sail'd on the 19th of *February* on our Return for *France*, in Company with the *Shepherd*, the *Prince of Asturias*, and the *Holy Ghost*, which was admitted as *Commandore*, designing to put in together into *Babia de todos os Santos*, in *Brazil*.

PART III.

*Containing the Return from the South-Sea into France.*

*Departure from La Conception.*



We sail'd four Ships together, on the 19th of *February*, with a fresh Gale at S. W. and S. S. W. which carry'd us into 39 Degrees Latitude, and 80 Leagues out to Sea, where we found the Wind at W. and N. W. blowing fresh, and the Weather foggy, after which much Wind. We not being so good Sailors as our Comrades, crowding Sail to keep up with them, split our Main-yard in the middle.

The 9th of *March*, in 57 Degrees Latitude, and 74 Degrees 30 Minutes Longitude, we made a Signal of Distress, and they lay by for us. We immediately hoisted up a small Top-sail, instead of the Main-sail, to make the others lose as little time as possible. The next Day the Yard was mended and hoisted up in its Place.

The same crowding Sail to keep up with them, made us the next Day lose a great Stay-sail.

Our Comrades seeing us out of order on account of our Main-sail, conspired to leave us; little regarding the Parole of Honour they had given to convoy us to *France*, tho' before satisfy'd that we were not so good Sailors as they, and knowing that on that account we had waited for them above a Month. In short, we were apprehensive  
of

of meeting with Pirates, who were said to be on the Coast of *Brazil*, where Ships in their Return generally put in, and among the rest one of 300 Men, that had been fitted out at *Jamaica* for the *South Sea*; not to take Notice here of some Obligations the chief Men among them ow'd Monsieur *Pisson*; all these Considerations did not prevail with them, whose original Unworthiness got the upper Hand. On the 12th of *March* they made the best of their way, and got clear of us, by help of the Fog, so that by Five in the Evening we had lost Sight of them. It avail'd us little to hang out Lights at Night; they answer'd us not, and to as little Purpose we fired some Cannon the next Morning at Break of Day.

We were not much concern'd to lose the Company of Ships of *S. Malo*, on which there is so little relying, that it is become a Proverb as such, even among the People of the same Province; but we had reason to be concern'd for having follow'd them in the most foolish Navigation imaginable, which had brought us into 58 Degrees 40 Minutes Latitude, when we might pass with all Safety at least 40 Leagues more Northward, and have shortned our Voyage by six Days, without running so far into those hard Climates, where much must be endured, and Dangers unforeseen may be met with.

In short, whilst we were taken up, looking out for them *Unexpell'd* in the Fog, we discover'd, about 3 Quarters of a League *Ice on March* West from us, a Shoal of Ice, which might be at least 200 <sup>12, 1714. in</sup> Foot high above the Water, and above 3 Cables long. It <sup>58 Degrees</sup> was at first Sight taken for an unknown Island, but the <sup>30 Minutes</sup> Weather clearing up a little, it perfectly appear'd to be Ice, <sup>Latitude, and</sup> whose blewish Colour in some Parts look'd like Smoak; <sup>68 Degrees</sup> the small Pieces of Ice we immediately saw floating on both <sup>22 Minutes</sup> sides of the Ship, left us no farther room to doubt. <sup>Longitude W.</sup>

We were becalm'd in a very rolling Sea, and scarce had *Another Fleet* a small Gale at S. W. made us advance 2 Leagues N. E. that *of Ice.* is, E. N. E. as to the Globe, before we spy'd at E. and by N. about a League and a Quarter from us, another Fleet

of Ice, much higher than the former, which look'd like a Coast four or five Leagues long; the End whereof we could not well see, by reason of the Fog. Then frighted, with good Reason, at so unexpected a Danger, we lamented the fair N. W. Winds we had lost, to follow the ridiculous Navigation of the Faithless S. *Malo* Men. The Wind luckily freshning at West, permitted us to stand to the Northward, and in less than an Hour we saw no more Pieces of Ice.

Tho' those Parts have been frequented for 14 Years past, at all Times of the Year, very few Ships have met with Ice, so that it was not apprehended. Only the *Assumption*, commanded by *Povee*, in 1708, saw a vast Float, like a Coast. Our Comrade, who, lying near the Wind, had got to E. N. E. had no View of those we saw, but they affirm'd they had met with a large Piece in 54 Degrees and 3-qrs. This Accident may be a Warning to such as attempt to pass *Cape Horn* in Winter, as we did in the S. *Joseph*, because the Length of the Nights, and the Darkness of the Days, do not afford Opportunity of avoiding them easily. Perhaps the *Autumn* is the most dangerous Season, because then the Ice breaks and separates by means of the little Heat there has been in the Summer; however, being extremely thick, it does not thaw till the next Summer, for that Height which appears above the Water, is only the third part of the true Thickness, the rest being below.

Terra Australis  
Chimærica.

If it be true, as many pretend, that the Ice in the Sea is only form'd of the fresh Water, which runs down from the Land, it must be concluded that there is Land towards the South Pole; but it is not true that there are any more to the Northward than 63 Degrees of Latitude for the Extent of above 200 Leagues, from 55 of Longitude to 80; for that Space has been run over by several Ships, which the S. W. and S. S. W. Winds have obliged to stand far to the Southward, to double the End of the Lands. Thus those Southern Lands, or *Terra Australis* generally laid down in the old Charts, are meer Chimeras, which have been justly left out of the new Charts.

But

But tho' those false Lands have been put out, *Brouwers* De Fer's A-  
Streight has been again put in, which is no less imaginary *merica 1700*  
than *Terra Australis*; for all the Ships which have pass'd to  
the Eastward of *Staten Landt*, have found no other Land  
to the Eastward, either in sight of Land, or out at Sea,  
which is the way that almost all the Ships returning from  
the *South-Sea* pass. We ourselves doubtless pass'd through  
those Parts.

In fine, they have not yet corrected the Errors in the Lands *Error in Sea*  
that are known, which are very ill laid down, both as to *Charts.*  
Longitude and Latitude. There we see *Cape Horn* in 57  
Degrees and half and 58 Degrees Latitude, and above 20  
Leagues; and even 140 Leagues distant from Streight *le Maire*,  
tho' in Reality it is only in 55 Degrees 45 Minutes, and 40  
or 50 Leagues at most from Streight *le Maire*. I say nothing  
here of the Longitude, which is not positively known, but  
which may be pretty near ascertain'd by that of *La Con-*  
*ception*, whereof we have spoken, according to the greatest  
Conformity between the Computations, at 310, or 311  
Degrees from the Meridian of *Teneriff*, instead of 303, or  
304, as laid down in the Charts, which is at least 6 De-  
grees Difference. Thence also proceeds the Falsity of the  
laying down of the Coast, from that Cape to *Cape Pillars*,  
which lie S. E. by E. and N. W. by West, instead of S. E.  
by S. and N. W. by N. as they are laid down; and near *Longitude of*  
*Cape Horn.*  
*Cape Horn* it has a little more of the West, as has been  
observ'd by those who have seen a great Part of the Coast,  
which most Charts mark as unknown, with Points; but  
at present, tho' we are not perfectly acquainted as to the  
Particulars, we at least know the main bearing.

All these Considerations have mov'd me to gather Me-  
moirs for drawing of the Chart I here insert, in which may *See Plate*  
be seen two new Discoveries. The one is a Passage into *XXXII.*  
*Tierra del Fuego*, through which Chance carry'd the Tar-  
tane *S. Barbara*, commanded by *Marcenil*, out of the  
Streights of *Magallon* into the *South-Sea*, on the 15th of  
*May, 1713.*

About

*A new Channel in Terra del Fuego, discovered, Ann. 1713.*

About Six in the Morning they sail'd from Elizabeth Bay, steering S. W. and S. W. by S. they took the common Channel for that of the River *Mafiacre*, and were standing to S. W. on an Island, which they took for the *Dauphin's*, assisted by the Currents which favour'd them, and a good Gale at N. E. they ran along that Island, and an Hour after they had pass'd it, they found themselves in a large Channel, where on the South-side they saw no other Land, but a Number of small Islands among Breakers. Then perceiving they had miss'd their Way, they sought for Anchorage, to gain time to send the Boat to discover where they were. They found a little Bay, where they anchor'd in 14 Fathom Water, the Bottom gray Sand, and white Gravel.

The next Day, being the 26th of May, they made ready at 7 in the Morning, and after making some Trips to get out of the Bay, which is open to the E. S. E. they stood South,

Plate XXXII. Page 286. explain'd in English.

*A corrected Chart of the extreme Part of SOUTH AMERICA, in which are contain'd the new Islands discover'd by the Ships of S. Malo, since 1700, the Western Part whereof is still unknown. The Passage here call'd by the Name of S. Barbara, was lately found out by a Tartarian of the same Name, on the 25th of May, 1713.*

- A. The Island of S. Elizabeth.
  - B. The Island of S. Bartholomew.
  - C. The Island of Sea Wolves or Seals.
  - D. The Island of Louis le Grand.
  - E. The Dauphin's Bay.
  - F. Port Philippeau.
  - G. Cape S. Lewis.
  - I. The Company's Channel.
  - K. Mont au Pain.
  - L. Cape Garde, or Quad.
  - M. Cape S. Jerome.
  - N. Anchoring Place newly discovered.
- The Roman Numbers shew the Variation of the Compass.*

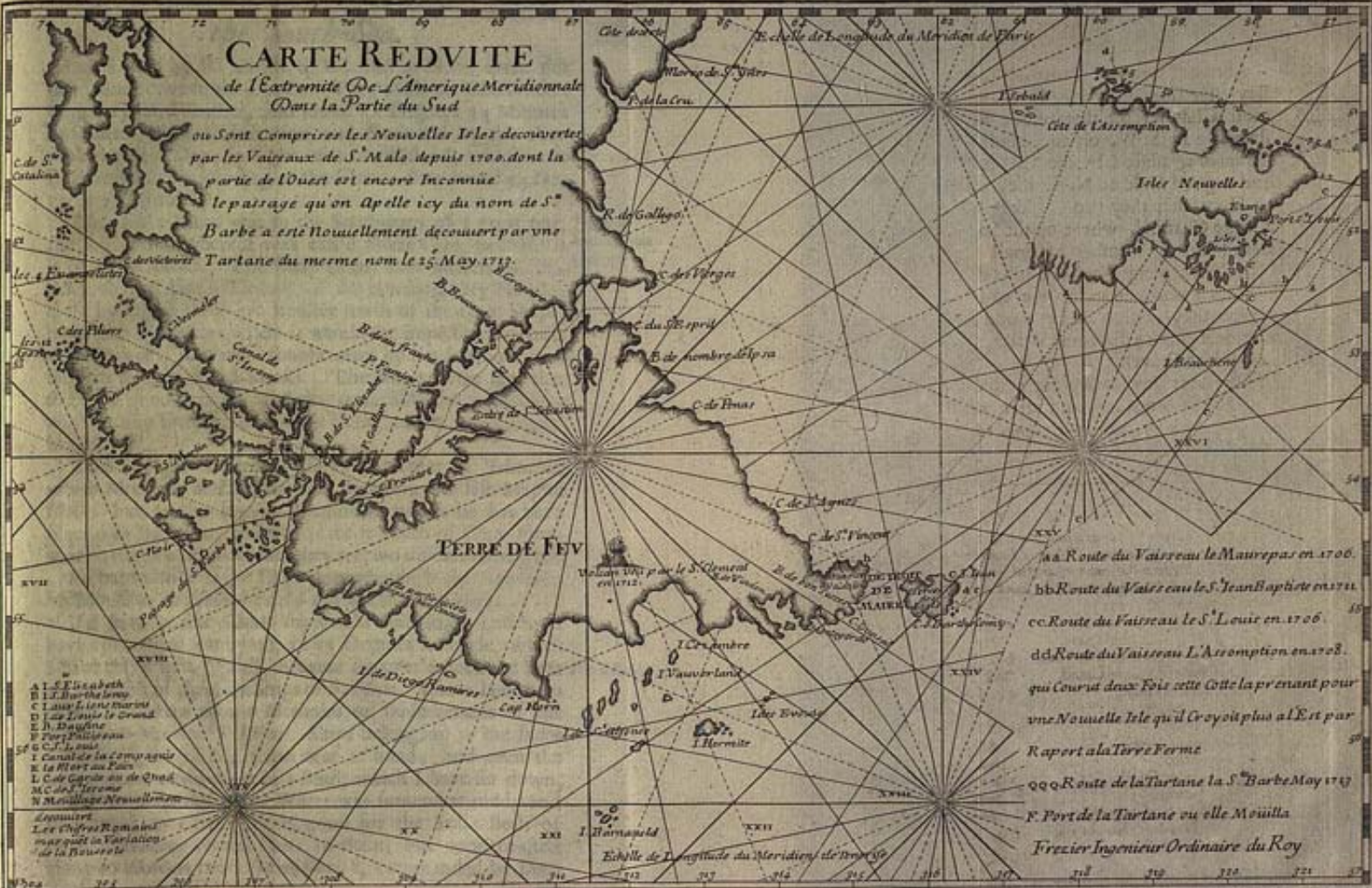
Echelle de Longitude du Meridien de Meridian of Paris.

- a a. The way of the Ship call'd le *Mau-repas*, in 1706.
- b b. The Way of the Ship call'd the *S. John Baptist*, in 1712.
- c c. The Way of the Ship call'd the *S. Lewis*, in 1706.
- d d. The Way of the Ship call'd the *Assumption*, in 1708, which ran twice along this Coast, taking it for a new Island, which is thought to be more to the Eastward in regard of the Continent.
- q q. The way of the Tartarian *S. Barbara*, in May 1713.
- F. The Port where the Tartarian anchor'd; Paris, a Scale of Longitude from the

# CARTE REDVITE

de l'Extremite De L'Amerique Meridionale  
Dans la Partie du Sud

ou Sont Comprizes les Nouvelles Isles decouvertes  
par les Vaisseaux de S. Malo depuis 1700. dont la  
partie de l'Ouest est encore Inconnue  
le passage qu'on Apelle icy du nom de S.  
Barbe a esté Nouvellement decouvert par vne  
Tartane du meeme nom le 25 May 1717.



- A I. S. Elisabeth
- B I. S. Bourne l'amy
- C I. S. de la Isle Marou
- D I. S. de la Isle le Grand
- E I. S. Daupine
- F I. S. Philippe
- G I. S. de la Isle
- H I. S. de la Compagnie
- I I. S. de la Mort au Pac
- L I. S. de la Isle de S. Barbe
- M I. S. de la Isle de S. Barbe
- N I. S. de la Isle de S. Barbe

Les chiffres Romains  
marquent la Variation  
de la Boussole

aa Route du Vaisseau le Maurepas en 1706.  
bb Route du Vaisseau le S. Jean Baptiste en 1711.  
cc Route du Vaisseau le S. Louis en 1706.  
dd Route du Vaisseau L'Assomption en 1708.  
qui Court deux fois cette Côte la prenant pour  
vne Nouvelle Isle qu'il Cr oyoit plus a l'Est par  
Raport ala Terre Ferme  
qqq Route de la Tartane la S. Barbe May 1717  
F. Port de la Tartane ou elle Mouilla

Frezier Ingenieur Ordinaire du Roy

# CARTE REDUITE



Carte de l'Europe

1. Le Cap Nord  
2. Le Cap Nord-Est  
3. Le Cap Nord-Ouest  
4. Le Cap Nord-Sud  
5. Le Cap Nord-Sud-Est  
6. Le Cap Nord-Sud-Ouest  
7. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud  
8. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud  
9. Le Cap Nord-Est-Ouest  
10. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Est  
11. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord  
12. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord  
13. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
14. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
15. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
16. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est  
17. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Est  
18. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Ouest  
19. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
20. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
21. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
22. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est  
23. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Sud  
24. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Sud  
25. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Nord  
26. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Nord  
27. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Est  
28. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Ouest  
29. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
30. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
31. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
32. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est  
33. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Est  
34. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Ouest  
35. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
36. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
37. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
38. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est  
39. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Est  
40. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Ouest  
41. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
42. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
43. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
44. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est  
45. Le Cap Nord-Est-Nord-Est  
46. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Nord-Ouest  
47. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Est  
48. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Ouest  
49. Le Cap Nord-Est-Sud-Ouest  
50. Le Cap Nord-Ouest-Sud-Est



South S. and by W. and S. S. W. and at Noon were got out from between the Lands. They took an Observation with very fair Weather, and found 54 Degrees 34 Minutes Latitude. This Observation was confirm'd by that they took the next Day, in Sight of a small Island, which bore East from them according to the Globe; they found 54 Degrees 29 Minutes.

That little Island was to the Southward of a great one, Taken so  
near the new  
Channel. the S. E. Point whereof was call'd *Black Cape*, because it is of that Colour. The little Island here spoken of, is a Rock shaped like a Tower, of an extraordinary Height; close by which there is a smaller much of the same Shape, by which it appears, that it would be impossible to miss that Channel, if it were sought after by its Latitude, upon such singular Land-Marks. The Ship's Crew say, that there is a good Bottom, and that great Ships may pass there without any Danger, the same being about two Leagues broad.

This Streight is perhaps the same as that of *Jelouchte*, which Monsieur de Lisle has laid down in his last Map of *Chili*; but as the *English* Memoirs, which he has been pleas'd to shew me, seem to place it South of Cape *Frowart*, it may be suppos'd that they are two different Streights.

Perhaps also it is the same through which the Squadron of Monsieur de Genner pass'd out in the Year 1696.

If I have in this Chart suppress'd imaginary Lands, I have also added some real, in 51 Degrees Latitude, which I have call'd new Islands, because discover'd since the Year New Islands. 1700, most of them by Ships of *S. Malo*. I have laid them down according to the Memoirs or Observations of the *Manrepa* and the *S. Lewis*, Ships belonging to the *India* Company, which saw them near at hand; and even the latter was water'd there in a Pool, which I have set down, near Port *S. Lewis*. The Water was somewhat ruddy and unfavoury; in other respects good for the Sea. Both of them ran along several Parts of them, but none coasted along so close as the *S. John Baptist*, commanded by *Dou- blet*.

Anican  
Islands.

blet of *Hovre*, who endeavour'd to pass into an Opening he saw about the Middle; but having spy'd some low Islands, almost level with the Water, he thought fit to tack about. This Range of Islands is the same that Monsieur *Fouquet* of *S. Malo* discover'd, and to which he gave the Name of *Anican*, the Person that had set him out. The Tracks I have traced will shew the Bearing of those Lands in regard to Streight *le Maire*, which the *S. John Baptist* was come out of, when he saw them, and with respect to *Staten Landt*, which the other two had seen before they found them.

Coast of the  
Assumption.

The North Part of those Lands, which is here under the Name of the Coast of the *Assumption*, was discover'd on the 16th of July 1708, by *Ponet* of *S. Malo*, who gave it the Name of the Ship he commanded. It was look'd upon as a new Land, about 100 Leagues East of the new Isles I speak of; but I have made no Difficulty to join it to the others, having convincing Reasons for so doing.

The first is, that the Latitudes observ'd to the Northward and to the Southward of those Islands, and the Bearing of the Parts known, answer exactly to the same Point of Reunion on the East-side, without leaving any Space between them.

The second is, that there is no Reason to judge that Coast of the *Assumption* to be East of the Isles of *Anican*; for Monsieur *le Gobien de Saint Jean*, who has been pleas'd to shew me an Extract of his Journal, judges it to lie South from the Mouth of the River of *Plate*, which being taken strictly, could not remove it above two or three Degrees to the Eastward, that is, about 25 or 30 Leagues; but the Diversity of Judgments is always a Token of Uncertainty. The first Time they saw that Coast, as they came from the Island of *S. Katharine*, they judg'd it to be in 329 Degrees; and the second, coming from the River of *Plate*, whither the contrary Winds had obliged him to go and anchor, after having attempted to pass *Cape Horn*, they judg'd it to be in 322 Degrees, and, according to some, in 324, on *Peter Goos* his Charts, the Errors whereof we have

have taken Notice of, at Page 305; so that little Regard is to be had to them. However, they reposing Confidence in them, thought themselves very far from the Continent; and reckoning they were too much to the Eastward, ran also 300 Leagues too far West in the *South-Sea*; so that they thought they had been running upon *Guinea*, when they made Land at *Hilo*; but the third and most convincing is, that we and our Comrades must have run over that new Land, according to the Longitude in which it was laid down in the Manuscript Chart; and it is morally impossible that a Ship should have had no Sight of it, being about 50 Leagues in Length E. S. E. and W. N. W. Thus there is no Room to doubt, but that it was the North Part of the new Islands, whose Western Part, which is yet unknown, Time will discover.

These Islands are certainly the same which Sir *Richard Hawkins* discover'd in 1593. Being to the Eastward of the Desert Coast, in about 50 Degrees, he was drove by a Storm upon an unknown Land; he ran along that Island about 60 Leagues; and saw Fires, which made him conclude that it was inhabited.

Hitherto those Lands have been call'd *Sibald's Islands*; because it was believ'd, that the three which bear that Name on the Charts were so laid down at Will, for want of better Knowledge; but the Ship the *Incarnation*, commanded by the Sieur *Brignon* of *S. Malo*, had a near View of them in fair Weather, in 1711, coming out of *Rio de Janeiro*. They are, in short, three little Islands, about half a League in Length, lying in a Triangle, as they are laid down in the Charts. They pass'd by at three, or four Leagues Distance, and they had no Sight of Land, tho' in very open Weather, which proves, that they are at least seven or eight Leagues from the new Islands.

In fine, I have set down in *Roman* Numbers the Variations of the Needle observ'd in those Parts, where its Declination is very considerable to the N. E. for we have observ'd

serv'd it to 27 Degrees, being to the Eastward of the new Islands.

After having got clear of the Ice, we were favour'd with a stiff Gale at S. W. and S. S. W. as far as 35 Degrees Latitude, and 39 of Longitude, where we had some Calms; and then the East Winds, which carry'd us as far as the Tropick of *Capricorn*. There we had four Days of Calm, and pouring Rain, so heavy, that the Cataracts of Heaven seem'd to be open'd.

After that, a little Wind came up; and on *Sunday*, the 8th of *April*, we had Sight of the Island of the *Ascension*, when, according to my Reckoning, we were to see it exactly on the Manuscript Chart corrected, as I have said, having taken our Departure from *La Conception* at 75 Degrees 15 Minutes, which answer to the 303 Degrees 5 Minutes from the Meridian of *Teneriff*, instead of 298, which is that of the *Dutch* Charts. Thus I found that Island in 32 Degrees 5 Minutes, which answer to the 346 Degrees 15 Minutes, that is, three more to the Westward than it is laid down. Those who had taken their Departure from *La Conception* on the Charts, found it 150 Leagues more to the West. This Error in Longitude is not the only one; it is also wrong laid down as to Latitude in 20 Degrees; for it is in 20 Degrees 25 Minutes, as I observ'd at Anchor near the Land.

This Island, call'd, according to the *Portuguese* Name; *Ascenzao*, to distinguish it from another *Ascension* Island, which is in about six Degrees towards the Coast of *Guinea*, is properly no other than a Rock, about a League and a half long, very easily to be known on the South and West Sides, by a round Body of Stone like a Tower, somewhat conical, and almost as high as the Island. On the East it forms as it were two Heads, which terminate the Cape. It is still better to be known by three small Islands, one of which is about half a League long, lying E. and by N. according to the Compass, from the great Island of the *Ascension*. Those three small Islands have caused some to believe,

lieve, that this Island and that of *Trinidad* were the same, grounding their Opinion on this, that some Ships have sought for the other in its Latitude, without finding it: But I\* also know, that Ships have seen it at their Return from the *East-Indies*, and have also water'd there in a Pool. It <sup>\*See the Post-  
script.</sup> is therefore without Reason, that *Edmund Halley* has in his great Chart suppress'd the Island of the *Trinity*, and given that Name to the Island of the *Ascension*, which he lays down very well in its Latitude of 20 Degrees 25 Minutes.

We were glad to have met with this Island, because we hoped to find Water there, and by that Means pursue our Voyage without losing Time, by putting in any where.

We therefore came to an Anchor at West, five Degrees <sup>Anchoring.</sup> North, or W. and by N. according to the Globe, from that Peak, about four Cables Length from the Shore, in 30 Fathom Water, the Bottom Sand and Owze. The Boat was immediately sent to find shoaler Water, and found it in 25 Fathom, large black Sand, N. N. W. of a small Cleft Island, more to the Northward than we.

The next Day the Boat was sent to look out for Water, and found a curious Fall, which would have supply'd a whole Squadron; but the Shore is so set with great Stones, and the Sea was so rough, that there was no going a Shore without Danger. Thus, during the whole Morning, we could get but two Casks of Water, which stunk in 3 or 4 Days, for which Reason, doubt may be made, whether it comes from a Spring. Thus our fine Project miscarry'd, and we were obliged to resolve to put into *Bahia de todos os santos*, where the appointed Rendezvous was.

*Monday* the 9th of *April* we made ready, and perceiv'd that there was near the Island a Current setting to the N. W. and N. N. W. for the Calms kept us there some Days.

At length, the 20th of the same Month, in 12 Degrees <sup>Coast of Bra-  
zil.</sup> 50 Minutes Latitude, we had Sight of the Coast of *Brazil*, which we found more remote from the Island of the *Ascension* than is laid down in the Charts of *Peter Goos*, *Robin*, *Vankeulen*, and *Loots*, almost the one half in some of them,

and a Third in others; for there are about nine Degrees of Longitude between the Island and the nearest Land.

From what I have said, it is easy to conclude what an Error they must be in, who had taken their Measures by the Charts; for having taken their Departure from *Le Conception*, 5 or 6 Degrees too far to the West, and the Coast of *Brasil* being advanced too far East by as many Degrees, they found an Error of at least 200 Leagues, according to which they must have penetrated into the Land, as happen'd to the Ships of our Squadron, by their own Confession. These Errors have always been much the same with all Ships that have put into *Brasil*, or the Island of *Fernando de Noronha*, in their Return from the *South-Sea*.

The Ignorance of the Theory, which prevails among our Navigators, made them ascribe this Difference in Judgment, and the Charts, to the Currents, which they said did set East, without being undeceiv'd by a sort of uniform Error, not only in their making the Land of *Brasil*, but even that of *France*, after a Navigation of 14 Years, tho' they saw they found the Lands of *Brasil* too far to the West; and that correcting their Point on the Charts, they found the Land of *Europe* too far to the East, much about the same Quantity or Distance, as they had made their Reck'ning. In this they at least discover their want of Curiosity in not seeking to be better inform'd; but they are still more excusable than their principal Hydrographers, who ought to make their Advantage of the Observations which the Gentlemen of the Academy of Sciences publish in their *Connoissance des Temps*. But those things being too far above their Reach, to understand and reduce them to the common Calculation of the *Dutch* Maps, which are commonly made use of, they are guilty of so much Folly, as to despise them, as the Productions of Learned Men who want Experience. Thus in a Manuscript Instruction *D. G. of S. Malo* affirms, that the Coast of *Brasil* is right laid down on those same Charts, wherein, nevertheless, according

according to the Observations taken at *Olinde* and *Cayenne*, there must be six Degrees Error to the East.

The next Day after we had made Land, being *Sunday* in the Morning, we saw a small Vessel of two Masts, which seem'd to stand as we did S. W. After having lain by a little, he stood about directly upon us, bearing up close to the Wind, with only the Main Course. This extraordinary working, made us take him for a Pyrate; and the rather, because he seem'd to be *English* built; we put up our Fights, and expected him with our Arms in our Hands. When he was within Cannon Shot, we put up *French* Colours, and he immediately answer'd with *Portuguese*; still lying as close upon the Wind as he could. We could never know what to think of it; for when we came to *Bahia de todos os Santos*, they assured us, that no Ship had sail'd from thence in a long time.

We held our Course towards the Land, on which many white Spots appear'd; then stood off at Night, and yet when it was Day found ourselves within a League of the Coast, the Sea running high, the Wind in Gusts, and the Rain pouring, which made us fear, because the Coast is foul.

That foul Weather obliged us to stand out to Sea, to expect some more favourable to make the Bay, and to the Southward against the Currents, which set us to the N. E. as is observ'd in the *Grand Flambeau de Mer*, at this Season of the Year; that is, from *March* till *September*, during which time the S. E. and S. S. E. Winds also prevail; so that Ships must keep to the Southward as is there discreetly advised.

At length, on the 26th of *April*, we discovered *Praya de Zumba*, a Place very easy to be known by an infinite Praya de Zumba. Number of white Spots, which look like Linnen hung out to dry, as far as within 2 or 3 Leagues of *Cape S. Anthony*. The Interval *Bahia de todos os Santos* makes between that Cape, and the Isle of *Taporica*, makes it look discontinued, when

Plate  
XXXIII.

Map to  
show the Bay  
of all Saints.

Taporica  
Island.

Mouth of the  
Bay.

when seen to the N. W. and the Island, or the Larboard Coast very confusedly.

Drawing near the Land, Fort *S. Anthony* appears at the End of the Cape, in the midst whereof is a Tower, ending at the Top in a Point, which looks like a Pavillion.

Before that Cape is a flat Rock, on which there are 4 or 5 Fathoms Water at low Ebb. It runs out about a Quarter of a League S. W.

The Island of *Taporica*, which forms the Mouth on the Larboard-side, is still fouler, having before it a Shoal, which stretches out above a League S. E. and is seen to break very high upon the Ebb; so that Ships must bear up due North along the middle of the Channel to get in safe, and take heed of the Tides, which are of 3 Hours and 3 Quarters.

The Mouth being two Leagues and a half wide, Ships may pass out of the Point Blank reach of the Cannon of the Forts of *S. Anthony* and *S. Mary*; so that they are less to be apprehended in passing, than they are fit to obstruct a Descent in the Sandy Creeks on the Starboard-side.

As we come in by Degrees, we discover on the same side, on an Eminence, one part of the City, which affords a pleasant Prospect enough, extending to the most Northern Cape, on which is the Fort of *Our Lady of Monserrat*.

In that Bay, at the Foot of the City, is the Port where the *Portuguese* Ships come to an Anchor, closed on the South and West-side by the Bank call'd *Alberto*, on which the Water Castle stands, which might be call'd a *Pate*, or Horse-shooc, by reason of its Roundness. In 1624, when the

---

Plate XXXIII. Page 294. explain'd in English.

Vue de Reconnoissance du Cap Saint Antoine, Thus the Land appears for knowing of Cape S. Anthony.

The Plan of the Bay of all Saints, on the Coast of Brasil, in 13 Degrees of South Latitude.

Brye de tous les Saints, The Bay of all Saints.



Vue de Reconnoissance du cap Saint Antoine

no 26



PLAN  
de la Baye de tous les Saints  
Sciencé a la Côte du Brésil  
par 17<sup>e</sup> de lat. australe





the Dutch took the Town of *San Salvador*, Admiral *Willekeur* possess'd himself of that Battery, which was then of 10 Pieces of Cannon; and in 1638, when Prince *Maurice* would take that Town from the *Portuguese*, he also began by possessing himself of *Fort Albert*, which obliged the *Portuguese* to cast great Stones into the Sea quite round it, to render the same inaccessible for Ships, and even for Boats.

To enter this Port, Ships must bear up a little to the North, within the Fort of *Monserrat*, and when they bear East or West with the End of the Town, they are at the Mouth of the Port, and pass the Bank *Alberto*.

Entering the Bay we discover'd 3 Ships, which were out of the common Anchoring-Place, and by the Signals perceiv'd they were our Comrades. In our Passage we saluted the Flag of the *Holy Ghost*, which answer'd us, and we proceeded to anchor S. and by W. of the Fort of *Monserrat*, and W. and by N. of the Castle, in 12 Fathom Water, a bad Bottom of Sand and Rock. We would have removed to another Place; but the Governor who had not permitted the *French* Ships to put into the usual Port, would not allow us to come near the Land, where the Bottom is better; so that we there lost a Cable and an Anchor 10 Days after, wherein we were little beholden to him, no more than the *Shepherd* and the *Fidel*, or Faithful, who had had the like Mischance. This last was also one of those, whom the News of the Peace put upon hastening to the *South Sea*, as to a Treasure that is going to be shut up; but they were going to the Fag-end of that Trade which they have entirely ruin'd by over-stocking of the Country with Goods.

Being come to an Anchor, we saluted the City with Seven Guns, and were answer'd by the like Number.

Then we went about getting Provisions, Water and Wood, and furnishing a Main-Yard, and a Mizzen Mast, ours being unfit for Service.

During

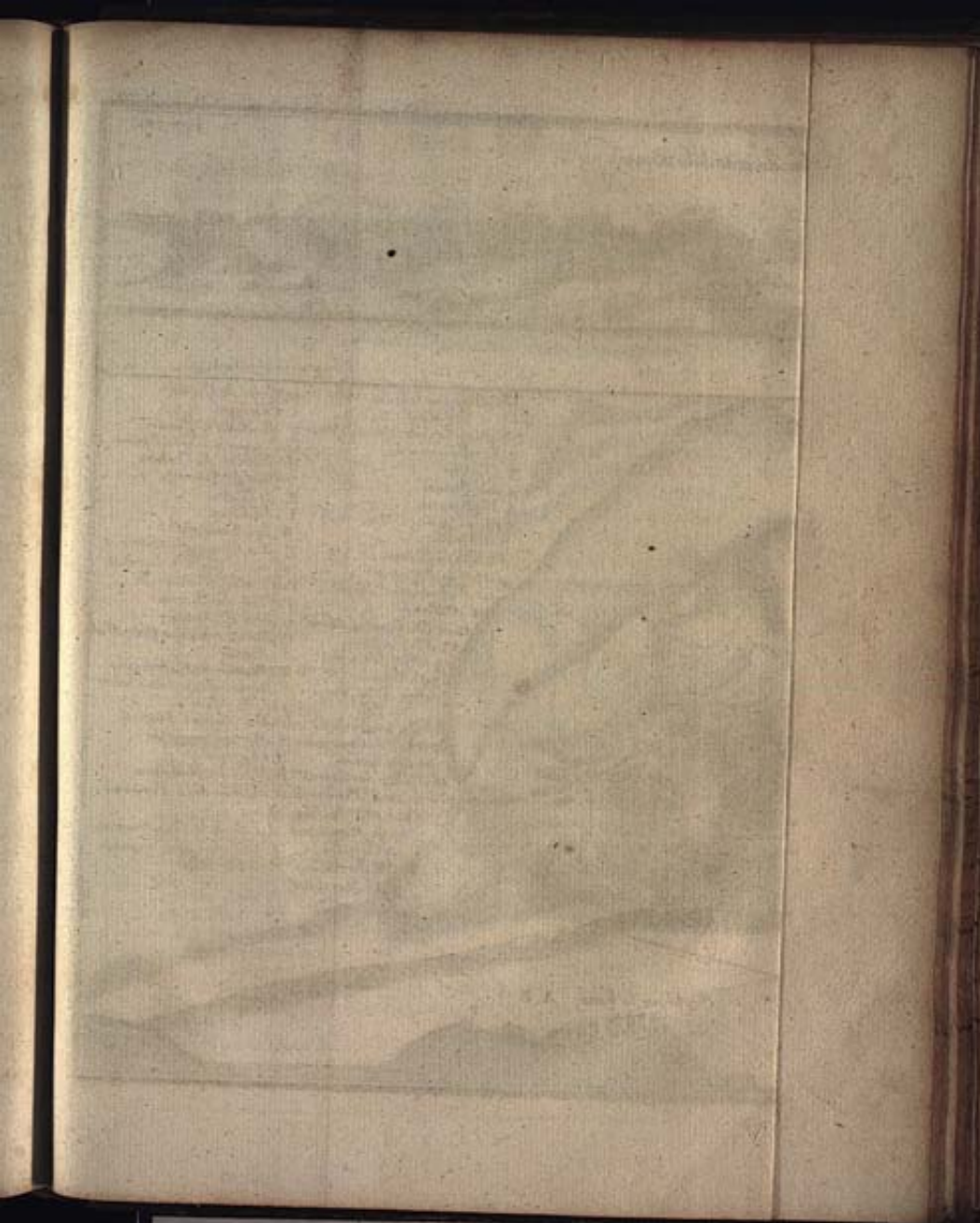
During that Time, I employ'd myself in seeing the City, and the Parts about it, as far as was in my Power, notwithstanding the almost continual Rains, intermix'd at Intervals with scorching Heats. Those Inconveniencies, together with our short stay, would not permit me to take so exact a Plan as I could have wish'd. However, I can give it as a very good Idea, differing but little from the Truth in what is essential. Besides, it would have been no Advantage to me, if we had stay'd long there; some indifereet Persons of our Squadron having made me known to the Portuguese Officers for an Engineer, it was not proper for me to expose myself to some Affront in a Place, where the Memory of the Expedition to *Rio de Janeiro*, still fresh, render'd our Nation suspected. In short, they had doubled the Guards every where, and even erected new Corps de Garde, because there were already five French Ships in the Road, among which were two of Force, the one of 50, and the other of 70 Guns.

*The Description of the City of S. Salvador, or S. Saviour, the Capital of Brasil.*

Plate  
XXXIV.

THE Town which our Charts call *S. Salvador*, or *S. Saviour*, is in the Language of the Country plainly call'd *Cidade da Bahia*, the City of the Bay. It is in about 12 Degrees 45 Minutes of South Latitude, on an Eminence of about 100 Fathoms, form'd by the East-side of the Bay of all Saints. The Access to it is so difficult, by reason of its great Steepness, that they have been forced to have recourse to Machines for carrying up, and letting down of Goods from the Town to the Port.

The Plan of the Upper Town is as regularly drawn, as the Unevenness of the Mountainous Soil would permit; but tho' the Streets there are Straight, and of a good Breadth, most of them have so steep a Descent, that they would



704

planch. XXXIV

Vue de la ville de S<sup>t</sup>. Salvador du coté de la Baye

page 270



**PLAN**  
**DE LA VILLE**  
 DE  
**S<sup>t</sup>. SALVADOR**  
 Capitale du Brésil  
 Située dans la Baye de tous les côtés  
 Par 12° 45' de latitude australe  
 Echelle de 500 toises  
 1774



- |   |  |
|---|--|
| 1 La Sé ou la Cathédrale s <sup>t</sup> . Sébastien             | D Corps de Garde                                     |
| 2 La Miséricorde  | E Casernes   |
| 3 L'Alcaide   | F Magasin à Poudre                                   |
| 4 Les Jezuïtes  | G Remparts de terre Rouée                            |
| 5 S <sup>t</sup> . François                                     | H Batterie du Château                                |
| 6 Chap <sup>e</sup> . du bon Ouvre                              | I Place du Palais                                    |
| 7 S <sup>t</sup> . Claire                                       | K Le Palais  |
| 8 N <sup>o</sup> . S <sup>t</sup> . da Palma                    | L Audiance   |
| 9 N <sup>o</sup> . S <sup>t</sup> . do Rosario                  | M La Monnoye   |
| 10 S <sup>t</sup> . Bento, ou S <sup>t</sup> . Benoist          | N Machines pour monter et descendre Les Marchandises |
| 11 S <sup>t</sup> . Pedro                                       | O Place de la Cathédrale                             |
| 12 ce. Barbones ou Capains                                      | P Place des Jezuïtes                                 |
| 13 S <sup>t</sup> . Thome                                       | Q Fort S <sup>t</sup> . Antoine                      |
| 14 N <sup>o</sup> . S <sup>t</sup> . da Carmel                  | R Batterie neuve a fleur d'eau                       |
| 15 S <sup>t</sup> . Antonio                                     | S Agade  |
| Colisee de la Basse Ville                                       | T Batterie de S <sup>t</sup> . François              |
| 16 Les Jezuïtes   | V Batterie du port du Chaloupe                       |
| 17 N <sup>o</sup> . S <sup>t</sup> . da Conceicao ou Conception | W X Pato   |
| 18 S <sup>t</sup> . Ana ou Ourro S <sup>t</sup>                 | Y Batterie de l'Arsenal                              |
| 19 S <sup>t</sup> . Barbara                                     | Z Batterie projetée                                  |
| 20 N <sup>o</sup> . S <sup>t</sup> . da Pila                    | a Arsenal  |
| Lieux Remarquables  | b Port de Chaloupe                                   |
| A Fort Praya  | c Atelier de la Construction                         |
| B Fort Diego  | d Cote de la Construction                            |
| C Port Noue   | e Chemins pour monter la Ville                       |

Levesque delin.

would be impracticable for our Coaches, and even for our Chairs.

The rich People, notwithstanding that Inconveniency, do not go a Foot; being always industrious, as well in *America*, as in *Europe*, to find Means to distinguish themselves from the rest of Mankind, they would be ashamed to make use of the Legs which Nature has given us to walk. They lazily

Q 9

Plate XXXIV. Page 297. Explain'd in English.

A Prospect of the City of San Salvador next the Bay.

The Plan of the City of San Salvador, the Capital of Brasil, in the Bay of All Saints, and in 12 Degrees 45 Minutes of South Latitude.

A Scale of 300 Fathoms.

References in the Upper Town.

Churches.

1. The Cathedral, or S. Saviour.
2. The Misericordia, or House of Mercy.
3. The Bishop's Palace.
4. The Jesuites.
5. S. Francis.
6. The Chappel of the 3d Order.
7. S. Clare.
8. Our Lady of Palma.
9. Our Lady of the Rosary.
10. S. Benedict.
11. S. Peter.
12. The Capucins.
13. S. Teresa.
14. The Carmelites.
15. S. Anthony.

Churches in the Lower Town.

16. The Dominicans.
17. Our Lady of the Conception.
18. S. Elmo.
19. S. Barbara.
20. Our Lady de Pila.

Places of Note.

- A. The Fort on the Strand.
- B. Fort James.
- C. New Fort.
- D. Corps du Garde.
- E. Casernes.
- F. The Powder Magazine.
- G. A ruin'd Rampart of Earth.
- H. The Battery of the Castle.
- I. The Palace-yard.
- K. The Palace.
- L. The Court of Justice.
- M. The Mint.
- N. Cranes to draw up and let down Goods.
- O. The Square before the Cathedral.
- P. The Jesuites Square.
- Q. Fort S. Anthony.
- R. A new Battery level with the Water.
- S. The Watering Place.
- T. S. Francis's Battery.
- V. The Battery for the Port where the Boats lie.
- X. A Path, or Platform.
- Y. The Battery of the Arsenal.
- Z. A projected Battery.
- a. The Arsenal.
- b. The Port for the Boats.
- c. The Docks and Tards.
- d. The Creek for building.
- e. Ways to go up to the Town.

Profil par la Ligne A. B. The Profile by the Line A. B.

Place XXXV. lazily cause themselves to be carry'd in Beds of fine Cotton, hanging by the Ends to a Pole, which two Blacks carry on their Heads or Shoulders; and to be there conceal'd; and that neither the Rain, nor the Heat of the Sun may offend them, that Bed is cover'd with a Tetter, to which they hang Curtains to be drawn when they please. Thus lying along there at their Ease, with the Head on a rich Pillow, they are carry'd about more gently than in Coaches or Chairs. Those Cotton Hammocks are call'd *Serpentins*, and not *Palankins*, as some Travelers say.

If this great Unevenness of the Ground is inconvenient to the Inhabitants, it is on the other hand very advantageous to the Fortifications. With a small Expence this might be made a Town morally impregnable; Nature has there made Ditches and Outworks flanking one another, where the Ground might be disputed Inch by Inch. The East-side is almost inaccessible, as may be seen in the Profile, by the Line A. B. being almost cover'd by a deep Pool, having 15 or 20 Fathom Water in some Places, which lies down in a Vale between two Hills, the Ascent whercof is very steep.

From that Pool, which comes very near the Sea, on the North-side, they have drawn a little Stream, that serves for Ships to Water.

In short, to approach the Town on the South-side, the Landing must be near the Ports I have mention'd, or farther in among the Batteries, which are on the Coast, which would certainly be very difficult, tho' the Opposition were never so small.

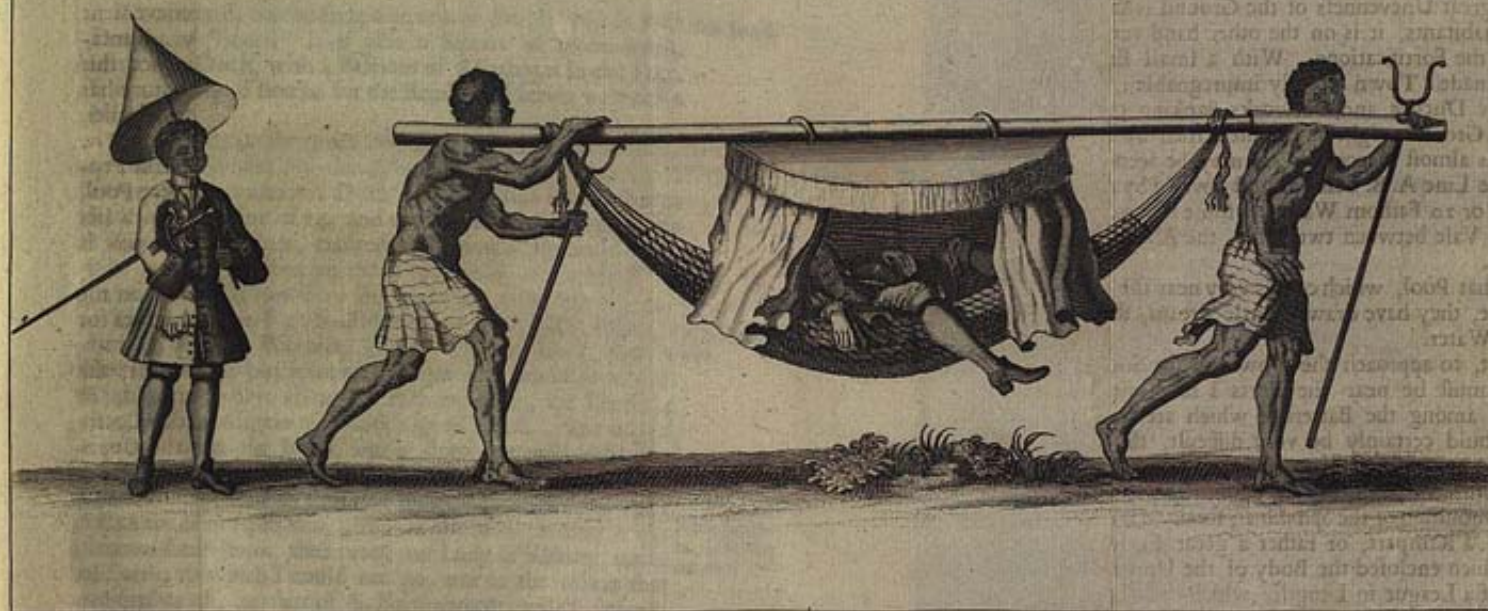
The Dutch, in 1624, having taken this Place, when under the Dominion of the Spaniards, fortify'd it on the Land-side with a Rampart, or rather a great Entrenchment of Earth, which enclosed the Body of the Upper Town, the 3<sup>d</sup> Part of a League in Length; which did not prevent the Spaniards retaking of it the next Year 1625. That Enclosure is now quite ruin'd; it has been neglected to endeavor

See Plate  
XXXIV.

your



A Voyage to



J.B. Goussier Sculpteur

...ally can be ...  
 ...ing by the ...  
 ...their ...  
 ...the ...  
 ...them, ...  
 ...ing ...  
 ...ing ...  
 ...in ...  
 ...and ...  
 ...If ...  
 ...to ...  
 ...grove ...  
 ...might ...  
 ...there ...  
 ...where ...  
 ...Esch ...  
 ...sic ...  
 ...paying ...  
 ...I ...  
 ...very ...  
 ...From ...  
 ...North ...  
 ...Said ...  
 ...to ...  
 ...I ...  
 ...which ...  
 ...The ...  
 ...of ...  
 ...do ...  
 ...each ...  
 ...I ...



your to fortify the Approaches by a Number of Forts made in several Places.

The first, on the South-side is the *New*, or *S. Peter's* S. Peter's Fort Fort, made of Earth, faced with Stone-work, which they were working upon when we were there. It is a regular Square, with 4 Bastions, of 20 Foot in the Face, as much Curtin, and 4 Fathoms Flank; furnish'd with Cannon, which on the one side plays upon the Road, but much under Metal; about it is a little Ditch, five or six Fathoms wide.

The second, on the same side nearer the Town, is Fort Fort James *Diego*, or *James*. It is also a Square of Stone-work, without a Ditch, with 4 Bastions of 8 Fathoms in the Face. It is a Battery of Bombs for the Road, and serves now for a Magazine.

The third, is the great Powder Magazine, call'd *Casa da Polvora*, or the Powder-House. It is also a Square of Stone-work, without a Ditch; the Bastions of 6 Fathoms Face, the Curtins of 14, and the Flanks of 2. It contains 8 distinct Magazines, vaulted and cover'd Pyramid-wisè, with as many Globes on the Tops; said to contain 2 or 3000 Barrels of Powder; but there are often under 100.

The fourth, is Fort *S. Anthony*, on the North, which is S. Anthony's Fort directly over the Watering-Place, of Stone-Work, Square like the others, but somewhat larger and better contriv'd. The Bastions have about 16 Fathoms Face, the Flanks 4 or 5, and the Curtin 25, with a good Ditch. One side of it plays upon the Road, but it does not well defend a Depth, by which Men may come under Covert to the Counterscarp, and by the same way go to the Town. Half a Cannon Shot from this, towards the N. E. is Fort Nossa Senhora da Victoria *Nossa Senhora da Victoria*, the Fort of our Lady of Victory, made of Earth, to which I could not go, nor to the others that are farther off, as that of *S. Bartholomew*, which defends a little Harbour, where Ships may careen; that of *Montserate*, nor to those at the Entrance, before mention'd.

Troops.

To secure these Forts and the Town, the King of Portugal maintains six Companies of Regular Forces, uniformly cloth'd, and not in brown Linnen, as *Dampier* says; that is alter'd; they are well disciplin'd and pay'd; those I saw were in a very good Condition, well arm'd, and full of fine Men; they want nothing but the Reputation of being good Soldiers.

The City of *Babia*, as is well known, is the Capital and Metropolis of *Brazil*, and the usual Seat of a Viceroy; however, the Governor has not always that Title, Witness he that was in our Time.

Manners.

The Inhabitants have an Out-side good enough as to Politeness, Neatness, and the manner of giving themselves a good Air, much like the *French*. I mean the Men only, for there are so few Women to be seen, that but a very imperfect Account can be given of them. The *Portuguese* are so jealous, that they scarce allow them to go to Mass on *Sundays* and Holidays; nevertheless, in Spight of all their Precautions, they are almost all of them Libertines, and find Means to impose upon the Watchfulness of their Fathers and Husbands, exposing themselves to the Cruelty of the latter, who kill them without Fear of Punishment, when they discover their Intrigues. Instances hereof are so frequent, that they reckon above 30 Women murder'd by their Husbands within a Year. Fathers shew more Humanity towards their Daughters; when they cannot hide their Shame by marrying them off, they turn them out of Doors, and then they are at Liberty to be common. A fine Expedient!

Quod licet  
ingratum  
est, quod non  
licet acris  
urit, *Ovid.*  
Matres om-  
nes filias in  
peccato adju-  
trices, auxi-  
lio in paterna

Whether it be the Effect of the Climate, or of our natural Bent after that which others endeavour to keep from us by Force, there is no need of any extraordinary Efforts to be admitted to the last Familiarity. The Mothers help the Daughters to keep out of the sight of their Fathers, either through Compassion, or out of a Principle of the Law of Nature, which enjoins us to do by another as we would be

be

be done by; but in short, tho' they did not themselves meet Men half way, the Scarcity of white Women would draw the Crowd after them; for 19 in 20 of the People we see there, are Blacks, Men and Women, all naked, except those Parts which Modesty obliges to cover; so that the City looks like a new *Guinea*. In short, the Streets are full of none but hideous Figures of Black Men and Women Slaves, whom Delicacy and Avarice, rather than Necessity, have transplanted from the Coast of *Africa*, to make up the State of the Rich, and contribute towards the Sloth of the Poor, who ease themselves of their Labour on them, so that there are always above 20 Blacks to one White. Who would believe it? there are Shops full of those poor Wretches, who are exposed there stark naked, and bought like Cattle, over whom the Buyers have the same Power; so that upon slight Disgusts, they may kill them almost without Fear of Punishment, or at least treat them as cruelly as they please. I know not how such Barbarity can be reconciled to the Maxims of Religion, which makes them Members of the same Body with the Whites, when they have been baptized, and raises them to the Dignity of Sons of God, *All Sons of the most High*; doubtless they will not suffer themselves to be convinced of that Truth; for those poor Slaves are too much abused by their Brethren, who scorn that Relation.

I here make this Comparison, because the *Portuguese* are Christians who make a great outward Shew of Religion, even more than the *Spaniards*; for most of them walk along the Streets with their Beads in their Hands, a Figure of *S. Anthony* on their Breasts, or hanging about their Necks, and with an extravagant Furniture of a long *Spanish* Sword on their Left, and a Dagger almost as long as a short *French* Sword on their Right; to the end that when Occasion shall offer, neither Arm may be useless towards destroying of their Enemies. In reality, those outward Tokens of Religion are very deceitful among them, not only in regard to true Probity, but even to Christian Sen-

Sentiments; they often serve to conceal from the Eyes of the World a great Number of *Jews*; an amazing Instance has been seen in that Town. A Curate, after having for several Years behaved himself outwardly to Edification, at last made his Escape with the Sacred Ornaments into *Holland*, to live there as a *Jew*; for which Reason, to be admitted to the Clergy, a Man must prove himself an old *Christian*, as they call it, that is, of ancient *Christian* Descent.

*Cathedral.*

The Upper Town is adorn'd with several Churches, the most remarkable of which is the Cathedral, which having the Title of *S. Saviour*, has communicated its Name to all the Town. Before it, is a small open Place, like a Platform, whence is a Prospect of all the Bay, and several Islands, forming an agreeable Landskip. Adjoining to that Place is the Hospital under the Name of *Nossa Senhora da Misericordia*, or our Lady of Mercy. On the Cathedral depend the two Parishes of *S. Anthony* and *S. Peter*, and if I mistake not, *S. Barbara*. To the North of the Cathedral is the Monastery of the *Jesuites*, whose Church is all built with Marble carry'd from *Europe*. The Sacristsy is very beautiful, as well on account of the neat Work the Buffets, or Places for vesting, the curious Wood, inlaying and Ivory they are made of, as for a Series of little Pictures that adorns them. But we must not with *Proger* call the Painting on the Cieling fine, being unworthy to be taken notice of by a Man of Skill. The other Churches and Monasteries have nothing remarkable. There are *Benedictins*, *Franciscans*, *Carmelites*, *Dominicans*, *Barefoot Augustines*, and a Monastery of *Capucins*, which formerly consisted of all *French*, but they were turn'd out during the last Wars, to put in *Italians*; they are there call'd, as *Barbudos*, or the Bearded Friars. I know of but one Monastery of Nuns, call'd as *Freiras da Incarnação*, or the Nuns of the Incarnation. In the Lower Town there are other Chappels of Brotherhoods, *S. Barbara*, our Lady of the

*Jesuites  
Church.*

the *Rosary*, and *de Pila*; this last for the Soldiers, *Corpo Santo* for poor People, and the *Conception* for Sailors.

The great Trade that is drove at the Bay, for the Country Commodities, makes the Inhabitants easy. Every Year about *March*, there arrives a Fleet of about 20 Ships from *Lisbon*, laden with Linnen and Woollen Cloths and Stuffs, especially *Serges*, *Perpetuanas*, *Bays*, and *Says*, which the Women use for their Veils, instead of black Taffety, as the Women wear in *Spain*; which Fashion they follow pretty near: The Use of that Stuff is a Piece of Modesty forced upon them by the King's Order, who prohibits the wearing of Silk. The other saleable Commodities, are *Stockings*, *Hats*, *Iron*, *Kitchen Furniture*; but above all, *Bisket*, *Meal*, *Wine*, *Oil*, *Butter*, *Cheese*, &c. The same Ships, in Exchange, carry back *Gold*, *Sugar*, *Tobacco*, *Wood for Dying*, call'd *Brasil Wood*, *Balsam*, *Oil of Copayva*, *Hypocacuana*, some raw Hides, &c.

The Town standing on a steep Eminence, they have created three Machines for carrying up, and letting down of Goods to and from the Upper Town. Of those three, one is at the *Jesuites*, not only for the Publick, who pay for the Use of it, but also for the Use of that Community, which is certainly no Enemy to Trade. Those Machines consist of two great Wheels, like Drums, which have one common Axle-Tree, over which is wound a Cable, made fast to a Sledge or Cart, which is drawn up by Blacks, who going in the Wheels, wind the Cable up the Spindle, and to the end that the Sledge may meet with no Opposition, but come up easily, it slides along a boarded Way, reaching from the Top of the Hill to the Bottom, being about 140 Fathoms in Length, and not 250, as is said in *Le Flambeau de la Mer*.

Besides the Trade of European Commodities, the Portuguese have another considerable in *Guinea*. They carry thither Linnen Cloth, made in the Islands of *Cape Verde*, Glass Beads, and other Trifles, and bring back *Gold*, *Ivory* and Blacks to sell at *Brasil*.

The

Wealth, &amp;c.

The Correspondence with *Rio de Janeiro*, near which are the Gold Mines of the *Paulistas*, which afford great Plenty, still adds to the Wealth of the Bay. The Houses there are well built, the Inhabitants handsomely lodg'd and furnish'd; the Men and Women are modest in their Habit, because they are wisely forbid wearing of Gold or Silver Lace; but they shew their Wealth in certain Ornaments of Massive Gold, even on their black Women Slaves, who are adorn'd with rich Chains several times about their Necks, great Rings and Pendants in their Ears, Crosses, Plates they wear on their Foreheads, and other very weighty Ornaments of Gold.

Strangers not  
to trade thi-  
ther.

Contrary to the usual Policy of other Crowns, the King of *Portugal* does not permit Strangers to resort thither, to carry away the Product of the Country, tho' they buy with Specie, much less to carry Goods to sell or exchange, wherein he is more faithfully serv'd than the King of *Spain* in *Peru*. This Regulation is grounded on two good Reasons; the first, to oblige his Subjects to take Pains, and by that means procure them all the Profit of the Commerce. The second and the chiefest, to prevent the Duties he has upon all Commodities being sunk by the Viceroyes and Governors, for all Ships being obliged to come and unlade in his Sight at *Lisbon*, nothing can escape him.

Tho' this Bay of *All Saints* be a very populous Place, where they reckon there are about 2000 Houses, it is not nevertheless a good Place for Ships to put in, especially in Winter, not only because of the great Rains it is subject to at that time, but also because Provisions are not good there; the Meal and Wine carry'd thither from *Europe*, are always the worse for that Passage; the Beef there is worth nothing; there is no Mutton, and Fowls are scarce and dear. The Fruits of that Season, as the *Bananas*, and the *Oranges*, will not keep long at Sea, and Garden Stuff is there almost unknown, either through the Supineness of the *Portugueze*, or because it is a difficult Matter to cultivate the same, by reason of the great Multitude of *Pismires* which destroy the Plants and the Fruit almost every where, so that they are the Bane of Agriculture in *Brazil*. De-



## Departure from the Bay.

AFTER having refitted and victual'd, we sail'd in Company with our former Comrades, on Monday, the 7th of May. Being at Noon two Leagues and a half to the Southward of Cape S. Anthony, I found by Observation 13 Degrees of Latitude, whence I concluded, that it lies in 12 Degrees 50 Minutes, and the City in 12 Degrees 45 Minutes, and according to the Observation of *Olinda*, set down in *La Connoissance des Temps*, of 1712, it should be in 41 Degrees 30 Minutes of West Longitude, or Difference of the Meridian from *Paris*, which differs from the Position, the *Dutch Charts* assign it 6 Degrees more Westward; for instead of 336 Degrees 50 Minutes, it is 343 Degrees from the Meridian of *Teneriff*.

*Ever is  
Charts.*

On the 18th, *Beauvais Grant* came to ask our Point, perhaps not so much to ascertain his own, as to make a Signal to the others for them to crowd more Sail the next Day, and leave us. In short, they did not fail of so doing; they bore up to make the more way, knowing that it concern'd us more than them to gain Ground to the Eastward. They succeeded, and we lost Sight of them before Night, without endeavouring to bear up with them, and keep such Company as the Advice of the Peace had render'd useless, and their Infidelity odious.

From the time of our putting into the Bay till we came to the Line, we had almost continual cloudy Weather, with Gusts of Wind and Rain, Calms, and little Wind, the Winds blowing from S. S. E. to E. S. E. and tho' the Current sets to the Northward near the Coast, out at Sea we found it rather set us a little to the Southward; but when we were once come into 4 Degrees of North Latitude, we found a very great Difference in our Reckning on that side; we attributed it to the General Current, setting N. W. which prevails in that Latitude along the Coast of *Brazil* and *Guiana*.

*Currents.*

In that Latitude we began to feel the Trade Winds from East to N. N. E. fresh enough, which carry'd on us to 26 Degrees, and turn'd back to the Longitude of Cape *S. Augustin*. Then we began to be becalm'd, which kept us near a Month, making little Way.

From thence forward we began to be sensible of many Currents, and Runs of Tides, and to see a sort of Drift in small Grains like Gooseberries, said to come from the Channel of *Bahama*, which was nevertheless about 600 Leagues to the Westward of us. The Reason for that Conjecture is, that none of that sort is found either about the *Azores*, or *Canary* Islands, which are the nearest Lands; and that on the other hand, sailing to the Westward, there are great Quantities of them found. If it be so, they must be brought by the Currents, which set to the Eastward. The Currents observ'd about the Coast of *Guiana*, serve to make good the Waters that run out at that Channel, which is also the Reason that the Ships coming from *Brazil*, gain as much to the Eastward, under the Tropick of *Cancer*, as they lose to the Westward, under the Line.

On the 15th of *June*, in about 21 Degrees of North Latitude, a Sailor died of the Bloody Flux.

Whiteness in  
the Sea.

*Wednesday* the 4th of *July*, in 36 Degrees 50 Minutes Latitude, and 36 Degrees 16 Minutes Longitude, the Sea being still, we saw within Cannon Shot a Whiteness on the Water, as if it had broke a little, we immediately judg'd there might be a Shoal. The Caprain had a mind to be satisfy'd, but the Boat being too much dry'd up by the great Heats for two Months past, was not fit to put to Sea. However, most Men thought that might be Foam, or something floating on the Water.

The next day we had sight of a small Vessel, which seem'd to stand to the Eastward, as we did. The Calm held us in sight of one another three Days. We put up our Fights, and made a Signal by firing a Gun and lowering our Topsails, to persuade him to make towards us, that we might hear some News from *Europe*; but a Gale coming up at West,

*the South-Sea.*

307

West, he stood away to the North. We chas'd him for some Hours, till considering we lost so much Way, we stood our own Course without having been able to come up with him.

*Tuesday* the 10th, we spy'd another, towards the Evening, and the next Morning about Break of Day he was within Cannon-shot of us. We again made ready, and lay by for him, but he stood away S. W. and left us.

That same Evening we had sight of the *Pecke* of one Peck of the Azores. of the Islands of *Azores*, to which that Mountain has given its Name. It is like a Sugar-loaf, and so high, that it can be seen at 30 Leagues Distance, like that of *Teneriff*.

We were then about 25 Leagues from it, S. and by E. according to the Globe, and saw it distinctly.

This Sight of Land was very pleasing to us; for the Tokens of Currents which we had observ'd, made us very uncertain as to our Reck'nings; and it was a double Satisfaction to find them answer within a very small Matter. I do not pretend to talk of any but those of the Officers, who having not made slight of what I had observ'd to them concerning the Position of *Olinda*, had taken their Departure 6 Degrees more to the Westward than the Longitude of the Bay on the *Dutch* Charts. The Currents we had observ'd for some Days, could not obstruct the Exactness, because they sometimes did set to the North, and sometimes to the South; and within Sight of Land, we observ'd that they were N. W. and S. E.

For this Reason, and perhaps partly through the Error Island of S. Michael. of the Charts, we, within three Days after seeing the *Peck*, discover'd the Island of *S. Michael*, 20 Leagues sooner than we expected. In short, I am of Opinion, that *Peter Goos* places those two Islands too near together, and the *Flambeau de la Mer* at too great a Distance from each other.

We also observ'd the same Error, as we drew near the Island *Tercera*, where we thought fit to put in, for fear lest the Calms continuing, we might want Provisions.

## A Voyage to

That Island is indifferent high, and to be known on the S. E. Side by a Point of low Land that runs out East, and by a Cape cur on the West-side, form'd by a Point of Land, on which there are two Risings; lastly, by two small Isles cur Perpendicular, which are a League to the Eastward of the said Cape, call'd *Ilbeos*. Half a League S. S. E. from these, there are three Breakers, even with the Surface of the Water; all of them ill placed in the *Plambeau de la Mer*.

*Saturday, July the 14th*, about Night falling, we came to an Anchor in the Road of the City of *Angra*, in 20 Fathom Water, the Bottom a gray Sand, broken Shells, and small white Coral, Cape *S. Anthony* bearing from us S. W. and by W. the Cathedral N. W. and by N. the *Ilbeos*, or little Islands above mention'd E. S. E. and Fort *S. Sebastian* N. N. W. This Position is to be observ'd, in order to avoid it upon Occasion, because the Bottom is there mix'd with great Stones. We saluted the Town with 9 Guns, which it return'd the next Morning Gun for Gun.

A Pilot of the Town coming aboard to advise us to change our Station, when we were about weighing, the Anchor was found engaged among Stones, so that it was requisite to put such Strefs to get it loose that the Yard broke; but that Pilot, either through Malice or Ignorance, instead of carrying us somewhat farther out into 30 Fathom of Water, in the midst between the little Islands and the Hillocks, where the Men of War anchor, having brought us into 66 Fathom Water, we thought fit to remove to the usual Place, in 13 Fathom, the Bottom blackish Sand

## Plate XXXVI. Page 259. explain'd in English.

- A. A Spanish Woman of Peru, in her Skirt and wide Petticoat.  
 B. Another with a Cap and Mantle.  
 C. Another sitting holding a silver Pipe to suck through it the Tincture or Decoction of the Herb of Paraguay.  
 D. A Bed made of a Guard adorn'd with Silver.  
 E. A Silver Pot to heat the Water, in the midst of which is the Fire, in a Place made for it G.



A Espagnole du porou en Chupon et faldellin B. autre en Monteru et grayorillo C. autre assise tenant un Chalumeau d'argent pour sucer la teinture de herbe du paraguay D. Maté ou Coupe de Calabasse armée d'argent E. pot d'argent pour chauffer l'eau au milieu de la quelle est le feu dans un reservoir G.

where the ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...

The ... of the City of ANCHORAGE

**T**HE City of Anchorage is located on the Edge of the Sea  
 about the middle of the South-side of the Island  
 ... the ...

... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...

... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...

... the ...  
 ... the ...  
 ... the ...

Sand and Owze, mix'd with some few Shells, and about a good Cable's Length from the Land. Then Fort S. Sebastian bore from us S. W. and by W. that of S. Anthony N. and by E. we rode there only by a small Stream Anchor, because there the Tide is very small. They say the Ebb begins at the Rising of the Moon, and sets S. E. and the Flood N. W. There a Ship is near the City Gate, where the Key and the Watering-Place are.

The Description of the City of ANGRA.

THE City of Angra is seated on the Edge of the Sea, <sup>Plate</sup> about the middle of the South-side of the Island XXXVII. Tercera, at the Bottom of a small Bay, form'd by a very high Point of Land, call'd *Monto de Brasil*, or the Mount of Brasil.

I call that little and bad Port a Bay, being open from the East to the S. W. not above 4 Cables long in Breadth, and perhaps not two of good Bottom, where Ships cannot ride in Safety any longer than in the fair Summer Weather, because then only gentle Winds prevail, from the West to the N. N. W. but as soon as the Winter begins, there are such violent Storms, that the shortest way for Men to save their Lives, is to sail as soon as ever they see the least ill Tokens in the Air. The Inhabitants, by long Experience, are seldom mistaken; for then the high Mountain is cover'd and grows dark, and the Birds for some Days before come and cry about the City, as it were to give them Notice.

Those Mariners, who are obliged to stay in the Road, being detain'd on Account of Trade, forsake their Ships, or else bring small Vessels ashore, at the Foot of Fort S. Sebastian, and all of them stay in the Town, till the Storm is over. A fatal Experience has shewn that they were in the Right. In September 1713, seven Sail perish'd there, <sup>Shipwreck</sup> being drove ashore; and not one Man of all their Crews was saved.

S. Anthony's  
Fort.

As small and bad as that Port is, the Portuguese have fortify'd it very well. They have rais'd a triple Battery, almost upon the Level of the Water, upon the most advanced Cape on the Starboard side, going in, being that of S. Anthony, a Name which is never wanting in Places belonging to the Portuguese. It is then continued in good Stone-work all

Plate 36. Page 310. explain'd in English.

The Plan of the Town, Citadel and Forts of ANGEA, on the South-side of the Island *Tercera*, one of the *Azores*, in 39 Degrees of South Latitude.

## Churches.

1. The Cathedral.
2. Our Lady of Hope, Nuns.
3. Our Lady of Grace.
4. S. Peter.
5. S. Katharine's Chappel.
6. S. Gonzalo.
7. A Chappel.
8. The Misericordia, or Mercy.
9. Corpo Santo, or the Chappel of the Holy Body.
10. The Chappel of the Incarnation.
11. Our Lady of the Incarnation, a Priory.
12. The Nuns of the Conception.
13. The Chappel of S. Benedict.
14. S. Anthony, Recolets.
15. A Chappel.
16. S. John's Chappel.
17. S. Lucy's Chappel.
18. The Jesuite's College.
19. S. Francis, Friars.
20. The Capocin Nuns.
21. The Chappel of the Chiefs.

Quartier de S. Pedro, S. Peter's Quarter.

Castello de San Joao, S. John's Castle.

Ouest du Monde, the due West Point.

Ouest de l'aimant, declinant de 8 Degrez, the West Point of the Compass, varying 8 Degrez.

Montagne du Bresil, the Mountain of Brasil.

Tours des Sentinelles, the Sentinel's Towers.

Echelle de 500 Toises, a Scale of 500 Fathoms.

## Places of Note.

- A. The Square of the Castle.
- B. The Gate and Corps du Garde.
- C. A Chappel not finish'd.
- D. Cazerns.
- E. Square Wells dug in the Ditch.
- F. The Horse-shoe.
- G. The Ramparts carry'd down to the Sea.
- H. Redoubts and Chappel of S. Anthony.
- I. Intrenchments and Batteries on the Edge of the Sea.
- K. A Moineau, or Plat Bassin.
- L. S. Anthony's Battery.
- M. The Upper Brasil Gate.
- N. The Key at the landing Place.
- O. The Sea Gate.
- P. The Square and Fountain in it.
- Q. The Town-House.
- R. The Goal.
- S. Fort S. Sebastian.
- T. A new Battery.
- V. The old Creek.



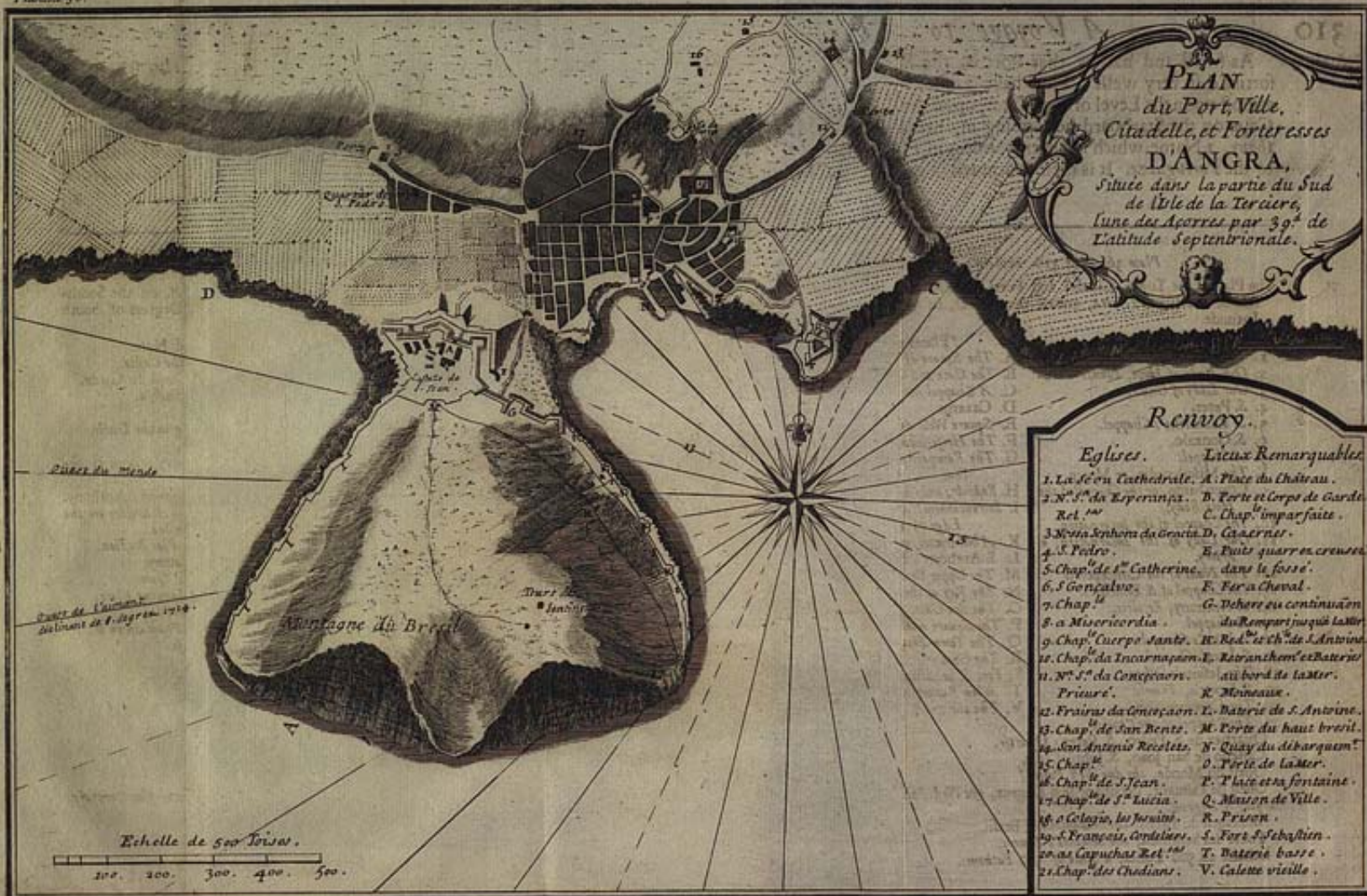




PLATE XLVII

VIEW OF A BAY



VIEW OF THE MOUNTAINS



1. The Bay of ...  
2. The ...  
3. The ...  
4. The ...  
5. The ...  
6. The ...  
7. The ...  
8. The ...  
9. The ...  
10. The ...



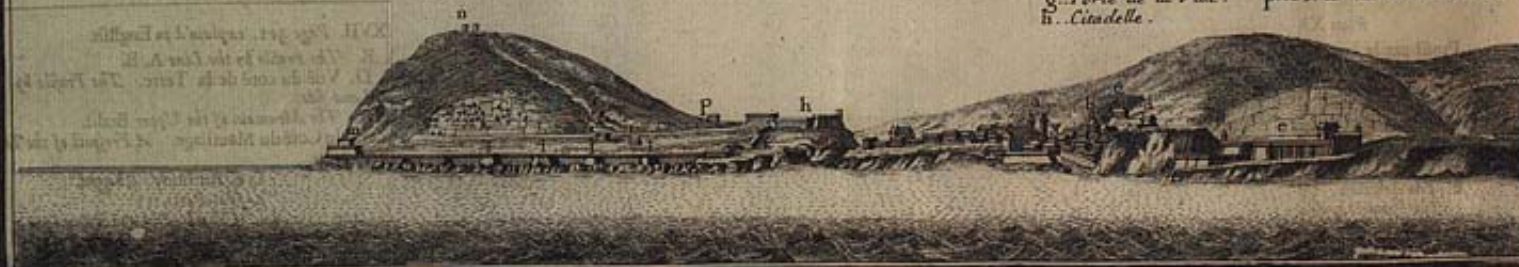
## PROFIL PAR LA LIGNE A. B.



PROFIL par la ligne C. D. vu du côté de la Terre. *Montagne du haut Brasil.*



## VUE DE LA VILLE DE ANGRA du côté du mouillage.



- |                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| a. La Sé.                   | i. Chapelle de S <sup>t</sup> . Antoine. |
| b. Les Jésuites.            | k. Dehors.                               |
| c. Casa da poluora.         | l. Moineaux et batterie.                 |
| d. Cuerpo S <sup>to</sup> . | m. Fort de S <sup>t</sup> . Antoine.     |
| e. Fort S. Sebastiaon.      | n. Tours de la decouverte.               |
| f. Batterie basse.          | o. Quay.                                 |
| g. Porte de la Ville.       | p. Forte du haut Brasil.                 |
| h. Citadelle.               |  |

all along the Coast to the Citadel, with Redans or Indentures, and little Moineaus, or Plat Bastions before the Curtin, which flank it, without much need; because the Rocks render it inaccessible for Boats.

To secure a Communication between Fort *S. Anthony* and the Citadel, they have thrown up a Trench along the Mountain, cross'd by a little Gully; over which they pass on a Bridge, defended by two Redoubts, in the midst between which is a Chappel of *S. Anthony*, and a good Spring. *His Chappel.*

The Batteries of the Coast join without the Citadel, and come down to the Shore. *Batteries.*

The Citadel, by the *Portuguese* call'd *Castello de S. Joao*, or *S. John's Castle*, stands at the Foot of the Mountain of *Brasil*, which it incloses, as well by the Walls of the Body of the Place, on the West-side, as by the Outworks before spoken of, next the Port. Those Outworks; which might be call'd a Continuation of the Enclosure, tho' without a Ditch, would be of little use, in case of a Siege by Sea and Land; for a Ship at Anchor in 50 Fathom Water at S. E. and by S. would render them almost useless, firing into them on Reverse and by Enfilade.

The Upper Fort has not that Defect; it is well enough seated, contriv'd and built of good Stone-work, founded on a Rock.

*Plate XXXVII. Page 311. explain'd in English.*

Profil par la Ligne A. B. *The Profile by the Line A. B.*

Profil par la Ligne C. D. Vue du coté de la Terre. *The Profile by the Line C. D. Seen from the Land-side.*

Montagne du haut Brasil. *The Mountain of the Upper Brasil.*

Vue de la Ville de Angra du Coté du Mouillage. *A Prospect of the Town of Angra next the Anchoring-place.*

a. *The Cathedral.*

b. *The Jesuites.*

c. *The Powder-house.*

d. *Corpo Santo.*

f. *A new Battery.*

g. *The City Gate.*

h. *The Citadel.*

i. *S. Anthony's Chappel.*

k. *Out-Ports.*

l. *A Plat Bastion and Battery.*

m. *S. Anthony's Fort.*

n. *Tower to look out.*

o. *The Key.*

p. *The Port of the upper Brasil.*

Rock, in which is dug a Ditch, between 4 and 5 Fathoms deep, and 10 or 12 in Breadth. At the Bottom of the Ditch, all along the Escarpe, there is a Row of Wells or Pits, 2 or 3 Fathoms square, and 10 or 12 Foot deep, which are so near one another, that they are only parted by a Traverse of the same Rock, 2 or 3 Foot thick. Before the Curtin, where the Gate is, those Rows of Wells or Pits are triple, and advanced within 4 or 5 Fathoms of the Counterscarp.

The Depth of the Ditch, the Reinforcement of those Pits, the Height of the Walls, and the Solidity of the Stonework, make the *Portuguese* fancy, that their Castle is impregnable; and the rather, because the *Spaniards* stood a Siege of three Years in it, till at last a Supply of 6000 *French* obliged them to abandon the Place, and get away by Sea, where they were taken.

By this may be judg'd what the Strength of the *Portuguese* was, and the manner of their Attacks; for in the first place, that Fortrefs has no other Outworks, besides a Horse-shoo next the Port, and a little Cover'd-way, now without Palisades; the Glacis whereof, at the Salliant Angle of the Bastion next the Town, is so steep, that it might well serve for a *Rideau*, or Covert, to take the Ditch by Sappe; and the more, for that it is mostly of Earth thrown up together, and the Rock under it seems to be very easy to cut.

Then the Ditch is only defended by three Pieces of Cannon; for the Flanks of the Bastion are so small, that they can hold no more: that is, one in the lower Flank, or Cazematte, one on the Back Flank above, and one in the Epaulment.

At the Entrancie into the Fort, under the Rampart, is a good handsome Corps de Garde, vaulted, but not Bomb Proof, in my Opinion. I did not hear there was any thing else under Ground, besides the Powder Magazine.

In the Castle there are two fine Cisterns; and, in case of Necessity, they can also have Water from *S. Anthony's* Spring, which

which is on the Mountain of *Brasil*, which cannot be come at without passing by the Fort, because the West Coast is lined with Batteries, almost like that on the East, and the South Side is steep, with inaccessible Banks; for which Reason the Fort has no other Enclosure, but a plain Wall on that Side. On the Top of the East Hill there are two Towers call'd *Facha*, in which there is a Sentinel continually, to discover what Ships come near the Island, the Number whereof he denotes by that of the Colours he puts out, as far as five; and for a Fleet they have another Signal.

As for the Building of the Body of the Place, it is faced with good Stone-Work of the Sort of the Mill-stones, on which is a Parapet six or seven Foot thick, of the same Substance. The Rampart behind it is generally upon the Level with Earth-work, and the Jettees on the West-side.

The Defence of the Bastions is Razant, the Faces are of about 28 Fathoms, the Flanks of 8, and the Curtins of 35 or 40. There are about Twenty Pieces of Cannon; and they say there is a Magazine of 4000 Arms.

The Castle of *S. John* having been formerly built by <sup>Fort S. Sebastian.</sup> the *Spaniards*, on the West-side of the Port, rather to command the Land than the Sea; the *Portuguese* have since built a small Fort on the East-side, call'd *Fort S. Sebastian*, to command the Road. It is a square Piece of Stone-Work, of about 60 Fathoms on the Out-side, with the Entrance on the Land-side with a little Ditch; and next the Sea, a Battery of a Salliant Angle before the Curtin, defended by the Faces of the little Bastions. Below this, level with the Water, there is another, built following the Turn of the Rock, which carries very well into the Road and the Port.

All the Batteries, and particularly that of *S. Anthony*, are well furnish'd with Artillery, but in bad Order. There

There are reck'ned above 200 Pieces of Iron Cannon, and about 20 Brass. Of the latter I saw none in the Castle, but a Culverin of 20 Pounds Ball, and 16 or 17 Foot long.

For the Guard of this Place, the King of *Portugal* generally allows 200 Men, but in a very different Manner from those at *Bahia de todos os Santos*; for he allows them so little Pay, that they are all poorly equip'd, and in a very wretched Condition. In short, they are said to have only 7000 Reys a Year, that is, little above Fifty Shillings of our Money, being under Two Pence a Day; but in Case of Need, there are in the Island 6000 Men able to bear Arms, according to the Computation made some Years ago, when they met to oppose *Monsieur du Guay*, who appear'd before that Island, and afterwards took that of *S. George*.

Tho' the City of *Angra* be in the best of the Islands *Terceras*, the Inhabitants thereof are Poor, because they have no other Trade but that of Corn, and some little Wine, which is carry'd to *Lisbon*, which scarce keeps them in Cloaths, so that Money is very scarce there. For this Reason it is perhaps, that they are more Courteous than those of the Bay of *All Saints*; but tho' Poverty humbles Men in outward Appearance, it does not make them the better; and therefore there must be no Confidence reposed in that fine Out-side; for some *European Portuguese* charge these with not having the same always in their Hearts which they utter'd by their Lips.

The Scarcity of Money has not however obstructed their building a Town that is pretty enough. The Houses there are but one Story high, rarely two, and contrary to ours, handsomer without, than well furnish'd within. The Churches are beautiful enough, built after a manner that has somewhat of Grandeur, by reason of the raised Walks, Platforms, and Galleries, which lead to, and adorn the Entrance, especially the Cathedral of the Invo-  
cation



cation of *S. Saviour*. The finest next to it are those of the *Franciscans* and the *Jesuites*, whose House appears fronting the Road, above all the other Buildings in the Town, to be known by that, as in all other Places, viz. by the good Choice of the advantageous Situation that Society is always sure to make for itself. There are two other Monasteries of less Note; that of the *Augustins*, call'd *Nossa Senhora da Graça*, or our Lady of Grace; and that of the *Recolets*, by them also call'd *Capucins*, seated on an Eminence without the Town. These, who are commendable for their good Behaviour, live in a fine Place, and an agreeable Poverty, under the Protection of their Patron *S. Anthony*, who among the *Portuguese* answers to *S. Francis* among the *Spaniards* in *Peru*, and *S. Patrick* among the *Irish*.

Answerable to the Four Monasteries of Men, there are Four of Nuns, one of the *Conception*, an Order brought from *Toledo*; one of *Poor Clares*, under the Invocation of *Nossa Senhora da Esperança*, or, our Lady of Hope; one of *S. Gonzalo*, and the fourth of *Capucin* Nuns.

I do not take Notice of many Chappels, which they call *Hermitas*, or Hermitages. They may be seen in the Plan.

Tho' the City is not upon a Level Plain, nor very regularly divided, it is nevertheless very agreeable; they have there the Conveniency of several good Fountains, distributed into every Quarter, and a Brook running through the middle of the City, to drive the necessary Mills for publick Use.

Near those Mills, which are most of them above the City, is an ancient little Fort, call'd by reason of its Neighbourhood *Forte dos Malimbos*, or the Fort of the Mills, and sometimes *Caza da Polvora*, or the Powder-House, because it now serves for a Magazine of Powder. It is a square Pile of Stone-Work of 15 Fathoms

on every side, flank'd after the ancient Manner, with a Half-Tower in the middle of each side. Thence is a Prospect of the whole City, from above; an agreeable Composition of Land, Sea, Structures and Verdure, making up a pretty Landskip, and a very pleasing Object to the Eye.

In other Respects, there is not about the Town, next the Country, any Enclosure, or detach'd Fortification; and yet it might be come at by Land, debarking at *Porto Judeo*, or *S. Martin*, which are two or three Leagues from thence, East and West, where there is good Anchorage and little Defence: But it is so little Advantage to the King of *Portugal* to have those Islands, that I do not think any ought to envy him the Possession thereof, for he receives nothing thence that may recommend them, except a little Corn. There are Abundance of those call'd *Canary Birds*, which are smaller than those bred in *France*; but on the other hand they exceed them much in Strength of Voice.

#### Departure from the Island Tercera.

HAVING furnish'd ourselves with Water, Wood, Meal, Wine, some Beeves, Fowls, and Greens, we sail'd on *Wednesday* the 15th of *July*.

*S. Michael's  
Island.*

The 20th we had sight of the Island of *S. Michael*, which appear'd to us at *S. E.* as it were divided into two Islands, in the midst whereof were several little Hills, which might have been taken for little Isles, had not we known that they were join'd by a low Land, which is lost at four Leagues Distance, by which that Island is particularly to be known on the North-side.

The 19th at Night, we had the East Point of it, bearing South from us about twelve Leagues distant, and stood to the Eastward during the Night, without apprehending

hending a Shoal laid down in the Charts in our Way, ten or twelve Leagues N. E. of the same Point of the Island of *S. Michael*; so that we must have pass'd over the Place where it is. We should have been very cautious of steering that Course, had not we been assured by the long Experience of a *Portuguese* Captain, that of all the Shoals laid down in the Charts about the *Azores*, there is really none but that of *Fornigas*, lying between *S. Mary* and *S. Michael*, the other being barely deep Soundings, on which there is no less than 40 or 50 Fathom Water; but he warn'd us, that in those Places the Sea was much more rough than elsewhere. He did not even except the three or four Shoals laid down about 60 Leagues out at Sea, to the Westward, on which he said Islanders daily go a Fishing, because they there find abundance of Fish. He may be believ'd, yet without relying entirely upon it, or being disturb'd at the Nearness of those Places; for doubtless *Mr. Halley* has not left them out in his new Chart, without good Reasons for so doing, since it is of no less concern than the Loss of such Ships as should confidently make use of the same; wherein in all appearance an Hydrographer should rather err in exceeding than in omitting any thing. The one can only occasion some Loss of Time, or some groundless Fear; but the other may be the Cause of fatal unexpected Shipwrecks, if any thing of that which is doubted should happen to be found. Besides, it is possible that the Sea may fall, and at one Time discover that which was conceal'd at another.

I will here leave the Thread of my Relation, to tell what the said Captain told us concerning the Shoals and the *Abrolhos*, laid down under the Line, to the Northward of Cape *S. Augustin*. He affirms, that several Navigators have convinced him and all other *Portuguese* Captains sailing to *Brazil*, that there are none of those foul Places, except those call'd *Penon de S. Pedro*, which is a  
Rock

Rock almost round, rising about 50 or 60 Fathoms above the Water, and near about four Cables Length Diameter, so that it may be seen at four or five Leagues Distance; and therefore it is not dangerous, and the more because there is no Bottom all about it, which he had the Curiosity to be satisfy'd in one Day when he was becalm'd very near it, having sent his Boat to sound quite round it. Mr. Halley in his Chart has also left out all those Shoals, as well as those of the *Azores*; but as I have said elsewhere, he has without Reason omitted the Island of the *Ascension*, to confound it with that of the *Trinity*. The same Captain I am speaking of, confirm'd to us, that they were really two distinct Islands, and situated very near as laid down in the *Dutch Charts*, in respect to one another. Doubtless the other Island of the *Ascension*, which is about six Degrees, near enough to the first Meridian, made Mr. Halley judge that the other which is distinguish'd by the *Portugeze* Name of *Acenção*, was Supposititious. Let us return to the Voyage.

We passed, as has been said, over an imaginary Shoal, during the Night. The next Day, and the Day after the Winds began to grow boisterous, and the Sea ran high for some Days, during the which our Mizzen-Sail split, and our Main-Top-Mast gave way, so that we were obliged to change it immediately. During the first Days that we made from the Islands, we found some little Difference with the Reck'ning to the Southward.

As soon as we were about half way over between the *Azores* and the Continent, the Wind became more favourable, and the Sea smoother; and on the 31st of July we arrived at the Mouth of the *Streights*, without any sensible Error; whence it may be concluded that those Islands are rightly laid down in the *Grand Flambeau de la Mer*.

Passing


*the South-Sea.*

319

Passing through the Streights of Gibraltar, we heard many Cannon-shot from the famous Siege of Ceuta, which has been besieged above 30 Years, by the People of Morocco; and at the beginning of the Night we saw the Fires of their Camp. We then went and anchor'd at Cape Moulin, near Malaga, to receive our Orders. Lastly, on the 16th of August we came to an Anchor at the Isles of Hieres, and the next Day at Marsailles.

F I N I S.





## POSTSCRIPT.

WE have noted in this Author, pag. 278. a Desire to depreciate the Sea-Chart of Mr. Halley, made to shew the Variations of the Compass, as not rightly representing the Situation of the Coast of Peru and Chili. Whether the single Reck'ning of the Ship *Mary-Ann* of *Marseilles* be sufficient to determine this matter, is submitted to the Reader's Judgment: But whatever ground there may be for this Exception, (in a matter wherein *Halley* pretends to no Knowledge of his own, but only to have followed the best Accounts he could at that time procure) yet as to his other Cavil, p. 291. he is fully assured that M. *Frezier* is under a gross mistake, when he affirms that the Island of *Ascension* and *Trinidad*, in the Lat. of about 20 Degrees South, are two different Islands; and in that respect gives the Preference to the old *Dutch* Charts. Mr. *Halley* knows, by the Description given of it, that the Island at which M. *Frezier* touched, and which by him is call'd *Ascension*, is the very same he calls *Trinidad*; and he is certain to Demonstration, that to the Eastward of this Island there are no others to be found, except the three Islets, or rather Rocks, which are but about 7 or 8 Leagues to Windward thereof, and which having been seen from the East, have by some been named the Isles of *Martin Vaz*. He affirms that in the Year 1700, he kept the Parallel of 20 Degrees, 20 Minutes South, with a West Course, for above 200 Leagues to the Eastward of this place, and met with no Land, or Sign of Land, by Birds or otherwise, till he first made the said three Rocks, which lie nearly in a Line North and South, and are not above a Mile asunder, the middlemost being the biggest, the other two very small, and the Southermost  
very

very much resembling a Bell. Whence 'tis evident, that if our Island were *Ascension*, there can be no such as *Trinidad* East therefrom. And he challenges M. *Frezier* to produce any Authentick Account of Land seen thereabout, that was not in the said Latitude of 20 Degrees 20 Minutes.

Besides, this Latitude has been often examined by Ships which have had the Mischance, for want of an Observation, to miss the Island of *S. Helena*, and have been obliged to look for these Islands, in hopes to find a Watering-place. Particularly Commadore *Warren*, with a Squadron of five Men of War in the Year 1696, being bound to *S. Helena*, and design'd Convoy to the homeward-bound *East-India* Fleet, had the misfortune to fall to Leeward of that Island, and being in great want of Water, he hoped to find relief at some of those Isles which the Charts describe between the Latitudes of 20 and 21 Degrees: And not being sure of their Situation, he spread his Ships so as nothing between those two Parallels could be pass'd by undiscovered: But following a due West Course almost home to the Main of *Brazil*, for near 400 Leagues, he found no other than this single Island which we call *Trinidad*, and the *French Ascension*; which afforded him no sufficient Water-place. Moreover, all the Islands thereabout being by Letters Patents of his late Majesty King *William*, granted to *Sir John Hoskyns*, late of *Harwood* in the County of *Heresford*, Bart. and to his Heirs; the said Honourable Proprietor has caused Possession of the said *Trinidad* to be taken for his Use, in the name of the Crown of *England*, and has put live Stock thereon; having found himself disappointed of all the rest that are laid down in the Charts, which upon due search he was satisfied were not *in rerum natura*.

It must however be owned, as an Obligation from M. *Frezier*, that he does not require the Site of the Islands of *Dor Picos*, *Maria d'Agosta* and *Martin Vaz*, as well as that of *Trinidad*, and that of *Penon de S. Paulo*, which he miscalls *de S. Pedro*, of the Omission whereof he complains in his last Leaf. This latter may, for ought we know to

the contrary, be an Omission; but then *M. Halley*, when he made his Chart, had no account of its being ever seen by the *English Pilots*, as lying out of the way of their Shipping; much less had he any Authority where to place it in respect of the adjoining Continent.

Lastly, *M. Frezier* might have as well observed that his new Discovery lying N. E. from *Le Maire Streight*, in 51 grad. is found in the aforesaid Chart of the Variations, by the Name of *Falkland's Isles*; as to have amused his Reader with the Pretences of the Omissions of such minute Matters, as are not ordinarily to be expected in a General Chart.



Some



285

Some \* Account of the Settlement of  
the JESUITES in the Spanish  
Indies.

**O**F all the Settlements that have been made in the Indies since the Conquest of that vast Country by the Spaniards, there neither has been, nor ever will be, any so considerable, as that which the Jesuites have form'd there. The first Beginning of this Settlement was only 50 Families of wandering Indians, whom the Jesuites were at the pains of collecting together, and fixing upon the Banks of the River *Japsur* in the Heart of the Country; but it has increased in such a manner, that it contains at present above 300000 Families, possess'd of the finest Part of all the Continent, situate 200 Leagues South from the Portuguese Paulists, and separated from them by the River of *Lorugay*, which falls into the Great *Parava* and *Japsur*, and these again discharge themselves into the River of *Paraguay*. This last takes its Course, according to the Discoveries of the Jesuites in 1702 and 1703, (which are the best that ever were made) from the foot of the Mountains of *Potosi*. The Air there is temperate, the Land fertile, the Indians Inhabitants laborious and tractable; and there must undoubtedly be Plenty of Gold and Silver Mines. Those Indians might be brought with ease to submit themselves, could a Method be found to improve and cultivate them.

T t 2

The

---

\* This Account is not *Monsieur Frezier's*; neither is it printed in the Paris Edition of his Book.

## The Jesuites Settlement

The Jesuites have not been able to extend their Mission that way, for want of Fathers; otherwise they would receive an Augmentation of more than 60000 Families, and 300 Leagues of Ground.

To resume the Thread of our Account, and the Situation of the Jesuites Country, it is, as above observ'd, 200 Leagues South of the *Paulists*, 200 North of the Province of *Buenos Ayres*, 180 from that of *Tucuman*, and 100 from *Paraguay*. These 3 Provinces are separated from the Kingdoms of *Chili* and *Peru* by the Chain of Mountains call'd *La Cordillera*, and were of themselves a Kingdom before the Conquest of the *Indies*.

The Country of the Mission is fruitful, being water'd with a great number of Rivers, which form Islands in many Places. They have Plenty of Timber and Fruit-trees, excellent Pulse, Bread-Corn, Flax, Indigo, Hemp, Cotton, Sugar, *Pimento*, *Hypecacuana*, *Gulapa*, *Masbecacuana*, a Root they call *Lautrabanda*, and many other Simples of great Use in Pharmacy, particularly the Herb *Paraguay*. Their *Savanna's*, or Meadow-Lands, are full of Horses, Mules, Cows, Bulls, and Flocks of Sheep: And more than all these, their Gold and Silver Mines are very considerable. 'Tis true, the good Fathers will not own it; but there are too many Proofs of it, to leave any room for Doubt.

The People are good-natured and quiet, handy and laborious; and are brought up to all sorts of Trades. They are at present divided into 42 Parishes, from 1 to 10 Leagues apart, lying along the River of *Paraguay*; and in every Parish there is a Jesuite, who has the Supreme Command, and is obey'd with the exactest Regard and Awe. He punishes the least Fault, if he pleases, with the utmost Severity.

The ordinary Chastisement there, is a certain number of Lashes with a Whip, in proportion to the nature of the Crime. The *Caciques* and others, who are in the best Posts of the Government, whether Civil or Military, are  
not

not exempted from it: But which is very particular, he that has been severely whipt, comes and kisses the Father's Sleeve, acknowledges his Fault, and thanks him for the Correction he has received. Thus doth one single Man command 10000 Families, more or less; and 'tis certain, there never was known a more submissive People, or a more perfect Subjection.

The same Method of governing has been introduced into all the Parishes of the Mission. But that is not all: This entire Submission is attended with such a Contentment of Mind, (which the Jesuites have taken care to press upon the *Indians*, in consideration of the Felicities of another Life, whereof they pretend to grant them Shares in this) that the *Indians* are very happy with bare Food and Raiment, and do not repine at the good Fathers reaping all the Benefit of their Labours; for which purpose they have large Ware-houses in every Parish, whither the *Indians* are obliged to carry Provisions, Stuffs, and generally every thing without exception; they not having the liberty so much as to eat a Chick of their own Brood; so that all those Multitudes of *Indians* may justly be reckon'd as so many Slaves to the Jesuites for their Bread; and that Verse of *Virgil* cannot be more properly apply'd, than to them:

*Sic vos non vobis fertis aratra, boves.*

Let it be consider'd at the same time, what vast Advantages those Sovereign Fathers must needs make of the Labour of so many hands, and what a Trade they drive to all Parts of the *Indies*, with the above-mentioned Commodities, particularly the Herb *Paraguay*, of which they vend an immense Quantity, there being none but what comes from the Jesuites Country, or from the Province of *Paraguay*. That Herb is drank almost like Tea; the *Spaniards* and *Indians*, as well Masters as Slaves, using it Morning and Evening. It is computed, that the Sale of that Herb, at first hand, comes to above a Million of Crowns.

Crowns a Year; and the Jesuites have the best Part of it; which, with the other Commodities they vend to equal Advantage; and with the Gold-Dust, which the *Indians* go and gather up in the Washes where the Waters have been, after their Rivers are sunk below their Banks again, brings in to the Jesuites the Revenue of a Sovereign. For the forming a truer Idea of this matter, be it supposed, that each Family of *Indians* does not produce to the Jesuites above 50 Livres a Year, all Expences borne; why, even at this rate the general Produce of 300000 Families will appear to amount to 5 Millions of Crowns; but this Hint is sufficient to convince any one, that they get a great deal more. However, if you'll believe those good Fathers, their Mission costs them a great deal of Pains, and brings them but little Profit: But this must be taken in the Sense they generally speak, the Interpretation whereof is *Nunquam satir.*

The Gold and Silver, coin'd and uncoin'd, which the Jesuites send by every Opportunity into *Europe*; the Magnificence of their Churches, where massy Gold and Silver are glittering on every side; and their considerable Commerce, which is known to all the *Spaniards*, oblige Men to form a different Judgment.

It may not be amiss to give here a Description of the Church and Apartment of the Father of one of the Parishes, from the Mouths of two *Frenchmen* belonging to the Ship of Monsieur de la Solliette d'Escafeau of *Nantes*.

That Ship being in the Port of *Maldonades*, weigh'd Anchor, and set Sail, when the said two *Frenchmen*, one a Captain of Arms on board, and the other a Sergeant, happen'd to be on shoar, and at so great a Distance, that they came too late for the Boat, which was gone off. Not knowing what to do in this case, all the Coast being desert, they resolv'd to advance into the Country, tho' they had no other Sustainance than what their *Fusees* brought them. Having march'd three Days, they met *Indians* with Beads about their Necks, who received them  
very

very kindly, and made a thousand Signs of Friendship to them; for they naturally love the *French*, and distinguish them from all other Nations. They even conducted them to one of the Parishes belonging to the *Mission*, above 200 Leagues from the Place where they first met, and liv'd by the way upon wild Cows, which the *Indians* take at pleasure with incredible Dexterity, by throwing a Noose over their Heads at 4 or 5 Yards distance; after which they hamstring them, and stick them in the Throat. Our two *Benchmen* being arrived at the *Mission*, were well received by the Jesuite, at whose House they tarry'd four Months, without ever going abroad, and then return'd to *Buenos Ayres* with a Detachment of *Indians* which the Governor demanded. The Account they give, is this: The Parish-Church there is long, and proportionably broad; the principal Entrance into it, is a Portico, and an Ascent of several Steps, at the top of which are 8 Stone Pillars wrought with a good Shew of Art, which help to support the Front of the Portico. Over the Entrance of the Church, is a very spacious Lobby for the Musick in Divine Service, which consists of 60 Persons, Voices and Instruments. There is also a particular Place for the Women, set round with a Balustrade.

The rest of the Church is full of Seats, where the Men place themselves according to their Posts and Ages. The great Altar is shut in by a Balustrade of *India Wood* very curiously wrought. On the Left of the Altar, is a Seat for the *Cacique* and Civil Officers; on the Right, another for the Military: But all in general are placed agreeably to their Rank.

The Facing of the Altar is very sumptuous. In the first place are three large Pictures in Frames of massy Gold and Silver. Above them are carv'd Works and Bas Reliefs in Gold; and higher yet, quite up to the Roof, is a Sculpture of Wood enrich'd with Gold. On the two Sides of the Altar are two Pedestals of Wood cover'd with Plates of Gold engraven, on which stand two Saints of massy Silver.

Silver. The Tabernacle is of Gold. The Pyx, wherein the Holy Sacrament is kept, is made of Gold, and set round with Emeralds and other precious Stones. The Foot and Sides of the Altar are adorn'd with Cloth of Gold laced. In short, the Candlesticks, and other Vessels of Gold and Silver, with which the Altar is set off at such times as the Service is perform'd with a great number of Wax-Candles, make a Shew almost beyond all Imagination. There are two other Altars on the Right and Left, adorn'd and enrich'd in proportion to the great one; and in the Body of the Church, toward the Balustrade, is a Silver Candlestick of 30 Branches enrich'd with Gold, with a great Silver Chain which reaches quite to the Roof. By this Description one may form some Judgment of the Riches of that Mission, if all the 42 Parishes are upon the same foot, as it is reasonable to believe.

The Presbytery, or Father's House, consists of several spacious Halls adorn'd with a great many Pictures and Images, in which the *Indians* wait till the Father comes out of his Apartment to give Audience. There are moreover large Warehouses, to which the *Indians* bring all the Fruit of their Labour. The rest of the House contains Walks, Gardens, and divers Lodgings for the Domestick *Indians*; the whole, with the Church, making a wall'd Inclosure of about 8000 Perches square.

The 42 Jesuites, who have each their Parish to govern, are independent one of another, and are answerable to none but the Principal of the Convent of *Cordova* in the Province of *Tucuman*, who makes a Progress once a Year to visit the *Missions*, guarded by a great Number of *Indians*. Upon his Arrival, the *Indians* shew all possible Demonstrations of Joy and Respect. The Principal of them do not approach him without Trembling, and Hanging down the Head; and the Common sort are upon their Knees, with their Hands cross'd, as he passes along. During his Stay he makes the Jesuite of every Parish give him an Account of all that hath been brought into the  
Store-

Store-Houses, and of the Consumption thereof since his last Visit.

All the Merchandizes mention'd toward the Beginning of this Relation, are carry'd by Water from the *Mission* to *Santa Fé*, which being the Staple for them, the Order hath an Attorney-General there; and from *Santa Fé* they are carry'd to *Buenos Ayres* by Land, where they have likewise an Attorney. From those two Places they distribute their Goods into the three Provinces of *Tucuman*, *Paraguay*, and *Buenos Ayres*, and into the Kingdoms of *Chili* and *Peru*; and we may safely affirm, that the *Mission* of the Jesuites alone drives a greater Trade than all the three Provinces together.

The chief Business of the *Caciquer*, or Civil Magistrates, is to learn the Number of Families, to make known to all of them the Orders and Intentions of the Father, to visit Houses, to examine every one's Work according to his Abilities, and to promise as a Reward to him who doth the most and the best, that he shall kiss the Father's Sleeve, which is held in great Veneration by those *Indians*, as being the first Step toward attaining to the Beatitude of the next Life. There are other Inspectors for the Country, to whom the *Indians* are obliged to declare every thing they get, even to a single Egg, which they must not dispose of; being to carry all, without Exception, into the Magazines, upon very severe Penalties. There are also Distributors, who give out to every Family, according to its Number, twice a Week, whereon to subsist: And this is done in wonderful Order, in the Jesuite's Presence; to whose Praise it must be said, that their Labours are endless, since they are vigilant, in the last degree, to prevent their *Indians* from running into any Disorder: Not but that they are made ample Amends too, by the vast Profit of the Work of so many Hands.

There were formerly two Jesuites in every Parish; but since their great Accessions, there can be but one, till they get some more over from *Spain*.

The *Indians* do not drink any Wine, or other hot Liquors. Herein the good Fathers copy after the Law of *Mahomet*, who forbid them to his Followers, lest being inflamed, they should be apt to raise Commotions; give Disturbance to his Despotick Government; and perhaps shake off the Yoke he had laid upon their Necks.

They marry the *Indians* young, for the sake of Procreation; and the first Catechism they teach their Children is the Fear of God and of the Jesuits; the Contempt of Temporal Goods, and a plain and humble Life. These it must be own'd, are pious Dispositions; but then it is no less certain, that the good Fathers find their Account in such political Instructions.

The Military Government is as well establish'd there, as the Civil. Every Parish is obliged to maintain a Number of disciplin'd Troops by Regiments of Horse and Foot, in proportion to its Strength. Each Regiment consists of six Companies of 50 Men, a Colonel, six Captains, six Lieutenants, and a General Officer who exercises them every Sunday after Vespers. Those Officers, who are brought up to Arms from Father to Son, are very expert in disciplining their Men, and in leading them when they march in Detachments. It is upon no other Occasion that the Parishes have a Communication, but only to form an Army, which the Senior General Officer commands under the Direction of a Jesuite, who is Generalissimo. The Arms of those *Indians* are Fusces, Swords, Bayonets, and Slings, with which they throw Stones to five Pound Weight, and are very dextrous at that Weapon.

The *Mission* together can assemble 60000 Men in eight Days time. Their Pretence for maintaining so great a Number is, because the *Portuguese Paulists* make Excursions into the Country, to take away their *Indians*. But this doth not go down with the more knowing *Spaniards*, who are convinced that the *Jesuites* keep so many Troops on foot, for no other End than to hinder All the World with



out Exception from having any Communication with their Mission.

Their Precaution in not teaching the *Indians* the *Spanish* Tongue, and in making it a Case of Conscience for them not to converse with the *Spaniards* when they go to work in the Towns for the Kings Service, is declarative enough of the true Design of the Father Jesuites. The Foreigners who are driven by any Accident into their Missions, as the *Frenchmen* above-mention'd; nay, the *Spaniards* themselves, who are sometimes obliged to touch upon them, passing to and fro upon the River of *Paraguay*, do not stir without the Walls of the Presbytery: But if the *Spaniards* do intreat for Leave to take a Walk in the Town, be sure the Jesuite is always at their Side; and the *Indians* being forewarn'd, shut their Doors, and are never seen in the Streets. Whence 'tis plain, the Jesuites have very good Reasons for using so much Circumpection with regard even to their own Countrymen. They have moreover the Precaution to make Detachments of 5 or 6000 Men, by Battalions of 4 or 500, to scour the Country along the Coast, from *S. Gabriel's* Isles to the Mountains of *Maldonades*, and the River they call *Rio de los Patos*, to cut off all Communication betwixt those Lands and the *Europeans* or People of the Country, for the sake of the Gold and Silver Mines, which are there in abundance.

We will here give some Instances of the Exursions of those *Indians* along the Coast. The Ship *Falmouth* of *S. Malo* being cast away near the Isles of *Flores* in the Year 1706, the *Indians* plunder'd a Part of her Cargo, which the Governor of *Buenos Ayres* caus'd them to restore, and it is actually in the Fort. The *Atlas*, which perish'd at the *Casfiles*, in December 1708, whose Officers having saved some of their Goods, and Sails to make Tents, were strip'd of all by the *Indians*, in their March over Land to the *Maldonades*, in order to come back by Sea, and take up their

Silver which they had happily bury'd, to the Value of above 200000 Crowns.

There are considerable Mines at the foot of the Mountains of *Maldonades*, 24 Leagues from the Port, and 14 from *Montevideo*, which were discover'd by *Dom Juan Pacheco*, Inhabitant of *Buenos Ayres*, and ancient Miner of *Potosi*. He gave Advice thereof to *Dom Alonso Juan de Valdes Inelau*, Governor of *Buenos Ayres*, who made a Detachment of 15 Men, under the Command of *Dom Joseph de Vermude*, Captain of Foot, and Engineer at *Buenos Ayres*. These embarked with *Dom Pacheco*, and crossing the River, they march'd to the Head of the Mountains of *Maldonades*, where they search'd the Earth, and return'd with Stones from the Mines containing Gold and Silver: But the Governor, being gain'd by the Jesuites, gave out that he had made a Proof, and found they would not answer the Labour. However, *Dom Pacheco*, who had reserv'd his own, was convinced that this was a meer Fetch of the Jesuites, to prevent a Settlement on the side of their Mission.

Some Pieces taken out of those Mines have been brought to *France*, where they may have been try'd, to know their Value: But they were taken from the very Surface of the Earth with Pick-Axes only. The aforesaid *Dom Pacheco*, who is celebrated for the most experienced Miner that hath been in *Peru* these many Years, affirms, that there is no better Earth in the World to search, than that round the Mountains of *Maldonades*, and the Rivers thereabout, in which he doubts not but Gold-Dust might as easily be found, as by the *Portuguese Paulists*, and in as good Quantities. The *Indians* of *S. Dominick de Suvoillant* have several times brought such Gold to *Buenos Ayres*, which they found in the Territories of the Mission; whence we may conclude, that there is a great deal of it, because this Gold was taken by Stealth by the young *Indians*, who are not so scrupulous as the others.

In the Year 1706, the *Sieur de la Solliette d'Escafeau* of *Nantes*, having cast Anchor in the Port of *Maldonade*, was accosted

accosted by the *Indians* of a Detachment who came under a Chief upon that Coast, to get Cows together, and drive them to the *Mission*. Monsieur *d'Escajeau* having made them a Present, they propos'd to him, in Return, that if he would advance so far into the Country, to a Place they pointed to him, he should find Silver Mines easy to be come at; which proves, that those Mines do not lie deep in the Earth, and also that they are plenty.

The *Jesuites* have always been apprehensive of the Discovery of those Mines by the *Spaniards*, and will do all that is in their Power to prevent the working them, because the making a Settlement upon that Coast would prejudice the good Fathers, who would be oblig'd to furnish *Indians* to labour in them. They have even destroy'd all the Horses on that side, to make it the more incommodious for People to settle there.

It remains now to make a just Application of the Conduct of the *Jesuites* in the Particulars above recited, and to shew that their Ambition of Sovereign Power, and their insatiable Desire of heaping up immense Riches, are the only Objects they pursue. The Method they take in educating and governing their *Indians*, from whom they squeeze all the Fruits of their Labours, leaving them nothing but the Necessaries of a frugal Life; the Care they take to hinder their Communication with the *Spaniards*; their Circumspection when at any time either *Spaniards* or Foreigners are driven by Accident into their *Mission*; the Number of armed Men they continually keep on foot; their perpetual Scouring the Coast by Detachments, to prevent Peoples Settlement on it; all these are plain Proofs, that they aim at making themselves independent, and not only conceal the Advantages of the Country they are possess'd of, but even of what they have not in Possession. Nevertheless, that Country belongs without all Dispute to the King of *Spain*, as Lord and Sovereign of the *Indies*: Nor ought such a Number of People to be reduced under any other Obedience than his alone.

alone. They ought to be free to have Lands, and the Disposl of their Crops and Labour. By this means they would become a Colony in Form; every Man would improve his Talent, with the Gold and Silver Mines of the Country; Money would be coin'd, and all together would cause a Circulation of Trade there as well as in other Colonies; the King's Authority would be acknowledg'd, and his Dominions preserv'd: But nothing of all this; the Jesuites have made themselves Absolute Lords and Masters over all those reduced *Indians*, together with the Country they possess, their Fruits and Labour, and extend themselves farther and farther every Day, without Title or Permission. The *Indians* have nothing of their own; the Jesuites have all; and those poor People who have a Right to be free, having voluntarily subjected themselves, are treated like true Slaves: And in short, 300000 Families, and more, work for 40 Jesuites, and own and obey none but them. One Circumstance which makes good this Assertion, is, that when the Governour of *Buenos Ayres* receiv'd Orders to lay Siege to *S. Gabriel*, in which a Detachment of 4000 *Indian* Horse assisted, with a Jesuite at their Head, the Governour commanded the Sergeant Major to make an Attack at Four o' Clock in the Morning; but the *Indians* refused to obey, because they had not the Jesuite's Order, and were even upon the point of revolting, when the Jesuite (being sent for) arrived, under whom they ranged themselves, and executed the Order from his Mouth. Hence you may judge, how jealous those Fathers are of their Authority with regard to their *Indians*, even to the forbidding them to obey the King's Officers, when 'tis plainly for his Majesty's Service.

The Capitation Tax of a Crown a Head which the Jesuites ought to pay the King yearly for every *Indian*, is not only exhausted by the Payment of the *Indians* employ'd in his Majesty's Works, but there is hardly a Year that the King is not made a Debtor, for three Reasons  
equally

equally fallacious. The first is, That the Jesuites do not give in an Account of half their *Indians* for the Capitation. The second, That the Governor of *Buenos Ayres*, who ought once, in the five Years of his Government, to visit the *Missions*, and take an Account of the *Indians*, is prevented by the Jesuites, who making him a Present of a round Sum of Money, the End of his Visit is lost, and he contents himself with the Jesuites own List of their Families. The third Reason is, That when a Detachment of 500 *Indians* is employ'd in the King's Works, they set him down 1500, and so many his Majesty pays. Thus is his Catholick Majesty serv'd in the *Indies*, where his Revenues are consumed in feign'd Employments, Fraud, and Plunder. These Abuses do however deserve the most serious Attention; seeing the King's Revenues, which ought to amount at least to 30 Millions of Livres, (were his Majesty faithfully serv'd) are brought to nothing, or to very little, because the Governors and Treasurers have a good Understanding, and only contend who shall plunder most. What remains therefore, (to answer the End of this Relation) but to find Means of reducing the Jesuites to their Duty, to bridle their Absolute Power, and to turn some Part of the Profits which accrue to them from the Labour of so many Hands, to the King's Advantage? Nothing can excuse the Jesuites from submitting to it, unless they will give Marks of their Disobedience and wicked Intent: Tho', after all, we are persuaded, that they'll raise Obstacles enow, and alledge several specious Pretexs, but easy to be answer'd and not surrender till the last Extremity.

THE  
INDEX.

A.	Page		Page
<b>A</b> ccident unlucky.	105	Assumption Coast.	288
Aconcagua River.	121	Avacay Borough.	184
Advice for turning of Cape Horn.	42	Author, his Inclination, embarks at S. Malo.	1
Agri, a sort of Guinea Pepper.	151	Sails out of that Port.	2
Cultivating of it.	152	Puts in again.	3
Alpaques, useful Creatures.	154	Sails again.	4
Ambergrease.	15	Passes the Line, and Ceremonies observ'd there by Sailors.	14
Andaguailas Borough.	184	Repents his going to Sea, and Reflections thereon.	38
Anican Islands.	288	Goes aboard another Ship at Coquimbo.	137
Angra City described.	309	Removes to another at Arica.	169
St. Anthony's Fort.	310	Again to another at Hilo.	179
His Chappel, Batteries and Citadel.	311	Arrives at Lima.	203
Fort S. Sebastian.	313	Removes to another Ship at Callao.	275
Churches.	314	Sails for France.	281
Anil, a sort of Indigo.	78		
Apurima wonderful Bridge.	184	B.	
Aqueducts of Indians.	214	<b>B</b> aldivia City, in Chili, with the Cutt of the Port.	42
Architecture of Peru.	262	Strength of that Place.	44, 45
Arequipa Town.	176	Bananas Fruit.	25
Arica, Marks to know it, the Headland, and Description of the Town.	148	Bay of all Saints in Brasil, how to know it.	294
Landing Places and Fortifications.	149	Month of it.	ibid.
Churches and Vale.	151	Beeves, hunting of them.	28
Trade there.	152	Bezoar Stone.	142
Its former Trade.	154		
Difficulty of getting out of it.	169		
Ascension Island.	290		
Anchoring there.	291		

# The INDEX.

Bisnaga Plant.	Page 118	Choros Island.	138
Boldy, Acomatick Plant.	78	Chuncos Indians.	175
Brasil Coast.	291	Clouds green.	6
Bribery.	220	Cobija Port.	143
Bull Feast.	188	Not safe.	144
Butcher's Meat in Chili.	122	Cobija Village.	ibid.
C.		Coco Plant, a Preservative.	167
Calama Village.	145	More of it.	269
Callao Port, how known.	192	Coco Tree.	118
Description of its Road.	193	Commodities of Chili, Peru and Mexico.	200
Anchorage there.	194	Conception Festival.	239
Description of the Town.	195	La Conception Port, Tokens to know it by, with a Cut of the same.	47
Fortifications and Artillery.	196	The Bay describ'd.	50
Forces paid by the King there.	197	The best Place to furnish Ships.	51
Militia and Situation.	199	The Town describ'd, with the Cut, its Situation.	52
Streets, Square, Trade.	200	Fortifications and Artillery.	53
Churches, Manasteries, Inhabitants, Garrison, Governor, Engineer, and Road to Lima.	202	Military Government, advanc'd Post.	54
Departure from thence.	275	Civil and Ecclesiastical Government.	55
Calm dead.	15	Trade.	75
Camarones Break.	148	Fruit, with the Cut.	76
Coranque Fish.	27	Aromatick Herbs.	77
Carapocho Headland.	146	Dying Herbs, and Aromatick Trees.	78
Carapullo Plant.	236	Wild Fowl.	80
Cassia Fistula.	173	Fish.	82
Ceremony us'd by the Chilianians at making Peace.	79	Gold and Copper Mines.	ibid.
Cerro del Guanaguero.	127	Return thither.	179
Chacanza River.	144	Departure from thence.	282
Chanaral Island.	138	Condor Bird.	122
Channel, a new one discover'd in Tierra del Fuego.	286	Conjectures concerning Earthquakes.	212
Tokens to know it.	287	About Currents.	41
Charts, Errors in them.	30, 278, 285	Copiaspo Miner, Inhabitants, Product and Trade.	133
Chili, Towns and Inhabitants there.	102	Departure thence.	143
Trade there.	115	Copper Mines.	82, 134
Why so call'd.	ibid.	Coquimbo Bay, how known.	128
No wild Beasts, or venemous Creatures there.	132	Describ'd.	ibid.
Commodities of the Country.	200	Caution about anchoring there.	129
Chimists, Pretences of theirs.	164		
Chiouchou Village.	Page 145	X x	In-

## The INDEX.

<i>Inconveniences in the Peri.</i>	Pag. 130	<i>From La Conception of ain.</i>	Pag. 282
<i>Coquimbo River.</i>	130	<i>From the Bay of all Saints.</i>	305
<i>Provisions there.</i>	135	<i>From the Island Tercera.</i>	316
<i>Directions how to get out of the Bay.</i>	137	<i>Defart very great.</i>	142
<i>Corn Country.</i>	116	<i>Devotion of the Rosary.</i>	239
<i>Its Coteages.</i>	117	<i>Diego Ramirez Island.</i>	87
<i>Coral Ports, at Baldivia.</i>	44	<i>Directions to sail out of the Bay of Co-</i>	
<i>Custom, how it grows, with the Catt of it.</i>	25	<i>quimbo.</i>	137
<i>Counter charms.</i>	242	<i>Dorados, or Gilt Backs, Fishes.</i>	6
<i>Crabs.</i>	122	<i>Ducking of Sailors.</i>	15, 125
<i>Creollan Spaniards born in Peru.</i>	248	<i>Dying Herbs.</i>	78
<i>Cruzes Fort, near Baldivia.</i>	46		
<i>Crucifix Natural.</i>	110	<b>E.</b>	
<i>Cuesta de Prado Hill.</i>	98	<i>Arth, how it may run.</i>	213
<i>Coroama Capr.</i>	88	<i>How it can produce without Rain.</i>	213
<i>Currents.</i>	16, 139, 147, 305	<i>Earthen Ware in Peru.</i>	273
<i>Conjectures about them.</i>	41	<i>Earthquakes in Chili.</i>	101, 123, 210,
<i>Why out at Sea, contrary to those on</i>			211
<i>the Coast.</i>	275	<i>Conjectures concerning them.</i>	212
<i>Cusco City.</i>	175	<i>Why more near the Coast than up the</i>	
<i>Customs and Manners of the Spaniards</i>		<i>Islands.</i>	ibid.
<i>of Peru.</i>	238	<i>Engines Royal.</i>	155
		<i>Errors of Chavrs.</i>	278, 285, 305
<b>D.</b>		<i>Essaying of Silver.</i>	156
<i>Dampier's Birds.</i>	29	<i>Exhalations of Mines.</i>	166
<i>Dampier's Account of Custom in</i>			
<i>Brazil.</i>	26	<b>F.</b>	
<i>His false Account of Arica.</i>	150	<i>Fer's America.</i>	285
<i>Dance call'd Zapateo.</i>	256	<i>Fertility of Chili.</i>	119
<i>Dancing in Peru.</i>	255	<i>Of Peru.</i>	152
<i>Dangerous going to Santiago.</i>	97	<i>Festival of the Scapular.</i>	187
<i>Departure from the Island of S. Katha-</i>		<i>Of the Conception:</i>	273
<i>rine.</i>	29	<i>Five Works.</i>	204
<i>From La Conception.</i>	88	<i>Fishery.</i>	121
<i>From Valparaiso.</i>	127	<i>Fishes of several sorts.</i>	27
<i>From Coquimbo.</i>	137	<i>Flamancos Birds.</i>	80
<i>From Copiapo.</i>	143	<i>Floats of blown Skins.</i>	120
<i>From Arica.</i>	169	<i>Floripondio Plants.</i>	77
<i>From Hilo.</i>	179	<i>Flowers in Peru.</i>	236
<i>From Pisco.</i>	192	<i>Flying Fishes.</i>	8
<i>From Callao.</i>	275	<i>Forces paid by the King, at Callao.</i>	197
		<i>Fort de la Latte, near S. Mulo.</i>	2
			<i>Fool</i>



# The INDEX.

<i>Fowl numerous in 21 and 22 Degrees of South Latitude.</i>	Page 15	H.	
<i>Fraud in Silver.</i>	159	<b>H</b>	<i>Habit of the Inhabitants of the Island of S. Katharine.</i> Page 23
<i>Frenage Road, near S. Malo.</i>	2		<i>Of the Spaniards of Peru.</i> 258
<i>French Trade to the South-Sea.</i>	201		<i>Of the Natives.</i> 259
<i>Order to dismiss them all.</i>	279	<i>Halley, Dr. his Postscript in Pindication of himself.</i>	220 & seqq.
<i>Frier complimented.</i>	124	<i>Harillo Plant.</i>	118
<i>Fruit at Piscco.</i>	186	<i>Herradura Creek.</i>	128
<i>At Lima.</i>	232	<i>Hierro Island.</i>	7
<i>Furniture of Houses in Peru.</i>	261	<i>Higos de Tana Fruit.</i>	233
G.		<i>Hilo, Marks to know it by, Description of the Road and Landing Place.</i>	170
<b>G</b> <i>AL Island, on the Coast of Peru.</i>	22	<i>Village, Watering-Place, Wooding, and Plants there.</i>	172
<i>Galera Point.</i>	43	<i>Other Products.</i>	174
<i>Game at S. Katharine's Island.</i>	28	<i>Resort to it.</i>	175
<i>General of the South-Sea.</i>	125	<i>Inconveniences there.</i>	177
<i>Giacotins Birds.</i>	28	<i>Departure from thence.</i>	179
<i>Giants.</i>	84	<i>Horn Cape, its Longitude.</i>	285
<i>Gold, how separated from the Dross.</i>	107	<i>Houses cover'd with Mats.</i>	217
<i>Refining of it, Weight and Fineness, and Products.</i>	108	<i>Houses in Peru.</i>	261, 273
<i>Opinion about it.</i>	112	I.	
<i>Disprov'd.</i>	113	<b>J</b>	<i>Japur River.</i> 333
<i>Another reinforced, and more Notions about it.</i>	ibid.	<i>Ica Town.</i>	183
<i>Another more probable.</i>	114	<i>Ice floating in the South-Sea.</i>	283
<i>Plenty of it.</i>	134	<i>Jesuites, an Account of their Settlement, &amp;c. in Paraguay.</i>	323 to 335
<i>Large Grains of it.</i>	167	<i>Indians of Chili.</i>	57
<i>Gold Mines.</i>	82	<i>Their Government.</i>	59
<i>At Tilfil.</i>	106	<i>Servitude of those who are subdu'd.</i>	60
<i>At Lampanqui.</i>	114	<i>Their Assemblies and Sports, with a Cut.</i>	62
<i>Rare in Peru.</i>	167	<i>Their Arms, and Noosing of Horses.</i>	63
<i>Granadillos Fruit.</i>	233	<i>Their Festivals describ'd.</i>	65
<i>Guatico Mines.</i>	145	<i>A Tune of theirs.</i>	66
<i>Guamanga City.</i>	184	<i>Their Constitution and Food.</i>	67
<i>Guana, a sort of Manure.</i>	147	<i>Their Drink and Colour.</i>	68
<i>Guanacos Beast of Peru.</i>	142, 154	<i>Shape and Hair.</i>	69
<i>Guancavelica Town, and Quicksilver Mine.</i>	183	<i>Their Habit, with a Cut.</i>	70
<i>Guarupa, Part of Brasil.</i>	28	<i>Their Houses.</i>	71
<i>Guasco Bay.</i>	138	X X 2	Their
<i>Guayacum.</i>	25		
<i>Guayava.</i>	ibid.		

# The INDEX.

<i>Knots in Tossels of Thread us'd by them instead of Writing.</i>	Page 73	<i>Horse.</i>	222
<i>Their Trade.</i>	74	<i>Courts, Council, Treasury, Mines, Consularship, Spiritual Courts.</i>	223
<i>Stratagem of theirs.</i>	115	<i>University, Colleges, Coopers.</i>	225
<i>Their Tombs.</i>	177	<i>Cathedral, Archbishops, Parishes.</i>	226
<i>Their Agreements.</i>	214	<i>Hospitals.</i>	227
<i>Tosses of Peru.</i>	263	<i>Charity, Portions for Maids, Monasteries.</i>	228, 229
<i>Their Habit.</i>	270	<i>Nuns.</i>	230
<i>Their Houses.</i>	273	<i>Penitent Women.</i>	231
<i>Ingas Monarchs of Peru.</i>	271	<i>Fruit there.</i>	232
<i>One of their Race still honour'd.</i>	272	<i>Lions of Peru.</i>	146
<i>Inhabitants of Chili, their Number.</i>	102	<i>Lipes Mines.</i>	147
<i>Of Peru, their Number.</i>	274	<i>Llamas, Sheep of Peru.</i>	152
<i>Inquisition in Chili.</i>	105	<i>Leadstone.</i>	83
<i>John Fernandes Island.</i>	96	<i>Lobos Island.</i>	179
<i>Iquique Island.</i>	146	<i>Log-Line, Remarks on it.</i>	6
<i>Islands of Cape Verde.</i>	7	<i>Lorugay River.</i>	323
<i>How to know them.</i>	ibid.	<i>Lucumo Tree.</i>	136
<i>Island of Parrots.</i>	29		
<i>See it in Plate 3, between 18 and 19</i>			
		M.	
K.		<b>M</b> <i>Achoran Fish.</i>	27
<b>K</b> <i>Notes in Tossels of Thread, us'd by the Indians instead of Writing.</i>	73	<i>Maguay Plant.</i>	237
		<i>Le Maire's Streights, with the Cut.</i>	31
L.		<i>The Way not to miss it.</i>	32
<b>L</b> <i>Agunilla Creek.</i>	88	<i>The Tide there.</i>	ibid.
<i>Lampanguy Gold Mines.</i>	114	<i>Mangrove Trees.</i>	27
<i>Land unexpectedly discover'd.</i>	39	<i>Many Fruit.</i>	186
<i>Lengua de Vaca Point.</i>	127	<i>Mowzanilla Tree.</i>	27
<i>Licht venomous Tree.</i>	79	<i>Marga Fort at Baldivia.</i>	45
<i>Licht, or Liufu Plant.</i>	79	<i>Masquerade.</i>	188
<i>Light Sea.</i>	7	<i>Maundy Thursday how celebrated.</i>	125
<i>Lima City describ'd, its Situation.</i>	206	<i>Maurice Port in le Maire's Streights.</i>	32
<i>Its Arms and Foundation.</i>	208	<i>Men happier with little and Content, than those who thirst after Grandeur.</i>	24
<i>Plan, Great Square, Fountains, River, and Trenches.</i>	209	<i>Mercury how separated from Silver.</i>	157
<i>Bridge, Fine Walk, Chappel, Monasteries.</i>	210	<i>Mero Fish.</i>	27
<i>Houses cover'd with Mats, Fortifications.</i>	217	<i>Merals Vegetables.</i>	163
<i>Immense Wealth.</i>	218	<i>How form'd.</i>	164
<i>Costly Habits and Viceray.</i>	219	<i>Meteor not seen before.</i>	37
<i>Chappel, Garrison, Fort.</i>	221	<i>Another.</i>	39
		<i>Mexico, Commodities there.</i>	200
		<i>Militia at Callao.</i>	199
			Mills

# The INDEX.

<i>Mills for Gold Mines.</i>	Page 107
<i>Mines of Gold and Copper in Chili.</i>	82
<i>Of Sulphur and Salt.</i>	83
<i>Of Gold at Tiltit.</i>	106
<i>To whom they belong.</i>	109
<i>Of Gold at Lampanguy.</i>	114
<i>At Copiapo.</i>	133
<i>Of Copper.</i>	134
<i>At Lipcs.</i>	145
<i>At Guaiico.</i>	ibid.
<i>At Potofi.</i>	ibid.
<i>New ones.</i>	147
<i>Which are richest.</i>	160
<i>Flooded.</i>	161
<i>Two strange Relations of one.</i>	162
<i>Exhalations of them.</i>	166
<i>A clayish sort of them, rich ones, those of Gold rare in Peru.</i>	167
<i>The Land about some cold and barren, others intemperate Places.</i>	168
<i>Of Salt.</i>	ibid.
<i>Of S. Anthony Rich.</i>	176
<i>Of Quicksilver.</i>	183
<i>Molle Tree.</i>	119
<i>Monkey.</i>	28
<i>Moquequa Town.</i>	176
<i>Morro Bonifacio.</i>	43
<i>Morro de Copiapo.</i>	139
<i>Morrow Gonzales.</i>	43
<i>Morro quemado.</i>	179
<i>Marks to know it by.</i>	180
<i>Mules, Destruction of them.</i>	175

## N.

<b>N</b> EW Island.	287
<i>Nauts, Reception of them.</i>	124

## O.

<b>O</b> pinion about Gold.	112
<i>Disprov'd.</i>	113
<i>Another reinforc'd, and more Notions about the same.</i>	ibid.
<i>Another more probable.</i>	114

<i>Order to dismiss all French in the West-Indies.</i>	Page 279
<i>Ore, several sorts of it in Silver.</i>	159
<i>Ouaras Birds.</i>	28

## P.

<b>P</b> Acay Tree.	173
<i>Palma Island.</i>	6
<i>Palqui Plant.</i>	118
<i>Paruca, Anchorage there.</i>	181
<i>Paradise Flower.</i>	236
<i>Paraguay River.</i>	323
<i>Paraguay Herb.</i>	252
<i>Parava River.</i>	323
<i>Pardelas Birds.</i>	29
<i>Pavos.</i>	28
<i>Paste-rase Mallow.</i>	25
<i>Pavellon Island.</i>	146
<i>Paulists Portuguese.</i>	323
<i>Paxaro Nino Rock.</i>	128
<i>Payco Plant.</i>	118
<i>Peek of the Azores.</i>	337
<i>Penguins.</i>	81
<i>Peru, Commodities there.</i>	200
<i>Why it never rains there.</i>	214
<i>Habit us'd there.</i>	258
<i>Of the Men.</i>	260
<i>Houses and Furniture.</i>	261
<i>Architecture there.</i>	262
<i>Of the Indians there.</i>	263
<i>Their Habit.</i>	270
<i>Their Ingas, or Monarchs.</i>	271
<i>Number of Inhabitants.</i>	274
<i>Peumo Tree, good against the Dropsy.</i>	80
<i>Peze gallo Fsh.</i>	121
<i>Philosophical Experiment.</i>	212
<i>Pico Insect.</i>	238
<i>Pilostella Plant.</i>	77
<i>Pipelienes Fowl.</i>	80
<i>Piraguera Fish.</i>	27
<i>Pisco Road.</i>	180, 181

De-



# The INDEX

<i>Military Power, the Government, the</i>	102
<i>Royal Court.</i>	Page 103
<i>City Council, President, Church Government.</i>	104
<i>Inquisition.</i>	105
<i>Sallatras in S. Katharine's Island.</i>	24
<i>Savages naked, in a very cold Country.</i>	34
<i>Sea-Horse. p. 28. See the Cutt of it in Plate 17, at pag. 121.</i>	
<i>Seals Fish.</i>	81
<i>Sea-sn in Peru.</i>	233
<i>La Serena Town describ'd.</i>	130
<i>Plan of it.</i>	132
<i>Churches there.</i>	133
<i>Sheep with 7 Horns.</i>	122
<i>Sheep of Peru.</i>	152
<i>Their Burden and Food.</i>	153
<i>Ship cast away.</i>	3, 95
<i>Shoal in the Bay of La Conception.</i>	50
<i>Marks to avoid it.</i>	ibid.
<i>Shrieking Birds.</i>	80
<i>Sibald's Islands.</i>	289
<i>Silver Mines at Lipet, Guatico and Potofi.</i>	145
<i>New ones.</i>	147
<i>Silver how taken out of the Mines and clean'd.</i>	155
<i>Essaying, beating, separating from the Mercury, casting and paying the 5lb.</i>	156, 157, 158
<i>Silver Ore, several sorts of it.</i>	159
<i>Other ways of separating it, and how form'd.</i>	161
<i>Grows.</i>	162
<i>Simple.</i>	24
<i>Song Spanish.</i>	240
<i>Spiders Monstrous.</i>	123
<i>Spring, a strange one.</i>	135
<i>Stratagem of Indians.</i>	115
<i>Strawberries in Chili.</i>	76
<i>Stream rich.</i>	110
<i>Sugar, its Causes and how made.</i>	174

<i>Sulphur.</i>	Page 82, 142
<i>Suspension of Arms.</i>	169
<i>Sweet Basil.</i>	117
<i>Sword Fish.</i>	28

## T.

<b>T</b> <i>Alcaguana Anchoring Place.</i>	49
<i>Tapovich Island.</i>	204
<i>Taupinambourse.</i>	76
<i>Tercera Island.</i>	308
<i>Terra Australis Capensis.</i>	284
<i>Tetas de Biobio Mountains.</i>	27
<i>Thoupa Platt.</i>	118
<i>Tierra del Fuego.</i>	31
<i>Tiltit Gold Mines and Village.</i>	106
<i>Tokens of being near Land.</i>	276
<i>Tombs of Indians.</i>	177
<i>Tongoy Bay.</i>	127
<i>Tostuga Point.</i>	128
<i>Totoral Creek.</i>	139
<i>Toujouca Creek in Brasil.</i>	29
<i>Towns in Chili.</i>	102
<i>Trade of the Polches.</i>	74
<i>At La Conception.</i>	75
<i>Of Chili.</i>	115
<i>At Arica.</i>	151
<i>At Pisco.</i>	185
<i>At Callao.</i>	200
<i>Of the French to the South Sea.</i>	201
<i>Travelling bad in Chili.</i>	110

## V.

<b>V</b> <i>Ale of Arica.</i>	151
<i>Valparaiso Bay describ'd.</i>	90
<i>The Cutt of the same, between 88, 89</i>	
<i>The Fort describ'd.</i>	91
<i>Views of the same, between 92, 93</i>	
<i>Cannon in the Fort.</i>	94
<i>The Town.</i>	95
<i>Variation of the Compass.</i>	289
<i>Venomous Creatures, none in Chili.</i>	132

*Viceroy*

# The INDEX.

<i>Viceroy of Peru.</i>	Page 193, 219	<i>Wild Fowl.</i>	Page 122
<i>Vicunas wild Beasts, how taken.</i>	153	<i>Winds, why opposite beyond the Torrid Zone.</i>	276
<i>Vina de la Mar Sale.</i>	119	<i>Why always the same in the Torrid Zone, and why regular at Sea, and not at Land.</i>	277
<i>Vineyards at Pisco.</i>	186	<i>Wine at Pisco.</i>	186
<i>Vitor Break.</i>	148	<i>Women of Peru.</i>	254

## W.

<b>W</b> <i>Asking Place for Gold.</i>	111
<i>Washing of Silver Ore.</i>	157
<i>Watering after an odd Manner.</i>	149
<i>Water that petrifies.</i>	184
<i>Whiteness in the Sea.</i>	306
<i>Wild Beasts none in Chili.</i>	32

## Z.

<b>Z</b> <i>Apata Mountain.</i>	98
<i>Zapateo, a Dance in Peru and Chili.</i>	254

# F I N I S.



## V.

<i>Viceroy of Peru.</i>	193, 219
<i>Vicunas wild Beasts, how taken.</i>	153
<i>Vina de la Mar Sale.</i>	119
<i>Vineyards at Pisco.</i>	186
<i>Vitor Break.</i>	148
<i>Wild Beasts none in Chili.</i>	32